

Season 3

Insert 1

Soso

Every time I look at this bastard's face I think of everything Lwa went through because of him, I think of how I was almost robbed of being a father because of him and then I just want to pull the trigger and finish him off but then I think of Loyiso noQhawe. If they ever found out that I killed their father, they would hate me and I can't live with that. I can't live with knowing that my sons hate me.

I wasn't really in Capetown, I was in East London. That's where my uncle Jono's gang operates and that's where we were keeping Atha and Smanga.

I was woken up by icall kaLwa but I didn't answer. I don't need distractions right now and if I talk to her, I might just end up not doing this. I took a shower then went downstairs for breakfast. I found my dad, Jono and Mike already there

Me: morning

Them: morning Soso

I poured cereal into a bowl with milk then joined them at the table

Mike: let me go give our friends downstairs their breakfast

Mike managed to research on what drug was used on Lwa when she was kidnapped so we've been giving it to Atha and Smanga everyday for a week now. Right now, they can't move, they can't talk but they are aware of their surroundings so we make sure that we wear masks when we go in there.

Dad: when are we ending this? I need to go back home to my wife and so do you Lwandiso

Me: soon dad. Soon

Jono: I understand you want them to suffer but the longer we keep them here, the longer the cops might get suspicious

Me: I know. It will be over soon

Mike: if I didn't know better, I'd think you are having second thoughts

Me: well its a good thing you know better

My phone rang again and it was Lwa again so I still didn't answer

Mike: you are going to have to answer your phone at some point before your pregnant wife starts worrying

Me: I will. I just need to focus for now. Let's go to the basement again. I have frustrations I need to take out

We got there and the place smelt so badly but I didn't care, I was just here to beat the shit out of them. We kicked them around a bit then when we got tired, we left. I stepped outside to answer Lwa's 7th call of the morning

Me: Lwandile

Lwa: musa ukuthi Lwandile when you've been ignoring my calls all morning

Me: fondin ndibusy, I'm not on holiday apha. What's up?

Her: yini Soso? Ngikubangela iscefe?

Me: tchin Lwandile did I say that? Jonga fondin I will call you later. I have work to do

Her: mxm whatever Soso

I hung up then switched my phone to airplane mode.

*

*

Lwa

I don't know what happened with Soso since the last time I spoke to him but suddenly he has switched up on me. He is cold towards me and he doesn't take my calls. This went on for a week until I just stopped call him. It was now the last few days of March and he still wasn't back. He would call once every 3 days and it would be a cold and emotionless call but if I call, he wouldn't answer.

I was watching TV with Jason while the twins were at school

Me: Jay when last did you speak to your brother?

Jay: yesterday I think.

Me: and he sounded ok?

Him: a bit agitated but normal

Me: oh, i guess I'm just imagining things then.

Him: maybe. Your doctor's appointment is in an hour, we should get going

Me: oh yah, I had forgotten about it yaz. Let me go freshen up

I walked upstairs, changed into leggings and a maternity top. I also wore slippers then went back downstairs, grabbed a packet of chips and cookies while Jay grabbed a packet of grapes then we left. I tried calling Lwandiso again and he answered

Soso: Lwandile I will call you back, I'm busy

Then he hung up. I felt my heart breaking as I swallowed the lump in my throat and quickly wiped my tears. We arrived at the doctor's office early so we waited our turn. I was quiet throughout the whole time

Jay: are you ok?

Me: I'll be fine Jay.

Him: I'm sure he has a reason for everything he is doing

Me: honestly, I don't care anymore.

The doctor called us in and Jay followed me in. She directed me where to sit

Dr: so how are you feeling today mommy?

Me: I'm good. I can't wait for her to arrive

Her: lol and you daddy? Are you excited

Me: oh, that's not daddy. Its daddy's brother. Daddy is working today

Her: oh, let's take a look at her

She did the scan, listened to the heart beat and it looked like everything is in order

Her: so, one more week and she should be here

Me: one week? The doctor that did my first ultrasound said I'll deliver end of April

Her: that doctor must have miscalculated. You should go into labor in a week's time

A week to go and my baby girl will be here yet her father couldn't be bothered to speak to me for more than a minute. If Lwandiso isn't here by the time I got into labor, I will never forgive him. We left the doctor's office and went to the mall. I had to buy baby things so we went to woolies and Ackerman's then Jay drove us to his parents' house. His mom was there alone so she was more than happy to see us

S's Mom: you look exhausted

Me: I am ma. Yho I can't wait for her to come out. Uyangsinda

Her: I will have to move in with you guys during that first month after she arrives. That's if you won't mind

Me: I would really appreciate it ma. Especially since I have no idea what's going on with Lwandiso

Her: wenza nton uLwandiso ngok?

Me: he has been gone this whole month, he is distant and that's when he actually answers his phone. I don't know if he is still in Capetown for work or ubusy noLuminjalo

Her: don't think like that. I thought you guys made progress with regards to the Luminjalo issue

Me: we did ma but then he left and everything just changed. He doesn't even know when he will be back and this baby will be here in a week

Her: a week? Isn't that too soon?

Me: apparently the first doctor miscalculated

She made me food and I ate while my feet were up on the couch. We spoke about random things until Jay and I had to fetch the twins from school. When we got home, Jay made them snacks and they ate

Me: I'm going to take a nap. I'll be up to bath them later

Jay: alright

I made my way upstairs and slept

*

*

Soso

I'm hoping to be going home this weekend or early next week. I'm done here and I went against killing Atha because of Loyiso and Qhawe. My dad, Mike, Jono and I went into the basement and found them laying on the mattresses. Even though we stopped giving them the drugs a week ago, they were still paralyzed from the neck down. We still wear masks when we go to them, I'm not trying to take chances here

Jono: what's up boys?

Atha: show your faces you fucken cowards

Mike: cowards? This coming from the man that can't even scratch his balls right now?

Atha: do you know our family? You are dead men walking. I swear to you

Jono: you should have looked into who our family is before you messed with us

Smanga: we don't even know who you are. How are we supposed to know what we did to you?

Me: now that's your problem. Not mine.

Smanga: spoken like a real bitch nxa

I took the gun from Jono's hand and shot Smanga on the shoulder

Smanga: fuuuck!! Shit, are you fucken crazy?

Me: oh shit. Did you feel that? I thought you were numb. So, you fuckers gained movement and you said nothing. Now this is interesting. Get the fuck up assholes

They didn't move so dad and Mike lifted Smanga up and he stood on his feet but when they tried doing the same with Atha, he kept falling and I burst into laughter

Me: lol how the mighty have fallen

Atha: fuck you, you son of a bitch

Me: I will kill your cousin if you don't shut the fuck up

Atha: you are a coward. You wouldn't do that

This idiot was testing me and right now I wasn't in the mood for nonsense. I was pissed and raging with anger.

Me: you think I'm a coward? I'll show you what a coward like me can do

I took off my mask and it was like he just saw a ghost

Me: sup motherfucker

Smanga: Soso... How the... What are you doing bruh?

Me: you two monkeys tried killing me. Wena Smanga you messed with my breaks. I know everything

Atha: I'm not afraid of you

Me: and yet your face says something else

Atha: just let us go. I promise I won't go to the cops. I need to see a doctor before this becomes permanent

Me: lol I don't see how any of this is my problem

Smanga: you shot me Lwandiso. I'm going to kill you

He took out a knife from his pocket and came charging at me so I pulled the trigger. I couldn't stop shooting. I think I fired over 15 shots at him before Jono took the gun from my hand. I've never killed a person before today but I must admit, its thrilling. The adrenaline, seeing the blood every where and hearing his cries of agony just does something to me

Atha: fuck. Are you fucken crazy?

Me: I don't know. Am I? Lol

Mike: this fucker is definitely dead

Jono: good.

Dad: Soso are you good?

Me: I'm good taima

Atha: bruh Soso please let me go. I'm begging you. I'm sorry for what I did to Lwa and you. It was the drugs. I'm clean now and I realize my mistakes. Please just let me go. I won't go to the cops. I swear

Me: lol you are begging me? The great Athandwe Dlamini is begging me. Wow this is a great day

Atha: I'm begging bruh. Please let me go

Me: did you know Lwa was pregnant when you kidnapped and drugged her? Did you know you almost robbed me of being a father and now you just want me to let you go just like that? Because now you've learned to beg

I kicked him on the face and he cried in agony

Mike: bruh put this bitch out of his misery

Me: nah not yet. For now, let's leave

Dad: and this dead body?

Me: leave it here. I'm human after all so I'm going to let Atha have a few days to say goodbye to his cousin

Mike: that body will start decomposing in a few days

Me: not my problem. Let's go. Sho Atha.

My dad, uncle and brother all thought I had lost my mind and maybe I had but I didn't care. I was enjoying every moment of watching him suffer. We got upstairs and I went to take a shower. I stood under the water for a while just taking in everything that just happened and when I was good and ready, I got out. Just in time since my phone was ringing.

Season 3

Insert 2

Soso

I checked the caller ID on my phone and it was my mom. I can ignore the whole world but I could never ignore the woman who raised me. I sat on the bed then answered the phone

Me: mamami

Mom: mxm ubuya nini na Lwandiso?

Me: andaz mama. Maybe next week or next weekend

Her: ufuna ukubuya xa umntana esezelwe?

Me: umntana kabani?

Her: tchin umntanakho Lwandiso

Me: uzawfika month end umntana kalok mama

Her: uzawfika month end uyisalary okanye uyidebit order?

I didn't know how to respond to that so I didn't. Mna I was told ukuba owam umntana uzawfika end of April so andaz umama uthetha ngantoni

Her: your daughter is coming earlier than expected. The doctor told Lwa that she should be going into labour in a week's time

Me: what? Why didn't Lwa tell me that? When did she find out?

Her: how's about you call her and find out.

She hung up on me and I immediately started packing. I need to go home or else I'm going to be in a fight of a life time. I packed all my clothes then went downstairs with my bag

Mike: and then? Uyaphi?

Me: I have to go home. The baby is coming earlier than we thought so I need to be with Lwa

Dad: uyahamba? Ngoku?

Me: ewe tata. Kunyanzelekile

Jono: and then what about the issue downstairs

Me: do whatever you want with him. I don't care anymore. Right now, all I care about is my daughter

Mike: have you lost your mind? Not so longer ago you killed a man, whose body is still in there with a paralyzed guy and you are just leaving

Me: yes. Ufuna ndenze nton? This is my child we are talking about. Whether Atha lives or not, I don't care anymore.

Dad: I'm going with you. I don't trust you to drive in this state and your mother has been on my case about going home

Mike: excuse me but I am the only one that sees that we are in the middle of a mission and you guys can't just leave

Dad: you and Jono can finish this job off.

Jono: yeah, no doubt.

I waited for my dad for a few minutes then he came out with his bag as well and he drove us home. I had to go in the house because my mom was waiting for me. We walked in, greeted and sat down

Mom: where's Michael?

Dad: he stayed at Jono's

Mom: askies? You left my son with a gangster

Dad: Michael is not a child. He can handle himself

Mom: handle himself? And wena Lwandiso uyaphambana?

Me: hayi mama

Mom: kutheni ulapha? Why are you not at home with your wife?

Me: I just thought I should stay over here tonight then I'll go home tomorrow morning

Mom: well you thought wrong. Go home to your wife

Me: haw mama uyandigxotha?

Mom: just go please so my other son can come home tomorrow

Me: yho goodbye ke

I walked out to my car then drove to the house. I passed by the garage, bought chocolates then headed home. I opened the gate, used my key to open the door and found Jay watching TV. It was around 8:30pm

Jay: you are back

Me: yeah. Why didn't you guys tell me about the baby coming early?

Him: it wasn't my place to say anything.

Me: mxm whatever. Uphi uLwa?

Him: in your room

Me: the twins?

Him: sleeping

Me: ok

I made my way upstairs, opened the door to my room and found Lwa laying on the bed. She wasn't asleep but she didn't even sit up when she saw me. I sat down next to her and she just looked at me without saying anything

Me: hey

Lwa: hi

Me: uright?

She just looked at me then clicked her tongue. She was pissed off but how could I blame her. I've been a dick the past couple of days

*

*

Lwa

When I saw Soso I was glad he was back but I wasn't going to show it since I was also angry about the way he has been treating me since he left.

Me: are you hungry?

Soso: yes, but I was hoping we could talk before you go dish up for me

Me: we don't have anything to talk about

I got up but he pulled me towards him and made me sit next to him.

Him: I'm sorry about the past couple of weeks

Me: ok. Can I go now?

Him: yima kalok Lwa ndithetha nawe. Why didn't you tell me princess was going to come early?

Me: musa ukungijwayela kabi Lwandiso. When was I supposed to tell you when you don't answer my calls? That's not something to leave in a voicemail or a text

Him: suthetha nami kanjalo Lwa. I'm not in the mood for your disrespect

If he isn't in the mood to talk to me then why should we have this conversation in the first place. I got up and he didn't hold me back this time

Me: are you coming?

Him: andizotyela edining room mna. You can bring the food up here

Me: then clearly you are not hungry because I'm going to put your food in the dining room where everyone eats

I let out a chuckle then walked out but he didn't follow me. I dished up for him, warmed the food then placed it on the dining table and walked back upstairs. I found him in his boxers just sitting on the bed

Me: your food is in the dining room

I said this while changing into my night dress and not looking at him. He must have gotten up because I felt his arms wrap around me from behind then he kissed my neck

Me: hayi mahn Lwandiso go eat

Him: I want you

Me: well you can't have me

Him: we'll see about that

He pinned me against the wall with my hands above my head then removed my panties with his other hand

Me: hayi fokof mahn Lwandiso yin ngawe?

It was like he wasn't hearing me at all. He started kissing and biting on my neck then moved to smashing his lips on mine. The kiss was fast and heated and I could feel his boner against my skin. I was still trying to fight him but deep down I knew I wanted him.

Me: Lwandiso leave me alone.

He lifted me up then lowered me on to the bed and lifted my night dress.

Him: you are mine and only mine. Do you understand that?

Something was different about him. I couldn't pin point it right now but he seemed a lot more possessive and dominant. He opened my legs then went down on me. Making me moan loudly with every lick, flick and suck. Every time he inserted his tongue in me, I felt like I was losing my mind

Him: do you still want me to stop?

I couldn't respond but my moans spoke for me. He helped me out of my night dress then turned me on my side and entered me. The moment he went in me, I felt so much satisfaction. It felt like I had been starving for a long time and this was my first meal. He moved slowly in me as my moans matched his thrusts.

Me: aaaaah Soso baby

He started picking up the pace as I gripped on to the sheets. When I felt my orgasm building up, I dug my nails into his thighs and scratched him.

Him: I love you baby

Moments after that he came then he held on to me from the side

Him: I'm sorry for the way I treated you, I'm sorry I was gone for so long but I'm back now and I'm going to making everything right. I promise

I was still busy catching my breath and thinking whether its even safe to be having sex so late in my pregnancy. What if the baby sufficates because of Soso's cum. The thought just grossed me out so I wiped it out of my mind

Him: makaYandisa

Me: mmmm

Him: ndithetha nawe

Me: why were you even gone so long? Was it even still work related?

Him: yes, baby it was. I wasn't on holiday, I was working

Me: and it's done now?

Him: yes. I'm all yours now

Me: good. I hated the way you were while you were away. I don't deserve to be treated like that, especially not by you of all people

Him: I know sthandwa sam. It will never happen again. I promise you

He kissed my neck then my cheek and squeezed me. I let out a chuckled then he started laughing

Me: uhlekani?

Him: hayi fokof mahn Lwandiso lol

He was trying to imitate me and he was failing at it.

Me: I don't sound like that

Him: lol but you do babe. Mama kaYandisa. You have to come up with a name for her now

Me: how about Yandisa Alwandiswe Smith

Him: Alwandiswe Yandisa Mikaela Smith

Me: Mikaela?

Him: yeah. That was my birth mother's name

Me: ncoah baby I love it

I turned around to face him, pecked his lips then looked at him. Even though we fight a million times over little things, it will never change how much I love him because anything worth having is worth fighting for and we are definitely worth the fight

Me: go eat please

Him: ok my love then we can sleep because tomorrow I'm making up for lost time

I smiled as he got up to put his briefs on and shorts then he walked out the door. I got up to take a quick shower then got back in bed. By the time Soso returned to bed, I was already asleep but I felt his arms wrap around me and pulling me closer to him

*

*

Soso

I made sure to wake up before everyone the next day so I can make breakfast and also surprise the twins. I made chocolate chip pancakes for everyone then went to wake the twins up

Loy: tata ubuyile

Me: ewe kwedin. Yiza sohlamba

Q: hlamba uwena?

Me: ewe ulele umama

Loy: uphi uUncle?

Me: uhambile

Loy: haw! Uhambile nyan?

Then Jason walked into their bathroom

Jay: morning I was about to come wake them up

Q: lol yaxoka tata

Me: hayi suthi ndyaxoka. Yithi ndiyaphosisa

Q: ngoba? Uyaxoka kalok tata. NanguUncle

Jay: umuntu omdala kaxoki. Uyaphosisa. Uyeva

Q: tjoh andiyiva mna lento

Me: give up Jay

Jay: lol I'm going to make breakfast

Me: I already did. I'm also going to take them to school today then when I get back, you can feel free to go back home. You helped me while I was away and I really appreciate it. It means a lot to me

Him: I'm was more than happy to help

I got the boys out the water, got them dressed and we went to have breakfast. Mommy was already up packing their lunches while Jay set the table then we all had our breakfast

Lwa: I hope you don't have something hectic planned. I just woke up and I'm already tired

Me: lol nah just the spa and shopping for the baby

Jay: haven't you guys named her yet?

Me: we have but you will find out her name when she arrives

Jay: mxm you guys suck

After breakfast I took the twins to school then passed by the florist and bought a bouquet of roses. I know I'm not forgiven yet so I still have to make up for what I did. As I was driving back to the house, an SMS came through on my phone and when I checked it, my heart nearly stopped. It was a bank notification telling me that R300 000 has been deposited in my acc

Season 2

Insert 3

Soso

Maybe my eyes were playing tricks on me. I looked at the SMS again and it was really R300 000 but where did it come from? As I was still puzzled by all this, Mike called

Me: ntwana

Mike: did you get the cash?

Me: yeah, I did but what's it for? And where did it come from?

He kept quiet. I was almost at the house and I needed this conversation to be over before I enter the gate

Me: Mike thetha fondin

Him: its from Atha or his father. He said if we release him so he can get medical attention then he will give us R1.5mil and he did so we split it.

Me: what? You let him go? As in he is alive and free? Usisdenge Mike. Fuck mahn

Him: suthi ndisidenge whereas wena ubalekile. Andithi your daughter comes first so we had to make a decision and we did

Me: this is going to come back to bite me. Fuck why didn't you run this past me first?

Him: run it past you when? You and dad left, remember and besides the money will come in handy with the baby and everything

Me: jonga bruh andiyfuni lemali mna. I have my own money. Yeses this is a mess. Did you call dad?

Him: not yet. I'll tell him when I get home later today. Sho neh I have to go

I hung up, threw my phone on the passenger seat then repeatedly hit the steering wheel. This was not the plan, Atha was supposed to be dead by now not recovering in the hospital. If he goes to the cops, I can kiss my freedom, my family and my marriage goodbye. I was now in panic mode but I tried my best to hide it, I don't want

Lwa worrying about this. When I got to the house, her and Jason were watching the food channel

Me: Jay bruh this is some gay ass shit. Watch soccer or something

Lwa: leave Jay alone. What do you have behind you?

Me: lol its a secret

She smiled as I gave her the roses then I kissed her cheek and pecked her lips

Her: wow baby these are gorgeous but what are they for?

Me: for you babe. Just to say sorry for everything

Her: thank you sthandwa sam. Let me put them in a vase

Jay: don't worry I'll do that for you

I sat down next to her then she put her feet on my lap and I gave her a foot rub

Her: thanks babe. Your mom is moving in after the baby is born

Me: but why?

Her: to help with the baby since you will still be working and stuff

Me: for how long?

Her: a month or two

Jay: so, no sex for you guys lol

Me: uyaphambana. Tch in this is my house, I will have sex when I want to

Her: we can't have sex until she is 3months

Me: what? Haai Lwa that's madness.

I'm not going to go 3months without getting some when I wake up next to her and sleep next to her everyday. I will die from high sperm pressure apha. Around 10 Jay left and we had the house all to ourselves

Me: let me go freshen up so we can leave

Lwa: what should I wear?

Me: comfortable clothes babe. We aren't going anywhere fancy

I kissed her cheek then went upstairs. I took a quick shower then wore black jeans, a white v-neck T-shirt and white allstars. When we were done, I drove us to the spa for treatments and I could tell that Lwa really needed this then afterwards we went out for lunch

Lwa: you really are spoiling me today

Me: I'm making up for lost time and I'm saying sorry

She smiled then her phone rang

*

*

Lwa

I checked the caller ID and it was Siviwe. I thought twice about answer but I did anyway

Me: hello

Siv: hey Lwa, how are you?

Me: I'm good and you?

Him: I've been better. I just wanted to let you know that we found Atha and Smanga.

Me: that's great. How are they?

Him: well Atha is in hospital and Smanga is dead

Me: what?

I gasped while covering my mouth. I looked at Soso and immediately wondered if he had anything to do with this

Him: yeah and things are not so good with Atha. He is paralyzed

Me: paralyzed? Which hospital is he in?

Him: I'll send you the details. Please come see him if you can. He needs you

Me: I will let you if I can come that side. Oh my gosh, I never saw this coming.

Thanks for letting me know

I hung up and just zoned out. Yes, Atha has put me through hell but I loved him once upon a time and he gave me my beautiful baby boys. He wasn't always a monster so he really doesn't deserve this.

Soso: are you ok?

Me: Lwandiso

Him: baby

Me: uphi uSmanga Soso?

Him: how am I supposed to know?

Me: I'm not going to repeat myself. Where is uSmanga?

Him: yho hayike andaz ufuna ndithini ngok

Me: so, you go to Capetown with him and the day after you come back, he turns up dead

Him: Smanga is dead? What happened?

Me: that's what I should be asking you since it was you and your brothers that were plotting someone's death in December and you did say I know the person

His facial expressions changed. It was like I had touched a nerve and he looked pissed off

Him: masambe

Me: no. I'm still eating and we are still talking. Tell me the truth Lwandiso, did you kill Smanga or not?

Him: I didn't. Now can we go please? You'll get a doggy bag

Me: why are you in such a rush to get out of here? Who are you running away from?

Him: Jesus Christ Lwandile stop asking me stupid questions and just get up

He called the waitress over, settled the bill and we left. He was walking so fast that I couldn't keep up with him. Kanti what are we running away from la?

We got to the car and he didn't come around to open my door so I just stood there

Him: get in the car

Me: how am I supposed to get in the if the door is locked? Must I squeeze through the key hole?

Him: open the door and get in

Me: since when do I open my own door now?

I was getting irritated but not as much as he was. He came around to open the door

Him: there. Are you happy now?

Before I got the chance to answer, my water broke and he just gave me a puzzled look

Him: why didn't you just pee at the restaurant if you wanted to pee?

Me: that's not pee you idiot. My water just broke

Him: nyan? Ok what should I do?

Me: how about you drive me to the hospital?

Him: why are you so calm? Are you sure that's not pee?

Me: just fucken drive to the hospital

He drove like a maniac to the hospital, I wasn't feeling any contractions yet so at least I was the sane one in all of this. I got admitted while crazy daddy went to our house to pick up the baby bag and my other things. After 10 mins or so I started feeling the pain. On the 7th of April at 12:45pm I gave birth to a healthy, very light skinned baby girl. Alwandiswe Yandisa Mikaela Smith

*

*

Soso

When I cut the cord and got to hold my princess in my arms, I felt complete. I looked at her and instantly fell in love with her. She was perfect in every aspect of the word and I'd go to the ends of the earth to protect her. No boy is ever going to come near

my princess or else he will die. When the nurses brought her back after bathing her, I sat on the chair next to Lwa's bed holding my baby girl

Lwa: can I get a chance to hold her too?

Me: no, not yet. She is still bonding with her daddy. Hello my little princess. Daddy loves you so much. Don't tell mommy but I love you more than I love her

Her: lol I heard that. She is so white hey

Me: lol I was expecting that but she is perfect.

I place my finger in her hand and she held it tightly. She is strong too. My parents, my boys and my brothers came to see her and they loved her. I didn't want to share her but Lwa forced me to

Mom: ncoah she is so precious. What's her name?

Me: Alwandiswe Yandisa Mikaela Smith

Dad: you named her after your mother?

Me: yeah

Mom: she would be so proud of the man you've become. I know I am. Ncoah my granddaughter

Mike: come to your uncle baby girl

He took her from my mom and held her in his arms

Me: don't drop my daughter Mike

Mike: come on mahn give me a little credit here

Jay: so, when are you guys going home?

Lwa: tomorrow

Jay: Soso should just get himself admitted because it doesn't look like he is going to survive

Loy: mama

Lwa: yah baby

Loy: inana yakho le?

Me: ewe. Usis wakho

Q: sis kaYoyiso?

Me: usis wakho nawe

Loy: uba igama lakhe?

Lwa: uYaya

Loyiso and Qhawe don't know how to pronounce their own names so there is no way they are going to be able to say Mikaela's name. When visiting hours were over, my family had to leave but I managed to stay for another hour

Me: thank you babe

Lwa: for what?

Me: for her. For the twins. For you being you.

Her: and for her sake and for the sake of the twins I hope you have nothing to do with Smanga's death.

Me: can we not talk about this in front of her?

Her: but at some point, we will have to talk about it because I know something big happened while you were away and it changed you

Me: I don't know what you are talking about

Nurse: we have to take the baby back to the nursery and you need to leave sir

I kissed my princess's forehead then gave her to the nurse

Me: baby I will see you tomorrow

Lwa and I shared a kiss then I left. I still had to fetch the twins from my parents' house so I drove there.

Mom: tata kaMikaela

Loy: hayi khulu utata wam lo

He held on to my leg so I picked him up. We high fived then he rested his head on my shoulder

Mom: lol you are in trouble here. These boys are too attached to you

Me: lol they will learn to share me. I love all my kids equally. Uphi uQhawe?

Mom: they went to your house with Mike and Jason to get clothes for you guys

Me: and I still have to buy stuff for the nursery tomorrow. Please come with me

Mom: of course, I will

Loy: tata

Me: ya boy

Loy: ndizolala nawe mna

Me: uzolala nobani uQhawe?

Loy: andaz. Utata wam wena

Mom: utata wakho noQhawe noYaya

Loy: hayi tata wam nodwa

Then he started crying. Yho this child though. I tried calming him down but he wasn't having it so my mom took him and gave him juice

Mom: you are going to have to talk to them before Mikaela comes home or else they are not going to warm up to her or want to share you

Me: lol I will talk to them. Where's dad anyway?

Her: you know your father lives in his study

I went to the study, knocked and walked in. He was sitting in front of his laptop

Dad: Lwandiso. I've been waiting for you

I sat down and he gave me a cigar and a glass of whiskey

Dad: welcome to fatherhood. You are a man now

Season 3

Insert 4

Lwa

The following day Mikaela and I got discharged and it was her dad and her older brothers that fetched us. I wasn't sure about putting Mikaela's car seat between Loyiso and Qhawe but Soso told me he spoke to them and they understand that this is their baby sister and they should love her. We all got in the car and drove home

Q: mama ilele inana yakho

Loy: asiyo inana, usisi lo

Soso: mxelele Loyiso. Uyamthanda usis wakho?

Loy: ewe tata. Yathanda mna

Soso: Qhawe

Q: yathanda nam tata

It was a cute moment to watch because clearly my big boys were going to be fine with having a baby in the house. We got home and I was really exhausted. Soso's mom was in the lounge when we walked in, I greeted then went to put Kaela down since she was sleeping then I went to our room where I found Soso

Me: the nursery looks good. Thank you

Soso: mom helped me. Do you need anything?

Me: just a nap. Please watch Kaela in the mean time

Him: babe I can see that you are still uneasy about the Smanga thing

Me: does it matter? You don't want to tell me the truth angithi so what's the use of talking about it?

Him: so, you are just going to be grumpy over this forever? We just had a baby Lwa, a beautiful baby girl. I want to be happy. I want us to be happy

Me: Smanga was also someone's baby but you didn't hesitate to kill him. Atha is also someone's baby and he might never walk again

Him: and why do you care?

I don't know this side of Lwandiso. How can one person show me so much love yet have such a dark and twisted mind? Its like he is 2 different people and he is starting to scare me. I fear for the safety of my kids and even my safety. I'm going to marry a guy that can kill a man today and still bring me flowers and chocolates the next day. If this doesn't push me over the edge, I guess nothing will

Me: ngicela ukulala Soso. I'm exhausted and this conversation isn't helping me at all.

Him: I don't even know why Atha's name still comes up in this house but I know I'm going to put a stop to it. One way or the other

With that he clicked his tongue and walked out.

*

*

Soso

I got downstairs then threw myself on the couch and changed the channel from cartoons to rugby

Loy: haw tata

Me: hambani nodlala phandle

Q: hayi funa ubuka opopayi

Me: ndithe phandle Qhawe

Next thing out of nowhere they started crying and honestly, I wasn't in the mood for their nonsense

Mom: what's going on here?

Me: bayatefa aba. They are crying for no reason and if Mikaela wakes up because of them ndizakubabetha

Mom: hayi suka don't take your frustrations out on the kids.

She took them to the kitchen while I continued watching my game. My phone rang and it was Marcus.

Me: Marc wassup bruh?

Marc: we are in your your area and we want to finally meet your girl and your baby

Me: ngoku?

Him: yeah. Vula igate

I'm not in the mood for visitors but I opened the gate for them and they walked in making a noise until they saw my mom. They greeted her then sat down on the couch

Me: stop making a noise, there is a baby here

Luke: oh yah where is she?

Me: sleeping

Ntando: and your other kids? And your girl?

Me: Loyiso! Qhawe! Yizani

The came walking in, still angry at me so they just stood in the middle of the room.

Me: yizani

They walked towards me and I put them on my laps then I kissed their cheeks

Me: ningqumbele?

They didn't respond. They were basically ignored me then I started tickling them and they started laughing

Me: ndiyanthanda evha

Them: thanda nami tata

Marc: yho this actually looks like fun. You are enjoying this daddy thing neh

Me: its the best thing that's ever happened to me. These are my boys Loyiso and Qhawe

Luke: ukhipha ocream mjita

Me: you should see my daughter bruh. A day old and already the world's most gorgeous baby.

Ntando: lol I can't wait until she grows up and you will have to start chasing boys all over the place

Mom: Lwandiso go check on your daughter, I think she is awake. If she is, check her diaper then give her this

Check her diaper? I've never changed a diaper in my life. I went to the nursery, found her just chilling with her eyes half opened

Me: hello beautiful. You miss your daddy? Come to daddy

I picked her up, placed her on the changing table then looked at the instructions outside the pampers box on how to put the diaper on her. When I thought I had figured it out, I walked out with her to the guys who were having a good time with Qhawe and Loyiso

Me: mama come check, I don't know if I did it right

My mom took Mikaela from me, placed her on the kitchen counter gently then checked that her diaper was put on properly. Luckily, I got it right the first time and I was actually so happy. I'm getting good at this dad thing

Marc: give her to me and let me see her

He took her and just played with her while she looked at him with no reaction. They then passed her around amongst each other

Luke: she really is adorable but she doesn't look like you

Me: you are speaking nonsense, she is my photocopy mjita. Look properly

I took her from him then gave her her bottle. My friends started taking pictures of us but I wasn't paying them much attention. I was more focused on the perfect little person I get to call my own. She didn't stay awake for long so when she did fall asleep, I took her upstairs to her mother who was fast asleep. I shook her a little then she woke up

Lwa: what's going on?

Me: Yaya misses her mommy

She sat up on the bed then held her arms out for me to put Mikaela in them

Her: seriously Soso? You are waking up for a sleeping baby?

Me: kalok baby nami I miss you

Her: mxm unesdina yaz

She put Mikaela on the bed then went to freshen up in our bathroom. I took tons of pictures of my baby while she slept. I can't get over her perfection. When Lwa came back she was still not pleased with me

Me: my friends want to meet you

Her: why?

Me: what do you mean why? They don't know you and they want to meet you

Her: are you not going to kill these ones?

Me: that's a low blow babe and you know it.

Her: whatever. Asambe

I followed her downstairs as she went to take a seat in the lounge. I sat next to her and put my arm around her

Me: sthandwa sam these are my friends. That's Luke and Marcus and this is Ntando. Majita this is my wife Lwa

Them: nice to meet you Lwa

Lwa: like wise

*

*

Lwa

Soso's friends were hot and it kind of annoyed me that he wanted me to meet them a day after I had given birth, I was feeling unattractive and ugly. Definitely not ready to meet you people. After the intros I made my way to the kitchen. Soso's mom had already prepared lunch and dished it up so I just took the plates to the dining room

Me: thank you ma

S's mom: aren't you exhausted?

Me: I was but I'm ok now

Her: you should get all the rest you need because she might get restless at night

Me: if she is then ngizovusa uSoso since he woke me up now

I left her in there and went to call Soso and his friends for lunch then I fed the twins. After a few hours his friends left and he wanted to leave with them. He walked into the nursery while I was pumping milk into a bottle

Soso: I'll be back baby. Just an hour max

Me: so, I'm supposed to take care of Mikaela on my own, bath the twins, feed them and put them to bed on my own?

Him: its an hour. Ndizawubuya and help you with Kaela and the twins

Me: do what you want Lwandiso. Clearly what I say doesn't matter

Him: yima kalok Lwa. What's going on here? You are being so weird towards me

Me: go out with your friends Soso because clearly, they are more important than your family.

Him: come to our room when you are done here.

With that being said, he walked out. I finished the pumping then got Kaela's bath water ready but Soso's mom walked in as I was getting ready to bath her

S's mom: uzowumesula andithi? She is still too young for bathing twice a day. Just bath her in the morning properly but in the evenings just wipe her

Me: ok ma.

She helped me with her then I gave her the bottle to feed her while I went to our bedroom. I found Soso sitting on the bed busy on his phone. When I walked in, he looked up at me

Soso: close the door. Actually, lock it

I did as requested then sat down next to him

Him: I think me and you need to clear a couple of things out. Firstly, this is our home where we are raising our family which means I'm the head of this household and that comes with a certain level of respect

Me: I do show you respect. All the time actually. Even in times when you don't deserve it or you don't respect me, I still respect you

Him: you busy talking here while I'm talking to you and yet you tell me you show me respect. Clearly, we have different understandings on what respect is. Anyway, as I was saying, I don't want to ever hear Athandwe's name in this house or Smanga's name.

Me: if that's your way of getting me to stop asking you what happened to them then it won't work. I want to know what you did Soso

Him: what I did? Who said I did anything? All I did was protect myself and my family but you are making it sound like I did something so horrible

Me: tell me what you did. Did you kidnap them? Did you kill Smanga?

Him: I killed Smanga in self defense.

Me: what? Don't try justifying the monster that you've become.

Him: monster? You are calling me a monster because I defended myself from a man that was attacking me? You would have preferred that I die and he lives? Because he is such an angel, right? Sundiqhela kakubi fondin

Its one thing to assume something but to have it confirmed to you is a different story. I was never ready to hear that my husband to be is a cold-blooded murderer

Me: and what about uAtha? What did he do to you?

He looked at me like I just asked him the stupidest question in the world. I don't think Soso still remembers that Atha is the biological father of the twins and that some day that will have to come out so how will he explain to them what he has done to his father and uncle?

Him: sundibuza ikaka. I wish it was Atha that I had killed because he deserves to die

Me: and what about Qhawe? What about Loyiso?

Season 3

Insert 5

Lwa

I don't even know when and how this conversation turned into a fight but here we are screaming and shouting at each other like we have no sense. Soso looked at me with so much pain and anger in his eyes that I felt I had to calculate my words correctly before I end up against the wall with his hands around my throat. Yes, he has never been violent towards me or hurt me physically but the man he is right now is unpredictable so whatever happened while he was away changed him

Soso: Loyiso and Qhawe have a father who loves them, protects them and takes care of them. Your problem is that you still have hope somewhere in your life that Atha will change and be the guy you were once in love with and that's not going to happen. That guy is gone but clearly you still have hope

Me: that's not true. I don't care what happens to Atha, I care about my kids

Him: stop using the kids as an excuse to care about your ex. If you still want him in your life, say so. If you want him to be a father to the twins, say so and if you want to go back to him, say so and I will let you go

When he said this, his voice wasn't loud and it didn't look like he was speaking out of anger. He really meant what he was saying and I felt my eyes sting as tears threatened to roll down

Him: why are you crying now?

Me: you don't want me anymore.

Him: yho hayike andaz ukuba ufuna ndithini ngok. I told you that I want us to be happy. We just had a baby so the last thing I want is us to be fighting but kalok wena ufuna answers to things we shouldn't be talking about. What I did has nothing to do with us. I did it for us but I don't see the point in us talking about it

Me: I told you I'm not going to date a gangster let alone marry one and raise kids with one

Him: and I told you I'm not a gangster. If me protecting my family makes me a gangster then uphambene. You might have forgiven what Atha did but I haven't and I never will. He tried to kill me, I was in hospital for over a month, had surgeries all because he couldn't accept that he fucked up with you and lost you. Your ex is childish and stupid but if that's the kind of man you want in your life, who am I to stop you?

Me: but now how are you different from him? All the things he has done, you have done as well so niyafana

It was like I had poured petrol in a blazing fire. He immediately got up and stepped away from me. He looked so angry that now I knew I had pushed his buttons and there was no going back

Him: you are an idiot Lwandile. Usisbhanxa nyan and I won't stand here and listen to your stupidity. Mna ndifana noAtha? Everything I've done to him is the same stuff that he did to you. The reason he is paralyzed is because I gave him the drugs that he gave you. If my brothers hadn't rescued you, you and Mikaela would be the paralyzed ones. I'm nothing like Atha, I'm not perfect but I'd never do the things he has done to you to anyone but clearly you don't see that and you never will

He stormed out of the room without giving me a chance to respond and I didn't run after him. I was smart enough to know that it wouldn't end well for me or us. I got in the bathroom, took a bath then got dressed in pyjamas and went to check on my kids. The twins were watching TV while Soso's mom was dishing up and Mikaela was on the couch. Soso wasn't in sight

Me: uphi utata?

Loy: hambile

I took Mikaela to the kitchen, poured myself a glass of juice then just stood there

Me: akashongo ukuthi uyaphi uSoso ma?

S's mom: uthe he is going out with his friends. Akakuxelelanga?

Me: oh, he did mention it. It must have slipped my mind

The last thing I want is Soso's mom getting involved in our business. I want us to be able to sort out our own problems like adults. When supper was ready, I placed Kaela back on the couch and we all sat at the table. After supper I washed the dishes, put the boys to bed then went to put Mikaela to sleep. I looked at her as I rocked her and she really was her father's daughter. She was beautiful, small and so fragile. Being around her was soothing which made me understand why her father is so obsessed with her. I rocked her, sang for her and even played with her but she wasn't falling asleep and at least she wasn't crying either. I was slowly falling asleep and I was getting irritated because I shouldn't have to be doing this on my own. She has a father who lives under this roof as well. Eventually I put my pride aside and called Soso

*

*

Soso

When I heard my phone ring, I wasn't in the position to answer it. It was easter weekend so Njalo was home and when I left the house earlier that night, I called her and she was home so I went to her. I needed to clear my head but at the same time I didn't want to be alone or with my boys. When I got to her house, she wasn't alone, her mom and her son were there. I greeted then we went to chill in her room. I wanted to get drunk and high so badly just to get my mind off everything

Njalo: you are making it a habit of coming here when you have problems at home

Me: are you complaining? Because if you don't want me here, I can leave.

Her: I'm not complaining. I'm just saying kalok. Phola Soso

Me: mxm. Don't you want to hit the beach or something? I want vodka and weed

She got up, walked towards her closet and pulled out a bottle of Absolut vodka and threw it at me. I smiled to myself as I opened it and took my first sip

Her: just don't black out please because I don't want your wife on my case about me taking advantage of her drunk husband

Me: mxm when have I ever passed out? So, the weed?

Her: you are going to have to do without it because I don't have it

We drank the vodka together, laughing, reminiscing about our past and just having a care-free good time and that's when Lwa called. I looked at my phone for a long time before I decided not to answer. I don't feel like being screamed at and being treated like a monster for doing the right thing. She kept calling over and over again

Njalo: you should get that

Me: but I want to get you right now

Her: I don't want you when you are like this. I want you when you are sober and aware of what you are doing. For now, I'll be the shoulder to cry on that you need but I won't give you more than that.

Me: mxm you suck. I'm not going to have sex with Lwa for 3 months because of the baby so you and I should get close

My phone rang again and this time I decided to answer

Me: hello

Lwa: you are such an asshole Lwandiso. How can you leave the whole night while I asked you to help me with Mikaela?

Me: I'm coming

I hung up, put the phone in my pocket and continued drinking the vodka

Njalo: aren't you leaving?

Me: you know the first thing she said when I answered the phone is that I'm an asshole. Im in no rush to go back to someone who doesn't appreciate me or the things I do.

I moved closer to her and reached in for a kiss but she backed away and that pissed me off

Me: mxm you think you are the only one with pussy in this country. Voetsek Njalo.

I took the bottle of vodka, my car keys and walked out. I wanted to call Ziya but her and I aren't close so I just drove home. I made sure to drive slowly to avoid getting into an accident. When I walked in to the house, it was pitch black so I walked

upstairs, falling a couple of times and then I saw light coming from the nursery. I stumbled in, accidentally knocking the stroller over which gave Lwa a fright and Mikaela started crying

Me: ssshhh princess. Come to daddy

Lwa: you are crazy. I'm not giving her to you. You are drunk and the lord alone knows where those hands have been.

Me: she is my baby so I can hold her even if I'm high.

I sat on the bed and just looked at them. I love them both so much but they are driving me crazy. Well Lwa is driving me crazy because of all the hormones or whatever. I don't know when and how but I must have passed out on the bed because when I woke up in the morning, I was still in the nursery but Lwa and Mikaela were not there. I waked of alcohol so I opened the windows then went to our room. I found them asleep on my bed so I took a shower then got in bed with them. I kissed my baby girl's forehead then pecked Lwa's lips which woke her up. She gave me an unimpressed look as she got out of bed

Me: uyaphi baby?

Lwa: I have a baby Lwandiso, I have to pump milk for her

Me: OK I'm coming with you

She didn't respond so I followed her to the nursery and watched her do the whole pumping thing

Me: baby I'm sorry about last night

Her: ubukuphi Lwandiso? And don't lie to me because I called both your brothers and apparently you were with both of them even though Jason was at home and Mike was out. So, they lied to me in order to cover for you

Me: I was with a friend. Jonga baby neh, I will watch Mikaela the whole day today and the whole night. I'm really sorry about last night. It won't happen again

Her: what friend Soso? Were you with Ziya?

Me: no. Of course not. I was with a friend of mine from work. The girl I used to work with in Jo'burg, Yolanda

Her: and yet you couldn't answer your phone

Me: Lwa, sthandwa sam its 6am, can we not start this day off with a fight?

I got up, kissed her forehead then leaned in for a kiss. We shared a slow kiss until I broke it then looked at her

Me: I love you

Her: I love you too

Me: good. Now go feed our princess while I go check on the princes

Her: I'm sorry for everything I said last night and for swearing at you when I called. I was just cranky because Mikaela didn't want to sleep. I know you hate me swearing at you and I wasn't making the situation any easier

The guilt of everything I almost did last night started creeping in. Imagine had I slept with Njalo, how shitty I'd be feeling right now. Its a good thing she turned me down

Me: its OK babe. I shouldn't have stormed out as well. Truce?

Her: lol truce. Now go check on the boys while I feed Kaela and bath her then she is all yours

I kissed her cheek then walked out. Loyiso and Qhawe were still sleeping so I left them and went back to my room.

Season 3

Insert 6

Soso

The next Tuesday I had to go back to work and I knew I had a lot of work to catch up on which means a lot of late nights at the office. When I got out the shower, my clothes were already ironed and placed on the hangers. The perks of having a wife are really showing now. I got dressed then made my way downstairs where my mom was feeding the twins while Lwa was feeding Mikaela.

Me: morning family

Them: morning

I sat down next to Lwa while I fixed my tie then kissed Kaela and Lwa

Lwa: please hold her while I get your breakfast ready

She gave her to me, got up and left us to play with each other. I made baby sounds, tickled her and just bonded with her. I hated having to go back to work since it means I have to leave my princess but I'm doing it for her and her brothers. When my food was placed on the table, Lwa took Mikaela and I sat down to eat.

Mom: you are dropping the twins off at school today

Me: OK. I have an early meeting so I'll leave soon

Lwa: and Mikaela is getting a vaccination today. Are you going to come or should we go without you?

Me: at what time?

Lwa: around 12ish

Me: I think I'll be there but I'll confirm later

I finished my breakfast, rinsed my mouth then grabbed my bag and car keys

Me: Loyiso! Qhawe! Masambe

They came running down the stairs but Lwa stopped them

Lwa: no running in the house. Come give mommy a kiss

She kissed their foreheads, pecked my lips and I kissed Kaela's face.

Me: I love you and you and you too mommy

Lwa: lol we love you too

After dropping the twins off at school, I headed to the office. The news of Smanga's death was all over the office so the atmosphere was a bit sad

Me: morning Liz.

Liz: morning sir

Me: please call an emergency staff meeting at 8:30

Her: alright sir

I made my way to my office and called Mr Anderson. His secretary answered so I asked her to put me through to him and she did

Mr A: Anderson hello

Me: good morning sir

Him: Mr Smith. How are you?

Me: I've been better sir and yourself?

Him: what's going on?

Me: we've lost one of our staff members to what seems like a tragic accident. Smanga passed away last week

Him: oh dear. That's terrible news. My deepest condolences, I know you guys were close

Close my foot. That idiot tried to kill me and I couldn't be happier about killing him. Good riddance to bad rubbish

Me: thank you sir. I'm going to be holding interviews to fill the position and I was thinking we should have a memorial service type of thing

Him: yes of course. You will let me know when you have finalized all the details

Me: alright. Talk soon sir

I hung up then got started on my work. Around 8:30 my secretary, Liz informed me that the staff is waiting for me in the boardroom so I headed there.

Me: morning ladies and gentlemen

Them: morning sir

I briefed them on the Smanga issue and obviously there were a few tears from the female staff members. I placed the responsibility of organizing the memorial service on them then ended the meeting. We have a lot to catch up on when it comes to work

*

*

Lwa

After Soso left, I bathed Kaela with the help of her grandmother then she fell asleep. I also took a shower and as I got out, my phone was ringing. It was my mom.

Me: mama

Mom: Lwandile. Unjani sisi?

Me: ngiright mama wena unjani?

Her: siyaphila. Unjani ugirl wakho?

Me: akahluphi okwamanje

Her: kungcono ke. We are thinking of coming to see her this weekend. Me and your brothers and your father

Me: that would be amazing. I miss you guys

Her: OK ke sisi sokubona ngeweekend

We hung up and my mood automatically switched to happy. I missed my family, I haven't seen them in months and its still a bit of an adjustment having to go through life without my mother holding my hand every step of the way. Its all part of growing up I guess. After getting dressed I made my way downstairs and started cleaning the house. Downstairs alone took me an hour and a half and then 3 hours later I was

done with the whole house. I was tired, Kaela was awake and she needed my attention since her grandmother was showering

Me: are you hungry, baby? Hmm or do you need to be changed?

She just looked at me with her half-closed eyes. I snapped a few pictures of her then sent them to her dad, Nomz, Lolz, Pali, Enzo and Sedi. I knew all these people were busy with work, except for Pali since she hasn't found a job yet so she called me back

Me: my friendship

Pali: yho you know how to keep a secret. When did she arrive?

Me: last week Wednesday. I thought Mike would have told you

Her: he didn't. She is so white mati.

Me: I know hey. Its like she isn't even mine

Her: she is too cute though. Can't wait to meet her

We continued with our catch-up session until the princess started crying

Me: we will talk later friend, I need to attend to this princess of mine

Her: alright. Kiss her for me. Tell her auntie Pali loves her

I hung up then picked Kaela up and went to my room with her

Me: lol but you love attention kodwa baby

I kissed her cheek then placed her on the bed while I freshened up and changed into a long dress and cardigan. The weather was a bit gloomy so I had to change Kaela into more warm clothes, packed her diaper bag then called her father

Liz: Anderson and sons, Lwandiso Smith's office good day

Me: hey Liz, it's Lwa. Please put me through to Lwandiso

Her: hold on a bit, how are you and the little one? When are you coming back?

Me: lol Liz though. I'm good hey, the little one is gorgeous. I will bring her to the office soon

Her: you should. We need some cheer in this doomed office. I'm going to put you through now

She put me through and Soso answered immediately

Soso: Smith hello

Me: uyakthanda ukuba formal

Him: lol sthandwa sam unjani?

Me: I'm tired and you?

Him: same here. I'm swamped with work

Me: oh, so you are not coming with us to the doctor?

Him: I'll be there babe. I'm actually going to leave the office now. I'll meet you guys there

I ended the call and Soso's mom helped me buckle Mikaela up in her car seat then she gave me a lunch box

S's mom: please give this to that workaholic husband of yours. I know he won't find time to eat

Me: thanks ma. I should have done this but I was occupied with the house

Her: its OK. You are not superwoman and this is why I'm here. To help out

I flashed her a smile as I got into the car and drove to town. I actually thought Soso would be late but to my surprise he was already waiting for us at the doctor's office. He took Kaela from me as we walked in. The doctor did his thing, weighing her and injecting her then the trouble started. She screamed so much that I felt my heart hurting. I tried taking her from her father but he refused then hushed her himself and put a soother in her mouth then she calmed down as we left the doctor's office

Me: your mom made you lunch so come take it before you go back to the office

Soso: my mom made me lunch or you did?

Me: lol she did. I didn't get a chance to. Kaela was being troublesome

He gave me Kaela as I gave him his lunch. I knew he was going to be home late today so I kissed him goodbye and we went our separate ways

*

*

Soso

When everyone had left the office, that's when I really got down to business. I like working when I'm alone and it's peaceful. Around 9ish my phone rang but I didn't know that number. I thought twice about answering but I did anyway

Me: Soso hello

Atha: sho bruh Soso.

Me: who is this?

Him: its Atha

I immediately felt uneasy. Why is Atha calling me so late at night? What could he possibly want?

Me: ufuna nton kwedin?

Him: ndifuna ukuthi enkosi for sparing my life. I know its not something you wanted to do but I'm glad you did anyway. I'll forever be grateful to you and your family. I've really learned my lesson

Me: I don't believe you and I don't trust you so I'm not buying any of this

Him: its OK. I understand but I mean it from the bottom of my heart. I'd like you to be present at Smanga's funeral as his boss of course

Me: his boss is Mr Anderson not me

Him: but he worked under you and despite you killing him, the family has forgiven you

Me: killing him? I'm confused now. I'm not the one responsible for his death. I was shocked as anyone else when I found out

I'm not stupid enough to start trusting Atha. For all I could know, he might be making this call from the police station with cops listening and just waiting for me to confess and they come and arrest me

Him: lol OK whatever you say. Did you get the money?

Me: that payment was from you? I told my bank to return it wherever it came from because I don't know about it

He must have gotten annoyed because he hung up and I just laughed to myself. I'm too old not to recognize a trap when I see one. This was a clear trap set by Atha and he is an idiot if he thought I'd fall for it. Around 10ish I left the office and drove home. Lwa and Mikaela were still awake so I warmed up my food, ate and then went to them. I greeted them with kisses then took my princess

Me: hey baby girl. Why are troubling mommy so much? Hmmm

Lwa: I hope you washed your hands

Me: of course, I did. Now go sleep. I'll put her to sleep

Her: you just got back from work. Don't you need to rest?

Me: I'm also a father so I want to spend some time with her

Lwa left leaving me and my baby to bond. I sat on the rocking chair then put her on my chest. Gosh I can't get over how small she is

Me: I love you so much baby girl. You are my reason for breathing and everything I do each and everyday is for you, your brothers and your beautiful mommy. I love your mommy too more especially because she gave me you. Please just do me one little favor and don't grow up too fast. Daddy wants you to stay this small, precious and fragile forever. You have given me a new sense of joy in my life that no one could ever take away from me. You are a part of me as much as you are a part of mommy. You are the most beautiful girl in the world and I'm going to make sure that I teach you all I know about love so no boy can make you believe that he loves you more

Season 3

Insert 7

Soso

After an hour or so Kaela fell asleep so I tucked her, kissed her then went to check on her brothers who were also fast asleep. When I got to my room, Lwa was already sleeping so I just took a quick shower then got in bed, wrapping my arms around her and pulled her close to me

Lwa: is she asleep?

Me: yeah. You should sleep too

Her: goodnight my love

I kissed her neck then squeezed her

Me: goodnight baby. I love you

She didn't respond and I assumed she was fast asleep again. About 4 hours later, I heard cries from the baby monitor and Lwa woke up to go attend to Kaela. I wasn't going to wake up, I need my sleep so by the time my alarm went off, I was well rested. I did my usual process of the morning and as usual, my clothes were waiting for me when I got out the shower. I got dressed, made my way downstairs, ate breakfast then left with the twins. When I got to the office, I was greeted by 2 police officers and Liz

Liz: morning sir, these 2 gentlemen have been waiting for you

Me: thanks Liz. Shall we?

They followed me into my office, I'm not going to lie, I was a bit scared but I wasn't going to show it. I sat down and so did they

Me: how may I help you gentlemen?

Cop1: I'm detective Madlala and this is detective Khumalo. We gave a few questions to ask you about Smanga

Me: sure. If I can help in anyway I will

Khumalo: is it true that you were the last one to see him alive?

Me: I'm not really sure on that because if I'm not mistaken, Smanga died last week and he left Capetown a month ago

Khumalo: and did he say where he was going?

Me: not specifically. I assumed he was making his way back here. I drove him to the airport

Madlala: and you stayed in Capetown?

Me: yes, I did. I still had work to do there

Madlala: and when did you fly back?

Me: last week. You can verify all this with the airlines and the hotel I was staying in

Khumalo: we definitely will and for your sake, I hope your story checks out. Tell me about your relationship with Athandwe Dlamini

My heart started racing and not because of the hotel and airline lie, that was properly covered by uncle Jono but its this Atha question that was making me feel uneasy because if they go as far as questioning Lwa, I'm fucked

Me: well we don't get along. He is my wife's ex but I have no issues with him

Madlala: that's not what he says. According to him, you two are sworn enemies

Me: we are not friends but I won't go as far as saying we are enemies. He has kids with my wife which I'm raising since he turned his back on them so if we were enemies, why would I raise my enemy's kids?

Khumalo: hmm I see Mr Smith. So, when last did you see him? Mr Dlamini that is

Me: is he dead too? I haven't seen him in ages. I think I last saw him 2 years ago. We had an altercation at school in the library. I could be mistaken but I think that's when I last saw him

Khumalo: and when last did you talk over the phone?

Me: he called me last night. Accusing me of killing Smanga and all sorts of other things. I didn't take him seriously because he has a history of drug abuse so he could have been high for all I know

They were writing down everything I said while recording it as well. After what felt like forever, they left and I immediately got to work but I couldn't concentrate. What if they go to my house and start questioning my wife?

*

*

Lwa

The rest of the week went by swiftly but I could tell that Lwandiso was offish and its like the more I asked him about it, the more annoyed he would get so at some point I just decided to stop asking. It was now Friday and my parents were coming over so I woke up early, prepared everything for Soso then started cleaning the guest rooms, changing sheets and stuff. I was playing music from my phone so when Soso walked in, I didn't hear him, I just felt his arms wrap around my waist which gave me a fright

Soso: sorry I didn't mean to scare you

Me: its OK. Aren't you going to be late?

Him: I'm on my way now, just wanted to say bye and I'm taking you out for lunch today.

Me: what's the occasion?

Him: since when do I need an occasion in order to take my wife out?

He kissed my cheek then pulled me in for a deeper kiss. He was slow and passionate; the kiss was even giving me goosebumps and butterflies

Him: let me go before I get carried away.

Me: lol enjoy your day my love

Him: thanks baby. I'll see you later. Uthandwa ndim

Me: I love you more

I blew him a kiss then continued with what I was doing as he walked out. I took the dirty linen to the laundry room, threw it into the washing machine then went to check on my baby

S's mom: you are so busy this morning. You haven't even eaten and that's not good since you are breastfeeding. Sit down

Me: I'll make food now ma then sit

Her: your food is already on the table. Eat while I put Yandisa to bed

Soso's mom isn't a fan of the Mikaela name so she calls her Yandisa and Soso let's her be and I also don't mind. I ate, my breakfast, took a shower then rested.

S's mom: so, when are you and Lwandiso planning on having the wedding?

Me: he says in July but that's 3 months away and nothing has been planned yet. All our focus has been on Mikae...I mean Yandisa

Her: when do you want to get married?

Me: around September...July is just too soon

Her: I agree with you fully. July is too soon. You guys need to still enjoy being engaged and stop with the continuous fighting

I didn't respond to that, instead I just flashed her a smile. What could I have possibly said to her? She is Lwandiso's mother so obviously she is going to take his side.

Around lunch time Soso came back and we left to town to have lunch. He was being extra nice to me today, opening doors and pulling out chairs for me. He was making me feel like a queen and I was enjoying every part of it

Me: I'm thinking of going back to work next month

He looked at me with shock on his face. You'd swear I just said something I shouldn't have said

Soso: next month? What about Mikaela?

Me: we'll hire a nanny.

Him: there is a reason why maternity leave is 4months. Mikaela is still too small to have a nanny and I don't want a stranger around my child while she is still so fragile.

Me: I'm bored at home Soso, the twins go to school and you go to work while I just sit at home and do nothing

Him: do nothing? Well that's your choice because there is a lot you can do around the house. You wake up in the morning, make breakfast, get my clothes ready, get the twins ready, clean the house, take care of Mikaela, make me lunch, make the twins lunch, fetch the twins from school, cook dinner and bath the kids. That's a full day's work and you say you are bored

Me: so, I must be the maid and nanny

Him: no, its called being a wife and a mother. Look I'm not saying do it forever but at least until Kaela is 4months old.

I didn't like the idea but I wasn't going to argue with him. He is my husband to be and Kaela's father so his word goes. The waiter came to take our orders then brought our drinks

Him: can I ask you something?

Me: yeah sure

Him: are you happy? Being with me. Do I still make you happy?

Me: yes, my love. I'm happy with you. I wouldn't want anyone else. I just want you

Him: OK sthandwa sam ndiyakuva. I just want you to be happy at all times. I've seen enough of your tears to last me a life time. I never want to see you cry ever again. I want our kids to learn the true meaning of love by watching our relationship and marriage grow before their eyes. I love you Lwa and I'm not perfect, I'm far from it and I make mistakes but that will never change how I feel about you. You and our kids are my everything

He sounded so sincere that I felt myself getting emotional. This was no special occasion, he hasn't done anything wrong but here he is professing his love for me. I quickly wiped the tear that rolled down my eye. I didn't even know what to say after that. A simple I love you too will not even come close to any expression I'd want to make. He smiled at me then held my hand tightly while rubbing it. I looked at him for a while just recalling everything we've been through, our highs and lows, our fights

and love making and of course our kids. Oh, our beautiful kids that we love so dearly.

Me: you know how to be sweet sometimes Mr Smith. I appreciate you so much that no amount of words could ever be enough to express my love for you. The lord has blessed me so much by working his magic through you. When counting my blessings, I count you and our kids twice because I couldn't imagine living life without the 4 of you.

Our little romantic moment was interrupted by the waitress bringing our food. We didn't waste time in digging in, we even made a toast at some point, just being silly as always. After our lunch, he drove me home then went back to work. I was so happy that I was even singing and dancing while preparing lunch. I was making my parents' favorite meals because I wanted them to feel welcomed in my home. Around 5ish they drove in and by the time they approached the door, I was already waiting there. We shared hugs then I led them to the lounge

Mom: wow this house is gorgeous, look at the ceiling and the size of that TV. Yho usebenzile umkhwenyana bo

Dad: impela nkoskazi.

I smiled to myself then poured juice for them and joined them in the lounge

Mom: uphi umuntu omusha bakithi. Ngifuna ukuzibonela yena

I went to fetch Mikaela while Soso's mom dished out for everyone. I gave her to my mom and she could stop herself from staring at her

Mom: akasemhlophe bethuna ndze yena. Muhle bakithi Lwandile

Me: lol ngiyambongela. Ufana kakhulu nobaba wakhe

Dad: ngebala kuphela otherwise mina ngizibonela uLoyiso noQhawe la

Lwandiso walked in as my parents settled down to eat. He greeted Kaela and I with forehead kisses then went to greet my parents before going to change

*

*

Soso

I changed into shorts and a T-shirt then went back downstairs and sat next to Lwa while taking my princess from her

Lwa: awulambile?

Me: hayi sthandwa sam. I'll wait for dinner

Season 3

Insert 8

Soso

Being surrounded by family love is amazing and soothing to the soul, not to mention relaxing. All this joy and laughter was even having an effect on me, making me forget the hectic week I've had. We were all chilling in the lounge after having supper and just talking

L's mom: I can't get over how big and beautiful this house is.

Me: thank you ma. We need all the space for the soccer team we are still going to make

Lwa: lol yho you are on your own with that soccer team because I'm done making kids

Mom: yet you are still so young. 2 more kids won't be so bad

Me: tell her mommy. That way we will have enough kids for a 5 a side soccer team

Lwa: awume neSoccer team yakho Soso. Ma nawe mama, you guys have 3 kids each so why must I have more? Besides kids are expensive

Me: but I work and so do you. Money really isn't an issue here and you know it. I still want another son and another daughter.

Lwa: give it some time

Lwa was sitting next to me so I put my arm around her, pulled her towards me then kissed the side of her head. Her parents soon went to their room and so did my mom. It was still quite early but you know old people. So, I was now left with Lwa and the twins since Kaela was asleep too.

Lwa: I want to go out tomorrow

Me: go out with who?

Her: the family. We can show my parents around, have lunch or something. I don't want to be couped up in the house all day tomorrow

Me: you and mom can do that, I've had a long week, I just want to chill indoors this weekend and besides kuyabanda

She started sulking and giving me puppy dog eyes but I wasn't going to budge. I need to rest and I need to catch up on work. She just needs to understand that

Her: its fine ke, I'll call Jason to come with us.

Me: you and Jason are all of a sudden, the best of friends, I hope nothing funny happened while I was gone

Her: oh please. I was heavily pregnant and he is your brother so nothing funny could ever happen

I pulled her closer to me, our faces were now centimeters away from each other

Me: good

Then I went in for a kiss, I had even forgotten that the twins were still there

Q: sies tata

I broke the kiss and we started laughing. I picked them up, put them between us then we continued watching the cartoon's movie that was playing. Before long, they fell asleep so I carried them to their room and by the time I got to my room, Lwa was getting ready to take a bath

Me: can I join you?

Lwa: as long as you promise that you will behave

Me: lol I'll try but I'm not promising anything.

I stripped naked then went to fill up the bath tub with water and bubble bath. We both got in, Lwa sat between my legs while I poured water all over her body then I pulled her close to me and started planting wet kisses on her neck

Lwa: hayi baby, you said you will behave

Me: I said I'll try but I'm going to stop now since I know it won't get us anywhere

Her: I'm glad you know. Just 11 weeks to go then we can back to it

Me: what? Didn't the doctor say 6 weeks?

Her: medically its 6 weeks but culturally its 3months

All I heard was that culturally, it's torture. How am I supposed to wake up with a hard on everyday and not get some for 12 weeks? I'm going to explode kalok. When the water started getting cold, we got out, wrapped our bodies with towels and Lwa rinsed the bathtub while I moisturized my body and got in bed. She joined me soon after and we fell asleep a while later

*

*

Lwa

The next day I woke up around 5:00am, took a bath, got dressed then went to check on my baby but she was fast asleep so I started cleaning this house but only downstairs. When I was done, I got started on breakfast since I knew the whole family will be up soon. I made everyone's favorites then placed all the food in the warmer. It was a cold and rainy morning so I know Soso won't be waking up soon but Kaela on the other hand woke up as I was finishing with the breakfast. I pumped milk for her, feed her then bathed her and dressed her warmly

Loy: mama vukile mina

Me: morning boy. Uphi uQhawe?

Him: lele. Funa uhlala nawe

He looked at his little sister then at me and then back at her.

Me: OK hambo buka itv, ngyeza

I switched the TV on then took Kaela to my room and placed her next to Soso who woke up the moment I put Kaela on the bed

Soso: why are you out of bed?

Me: because I had stuff to do. Please watch her

Him: what stuff? Its 7:30am and you already did stuff on a Saturday morning?

Me: lol calm down, its just cleaning and making food

Him: are the parents up?

Me: nah not yet

Him: so, come back to bed babe. Its cold

Me: Loy is up and I want to spend some time with him.

Him: mxm OK fine

Lwandiso likes acting like a baby when he doesn't get his way. Its like I'm raising four kids instead of three. I kissed his cheek then left him with Mikaela. I took a fleece blanket then got on the couch and cuddled with my son

Loy: yabona uSofia mama

We were watching Sofia The First so he was busy telling me about the characters and what's going on. We spoke nonsense the whole time and before we knew it, everyone was up

Mom: sanbona

Us: yebo

Dad: akusabandi kanje. How do you cope with this?

Me: there are floor heaters in the room. Let me go switch it on for you then I'll serve breakfast

S's mom: and here I was thinking I was still going to make it

I made my way to the guest room my parents were using, switch the floor heater on then washed Loyiso and Qhawe's faces before setting the table and serving breakfast. We all ate together while Kaela laid on the couch

Soso: this is so good babe. Thank you

Me: my pleasure. Mama nobaba I was thinking we should go out for the day

Mom: in this weather? Oh no, I'd rather spend time with my grandkids

Me: haw mama, it will be good to go out

Dad: if the weather changes then I'd love to go and see oSmith

Soso: I don't mind taking you there, tata. Being surrounded by so many women can make any man go crazy

We all gave him unimpressed looks and he just laughed. After breakfast I put the dishes in the dishwasher then went to bath the twins. Soso walked in while I was getting them dressed

Soso: your dad and I are going over to my parents' house. We will be back in time for lunch

Me: but I was hoping we could spend the day in bed together and it was you that said you want to spend the weekend indoors

Him: I know babe but I'm being a nice host and accommodating our guests. I'll be back before you know it. He wrapped his arms around me from the back and kissed my cheek

Me: come back with your dad and your brothers. I'll make sure to cook enough lunch for everyone

Him: this is why I love you, you know how to think ahead

Me: lol I just miss Jason

Him: sundiqhela...actually I'm going to leave him. He knows how to make his own lunch anyway

Me: lol you are so cute when you are jealous

He picked the boys up and they started laughing

Q: hamba nawe tata

Soso: siyamshiya umama?

Loy: madoda wodwa. Soli mama

Me: its fine. Ngizosala noYaya wam

Loy: yasala nam

Soso: hayi ndoda syahamba

I gave Soso the twins' jackets and they left. My mom was in the lounge carrying Mikaela while Soso's mom was reading

Mom: so which name do you call her by?

Me: uma calls her Yandisa but Soso and I call her Mikaela or Kaela

Mom: niyasthanda islungu bakithi

S's mom: that's the same thing I said

Me: its her dad that wants her to be called that. The name has sentimental meaning to him

*

*

Soso

When we arrived at my parents' house, my dad and my brothers were chilling in the lounge

Me: molweni

Dad: hau uhamba uHadebe, bendingayaz ukuba ulapha. Uphilile ndoda?

They shook hands then my dad took Qhawe from me and put him on his lap

L's dad: ngiphilile bafo, yiwo nje amakhaza lawa

Mike: uzowaqhela tata

Me: why don't you guys visit my house vele? And wena Jason umfazi wam misses you for some reason. I don't even know why

Jay: lol we will visit bro. Soon

Me: akhonto yasoon apha. She is making lunch and you guys are invited

Mike: Lwa is amazing. I can't wait. I'm even tired of Jason's cooking

Dad: Nam kwedin. Khawndibuyisela umfazi wam Lwandiso

Me: lol uzawbuya tata. In 3 weeks or so

Mike: how's my niece?

Me: you will see her later bruh.

My phone rang so I went to answer it in the kitchen, leaving Loy with Mike

Me: hello

Ziya: hey stranger

Me: lol unjani?

Her: I'd be a lot better if I could see you

Me: lol I'm a married man Ziya

Her: married men are allowed to have friends, right?

Me: they are but not friends that make their wives feel some type of way

Her: aaah that's a bummer but one drink wouldn't hurt. For old time sakes

Me: I guess not but I'll let you know when I'm available. I need to catch up on work and I'm a dad again so I don't have time on my hands

Her: congrats on the baby. I might just pop by at your office while you are working late Mr CEO

Me: lol bye Ziya

Her: bye Soso

I hung up and just laughed to myself. These women just won't leave me alone but I enjoy the attention, I'm not going to lie. Its innocent after all

Loy: tata

I turned around and found Loy standing behind me so I picked him up and put him on the counter

Loy: cela ikhekhe

Me: OK. Qhawe yizapha

Qhawe came running in and I also placed him on the counter then got cookies from the cupboard then warmed milk for them and gave it to them.

Me: don't fall and call me when you are done

Them: OK tata

I went back to the men in the lounge

L's dad: you spoil these boys kodwa mkhwenyana

Me: lol if I don't, who will?

Dad: point taken. Whiskey anyone?

Jay: its so early for whiskey dad. Its not even 10am yet

Dad: early? Tell me ke Jason, what time do throats open?

We all burst into laughter as my dad poured each of us a glass of whiskey. Even Mr "its too early for whiskey" had a glass in his hand. Spending the day with no women was fun, we drank, smoked cigars and just talked nonsense. We were having so much fun that we lost track of time. Lwa called around 2pm

Me: sthandwa sentliziyo yam, muntu othandwa ndim. Mama kaMikaela

Lwa: mxm musa ukuzincengela. Anisabuyi yin kanti? Lunch has been ready

Me: askies baby. We will be there now

Season 3

Insert 9

Lwa

It could have been my imagination but Soso sounded like he had been drinking and if my suspicions are confirmed, I'm going to kill him. He knows how I feel about the twins being around drunk people. After an hour, I heard cars pull up in the drive way so Soso's mom and my mom helped with setting up the table. The men walking in making the loudest noise you've ever heard

S's mom: kungxolelwa nton?

S's dad: uxolo lovie wam

Soso's parents are so cute sometimes, you'd swear they were experiencing teenage love. Mike dropped himself on the couch while his dad kissed his mom, my dad kissed my mom and my man planted kisses on my cheek. He didn't smell like alcohol but the behavior was strange

Mike: yho hayike umuntu uzojongiswa iAll you need is love apha

Soso: mthande mthande umuntu wakho

He was singing off tune but our dads joined in and we started dancing in the dining room. Being twirled around and hugged closely. The twins were even laughing and clapping

S's mom: lol let's eat guys before Michael loses his mind

Jay: I was five to losing my mind as well

We all sat down around the table, my mom said a prayer then we started eating

Mike: where is my twin though?

Me: who is your twin?

Mike: Mikaela... You guys know deep down that you named her after me

Soso: umuncu sonny. Why would I name my daughter after your crazy ass?

S's dad: but Michael was named after your mother Lwandiso. I lost a bet with your father so as a result, he got to name Michael and he named her after your mother

Me: ncoah that's so sweet. Your parents must have really loved each other

S's dad: yho they did. My brother was a true romantic, he made the rest of us look bad

Me: I guess the apple doesn't fall far from the tree

I turned my head to look at my bae who was already pink from all the blushing. Naye he is a romantic shame in his own special way. We had the rest of the lunch over a crazy and funny conversation. Everyone engaged in it, sharing jokes and memories. After lunch, Jay helped me collect the dishes and clear the table

Jay: so, I hear you miss me

Me: I do. You spent too much time here for me not to miss you and then you just disappeared on me

Him: I'll start visiting more often, I promise

When we were done, we joined the rest of the family in the lounge. Mike was holding Mikaela, I don't even know when she woke up but luckily, she wasn't crying. The rest of the day went by quickly and in the evening, after supper, the Smith men left, leaving the house as silent as it usually is. My parent went to bed, so did the twins so only Mikaela was up. I wasn't going to sit in the nursery kubanda kanje so I took her to our room and placed her on the bed next to her father

Soso: awufuni ulala today princess? Well you will keep daddy company while he works

Me: you are going to work now?

Him: ewe I have work to catch up

Me: and it can't wait until tomorrow? Or do you have plans tomorrow?

Me: I want to spend time with my family ngomso so I'll do as much as I can now and then I'll sleep when Yaya sleeps

I didn't respond, instead I took my clothes off, wrapped myself in a towel then went to take a quick bath.

*

*

Soso

A month passed and it was now early May, the 7th to be exact and my princess was turning a month old so after work, I passed by a bakery and bought a cake then went home. I found my family in the lounge. Mom had gone back home today so it was just the 5 of us.

Me: hey family

The twins ran to me the moment they saw the cake

Loy: birthday yam tata

Q: hayi birthday yam andithi tata

Me: lol yibirthday kaYaya

Loy: inana anayo ibirthday

Lwa: lol wonkumuntu unayo ibirthday Loyiso.

I placed the cake in the fridge then went to change in casual clothes. I was enjoying my relationship lately, we were loving each other like crazy, bonding over our daughter and not fighting. I appreciate the not fighting part the most. As I was changing, Lwa walked in with Mikaela, placed her on the bed then wrapped her arms around my waist. I kissed her forehead and she looked at me with a smile on her face

Lwa: I love you

Me: hmm what do you want?

Her: lol so now I can't tell the man I love that I love him without me wanting something

Me: lol I know you MaHadebe

I lowered my head and kissed her lips slowly but she picked up the pace and next thing my hands were on her ass and her arms were around my neck. I felt myself getting hard so I broke the kiss. Lwa still had her eyes closed and I know exactly what that means

Her: why did you stop?

Me: because I don't want to get an erection for no reason when I know I can't get some and because our daughter is in the room

Her: but I want you. I miss you

Me: lol have you even healed properly because 6 weeks isn't up yet

Her: well it still hurts when I pee kodwa only a little bit

Me: well in that case no Smith for you but I can see how thirsty you are so I'll make a plan but later though

I put on a T-shirt, picked my princess up, kissed her mother then went back downstairs to the twins who were watching Sophia the first. Honestly, I think that show is for girls so I don't understand why Lwa let's them watch it. I changed the channel to cartoon network and ben10 was playing. That's more like it. That's what boys should watch

Q: Sophia tata kalok

Me: uyintombi wena?

Q: hayi yindonda mna

Me: amadoda abuka uben10 hayi uSophia

Loy: mnandi uSophia tata. Inana ifuna ukubuka uSophia

Lwa: baby just let them watch it. They like it

Me: that's the problem. I don't want to have gay sons here

Lwa: gay from watching Sophia? Seriously Lwandiso

Mikaela started crying so I gave her the bottle but she didn't want it. I tried rocking her but she would keep quiet for a while then start crying again

Me: what's wrong baby? Huh? Ufuna umama? Akuthathe umama?

Lwa was already in the kitchen but she heard me and shouted back

Lwa: please check her diaper. She is most probably wet

Me: by the smell of it, she is most probably brown

I took her to the nursery, undressed her and yep she had pooped. I wasn't going to change that

Me: Lwa please come

Lwa: I'm busy Soso, just change her please

Me: she pooped baby. Andizotshintsha amakaka mna. Not in this lifetime

Her: well I'm not leaving my pots to do something you can do. The wipes are in the first drawer there.

Me: but babe come on. You can't expect me to touch amakaka

Her: lol she is your perfect little princess remember? Your princess that you love. Perfect princesses poop too. Good luck and have fun

Me: lol uwrong yaz baby but its fine. I'll get you back for this

I covered my nose and mouth with one of her bandana bibs then went in. Yeah, no Mikaela knows how to do damage with a smile on her face. I poured so much baby powder, I even thought her nappy would be heavy. I got her dressed again and we went back to watching TV.

Lwa: now was that so bad?

Me: lol all I'm saying is that your day is coming

Her: lol aww tata kaPrincess

Loy: tata wam

Lwa: learn to share baby.

Loy: OK

The twins have this thing of saying OK when I speak to them in English and they don't understand what is being said to them. Later we had dinner, I bathed the boys while Lwa bathed Kaela then we put the kids to bed and we also went to our room. I took a quick shower while she took a bath. When she joined me in bed, she was wearing pyjamas so I turned on the floor heater then got on top of her and started kissing her while rubbing my hand on her queen over the PJs. She let out soft moans as the kiss got heated. I helped her out of her PJs then planted wet kisses from her neck all the way to her stomach

*

*

Lwa

I was starting to feel things I haven't felt in over a month. Truthfully speaking, I wanted him deep inside me at that very moment and he sure was taking his time. He slowly opened my legs then started blowing on to my queen. This sent shivers all over my body. I didn't know whether to push his head deeper in between my legs or to push it away. I clutched on to the sheets and moaned loudly

Me: please baby. I want you

He let out a soft chuckle and licked me, from the bottom to my clit then gently sucked on it. I felt myself getting hornier, wetter and hungrier with ever touch he gave me. He ate me out, licking and sucking all the right places. Even after I had my orgasm, he didn't stop. It was like he was enjoying this more than I was because he was moaning with me. After my third orgasm, he stopped then came up to me. His dick was rock hard and I started feeling bad but before I could do anything about it, he smashed his lips onto mine. I could still taste myself on him but I didn't break the kiss

Soso: I love you

Me: I love you more

He was dressed in just his briefs so I went under the covers, leaving a trail of kisses on his stomach

Him: where are you going?

Me: lol shhhh

I slowly took his briefs off and his junior sprung to action. I still don't understand how this thing fits in me sometimes. I sucked on his junior while playing with his balls

Him: ohh shiit baby

I gave it to him just how he likes it, slow at first then tight and fast towards the end. He came but I didn't swallow. I'm breastfeeding so I can't take chances. So, after spitting out his seeds, I brushed my teeth and went back to bed and we cuddled

Him: your head game is the shit babe. Damn I almost lost my soul there for a second

Me: lol you are just saying that

Him: never sthandwa sam. You really know your way around my dick

I hit him playfully. He was making me feel nasty and bitchy

Me: you are making me sound like such a freak

Him: but you are though. My sexy freak. A lady in the streets but a freak in the bedroom

He kissed my cheek and I just melted same time. The way I still have a crush on my boyfriend though. The butterflies are still there all the time

Him: how many more weeks before I can be allowed to make love to my wife?

Me: 8 weeks

Him: fuck that's a long time

Me: and you better not think of getting it elsewhere

Him: well unless Ciara offers. You'd have to understand nawe baby

Me: you are crazy.

Season 3

Insert 10

Lwa

Two days later, which was a Friday, I received a call just after I had waved goodbye to Soso and the twins. I didn't recognize the number but I answered anyway

Me: hello

The person on the other side of the line kept quiet but I could hear him/her breathing

Me: are you going to speak or not?

Voice: molo mama kaQhawe

My heart started racing because the voice sounded all too familiar but it can't be who I think it is, he wouldn't be that stupid.

Me: who who is this?

Atha: are you telling me you don't recognize my voice?

His voice was calm, he didn't sound angry or anything like that. I remained silent for a while. What does he want from me?

Him: Lwa are you still there? Please don't hang up on me. I just want us to talk

Me: I'm still here. What do you want to talk about?

Him: please come see me. I'm at my parents' house and I really want to see you

Me: Atha I can't. I have a family I need to focus on and Soso would kill the both of us if I come see you

Him: Lwa he doesn't have to know. I promise you, I won't take up too much of your time.

Me: and how am I supposed to trust you? How do I know that you won't hold me hostage there just to get to Soso?

Him: that life is behind me. I lost so much because I was bitter and because of the drugs. I just want to apologize to you in person. I owe you that much

I hadn't forgiven Atha for everything that he put me through, the kidnapping and trying to kill Soso. Everyone has told me to accept the apology I never received but its difficult when I'm still so angry at him so this could be my moment to find closure

Me: let me sleep on it. I'll get back to you

Mikaela started crying so I had to attend to her

Him: you have a baby?

Me: yeah. She is 1 month now

Him: what's her name?

Me: Alwandiswe Mikaela Yandisa Smith

Him: beautiful names. I'm sure she is as beautiful as her mother

I smiled to myself, actually it was more than just a smile. I was blushing but why though? I hate this guy

Me: I need to attend to her so I have to go

Him: alright. Please save my number and call me when you've made your decision

Me: OK

I hung up and went check on my baby. I fed her then bathed her and placed her in the lounge on her playmat then started cleaning. I seriously need to talk to Soso about getting a maid, this is tiring phela. By the time I was done, Kaela was asleep so I just left her there and went to take a bath. Ever since I gave birth, I'm not a fan of showers. I just enjoy sitting in the bubblebath and just relaxing. It was when I remembered that I didn't take the baby monitor that I decided to get out of the water. I wrapped my body in a towel and went downstairs to check on Kaela. My heart stopped for a second when I didn't see her on her playmat. I checked under the couches and nothing. I was now panicking, she is a month old so she can't crawl or walk so obviously someone took her. When I didn't find her in the nursery, I immediately called Soso

Soso: babe I'm in a meeting, I'll call you later

Me: Soso our baby

I was now in tears and breathing heavily

Him: Lwa calm down. What's wrong with our baby?

Me: she is missing Soso. I've looked everywhere and she isn't in the house

Him: baby you are not making sense. Just breath and tell me what's going on

I took in a deep breath and slowly exhaled. Trying my best to calm down

Me: I went to take a bath and when I came back down, she was gone

Just then Jason walked in through the sliding door which led to the pool area with Mikaela in his arms. I immediately hung up the phone and rushed to him

Me: oh, thank you God my baby is OK

Jay: of course, she is. She was crying when I walked in so I took her outside for a bit

Me: how did you even get in?

My phone rang and it was Soso calling back

Me: baby

Soso: you don't get to call me while I'm in a meeting telling me our daughter is missing and then you hang up on me

Me: I'm sorry babe but I found her. She was with Jason outside

I told him everything and then I let him get back to his meeting

Me: you scared me Jay. I thought someone took her

Jay: its OK, I just thought I should surprise you guys with a visit. I used my key to get in

Mikaela was already asleep so I put her in the nursery and Jay had followed me but I hadn't seen him so when I turned around, I bumped into him and my towel fell. So here I was standing butt naked in front of my man's brother and our bodies were basically centimeters apart. We stood like that for about 5 secs until I reached down to pick my towel up but he stopped me by smashing his lips on to mine. I quickly backed away, picked up my towel and literally ran to my bedroom and locked the door. Oh my gosh what have I done? I got dressed and just stayed in my room.

*

*

Soso

When my meeting ended, that was the time when I got time to process everything Lwa had told me. Why was Jason at my house without telling me? I understand that he is family and he has the key to the house but that is still my house and I need to know the people that come and go there. Anyway, I put it at the back of my mind for the time being and got back to work. Around lunch time, my secretary knocked on my door. I waved for her to come in and she did

Liz: sir, someone is here to see you, should I let them in?

Me: who is it?

Her: a Miss Ziyamthanda Phakathi

A smile crept on to my face as I packed my work away

Me: tell her to come in

Her: alright sir.

I got up and sat on the corner of my desk as Ziya walked in dressed in navy formal shorts with a white see through blouse and navy blazer with nude heels. She looked sexy and sophisticated

Me: Miss Phakathi. To what do I owe the pleasure

She sat down on the chair in front of my desk

Ziya: I thought I should bring you lunch since I haven't seen my friend in a while

Me: lol why thank you friend. I am actually hungry.

My office has a couch in it so we sat on the couch and had the lunch she had brought me. We were having a light conversation with a lot of jokes in between so I was laughing like crazy

Ziya: I have a small favor to ask

Me: hmm OK I'm listening

She got up, closed all the blinds in my office and locked the door

Me: Ziya what are you doing?

Her: nothing. Nothing at all

She then came and stood in front of me, between my legs to be exact and started stripping. By stripping, I don't mean just taking off her clothes but actually swaying her hips and bouncing her ass type of stripping

Me: Ziya please stop this. I'm married, I love my wife and I'm not going to sleep with you

Her: lol OK

She was now in just her red lacy thong, heels and bra. It took everything in me not to just take her and fuck her on the couch right there and then. She held out her hand to me, I gave her my hand and she smiled while she led me to my chair. She pushed my on to the chair as she sat on my desk with her legs on either side of the chair

Ziya: the thing about me is that I don't beg a man for dick, if you don't want me then so be it

Me: uh huh

I didn't even care about what she was saying, my eyes were focused on what was between her legs. I think she realized that I wasn't listening so she closed her legs and got off the desk, walked towards her bag, obviously shaking her ass all over the place. I hated my dick at that moment because I was hard as fuck. I tried adjusting my pants so my boner doesn't show but it was too late. She returned, placed a vibrator on my table then sat on me, facing the door. I didn't want to touch but somehow my hands landed on her thighs and she started twerking on me

Me: oh God Ziya please don't do this

Her: why are you punishing yourself Lwandiso? I can feel your rock-hard dick on my ass... you want this

Me: I can't do it. I won't do this

She went back to her original position but the panties were now gone. Gosh why does this always happen to me though? First it was Tumi and now its Ziya.

Her: are you sure you don't want any of this?

Her pussy was cleanly shaved and now glistening because she was wet. I tried moving my chair back so I can stop this but she had her heels hooked on it. Next thing she started fucking herself with the dildo while moaning. I'm not going to lie, looking at her in that position on my desk was sexy as fuck. While taking in that moment and fighting very hard not to be led to temptation, my phone rang. The landline. I placed my hand on Ziya's mouth to block out her moans then answered

Me: Smith hello

Liz: sir Lwa is here to see you

Me: Lwa? Which Lwa?

Her: Lwa Hadebe sir

Me: fuck. Liz please stall her for 5 mins max

Her: eish OK sir

I dropped the phone and pulled Ziya off my desk

Ziya: what are you doing? I was about to cum

Me: you need to get dressed, my wife is outside

Her: and then I'll go where?

Me: that door over there is the store room, stay in there until I tell you its safe and for your sake you better not make a single sound

While she took her stuff, I opened the blinds and the windows then sprayed some air freshener because my office smelled like sex. When everything looked like it was back to normal, I went out to Lwa.

Me: Lwa you can come through

She followed me to my office and we sat on the couch

Me: this is a surprise. Where is Mikaela?

Lwa: I left her with Yolanda, the staff wanted to see her

I leaned over for a kiss and she met me half way. I kissed her hungrily while grabbing her ass

Her: hmm someone missed me

If only she knew how badly I want to have sex right now. I continued kissing her then moved to her neck and that's when she let out a moan. She was wearing a long dress so I lifted it up and laid her on the couch then ripped her panties apart, unbuckled my belt and unzipped my pants

Her: Soso we can't. We have to wait

Me: I know baby but I need this

Her: i haven't healed completely

Me: ndizoyifaka kancinci sthandwa sam

I didn't wait for the reply as I slowly inserted myself in her but I didn't go all the way then started moving on top of her as she moaned. When her walls tightened around my dick, I couldn't take it anymore so I went all the way and started ramming in

Her: ouch baby that hurts

Me: I'm almost done baby

The images of Ziya with her glistening shaved pussy and a vibrator deep inside her crossed my mind and I came immediately

Me: I love you baby

I kissed her forehead and she pushed me off. She was angry with me

Her: you are so selfish Lwandiso. You know we shouldn't be having sex right now but you just don't care about anyone else except for yourself.

Me: I'm sorry baby. I really am

She got up and there were blood stains on the couch.

Dammit Lwandiso, what did you do? She pulled her dress down and just stood in front of me

Me: Lwa my love I'm sorry I hurt you. I didn't mean to. Please forgive me

Her: whatever Soso. I'm getting my baby and I'm leaving.

Me: baby please. Just wait a second. Can we talk?

I pulled her towards me and held her tightly. She was even crying and her tears were wetting my shirt

Me: I'm sorry. I promise from now on I'll wait until Mikaela is 3 months.

Her: its fine. I forgive you

I kissed her forehead then let her go and cleaned the couch. I sat on my chair while she sat on top of me

Me: I love you MaHadebe

Her: I love you too Smith

Me: and thank you for the visit but I want my princess now

I called Liz and she brought Mikaela in

Liz: he looks so much like Mr Smith. One could swear she is yours, sir

Me: lol she is mine

Lwa shot me a look. Our relationship is still on the downlow at work so she was shocked at what I said but Liz was even more shocked

Liz: I thought you were engaged Lwa...actually its none of my business

Me: lol I'm kidding Elizabeth, she isn't mine

Liz: oh, OK let me leave you guys.

She walked out and Lwa was still giving me the deadly stare

Me: what?

Her: what the hell was that?

I ignored her and started playing with Kaela. I had even forgotten that Ziya was in the store room until I heard something fall in there?

Lwa: what was that?

Me: uhm I don't know babe. Maybe it's rats or something

Her: oh OK. Well we have to get going. I still have to fetch the twins

Me: OK my love and when I get home I want to hear about why Jason was in my house without me being told

She immediately looked away. If I didn't know better, I'd swear she was feeling guilty about something

Me: what are you not telling me MaHadebe?

Her: nothing. Nothing baby. Let us leave you to work

Me: hmm OK

I kissed Kaela's forehead and then walked them out. When we got to the car, I hugged Lwa then kissed her cheek since we had an audience

Me: drive safely

I walked back into my office and found Ziya waiting for me by my desk. I took the panties I had ripped off Lwa, put it against my nose and just smiled to myself before putting it in the drawer

Ziya: you are an asshole Lwandiso

Me: haaibo ndenzeni ngoku?

Her: how could you fuck her while I'm in the storeroom? You gave her the erection I created

Me: haaibo ntombazane you are calling me an asshole for making love to my wife? Yho clearly the definition of asshole has changed

Her: nxaa fuck you

She took her bag and stormed out off my office. Some women are just crazy

Season 3

Insert 11

Lwa

What happened with Jason was starting to affect my relationship with Soso, especially because I couldn't bring myself to tell him what his brother and I did. Where would I even start in breaking those news to him? Would he believe that it was an accident, well I know it was an accident on my side, I don't know about Jay's. Two weeks later I received a call from Soso's mom asking me to bring her the kids. She was missing them and she wanted them to sleepover, it was a Friday anyway so Soso and I agreed. Around 1ish I freshened up, wore grey leggings, a long-sleeved T-shirt and a long coat with knee high boots. It was winter so it was cold. I packed a bag for the twins and a bag for Mikaela then went to pick the twins up from school. On our way to her house, I called Soso's mom

S's mom: hey Lwa

Me: hey ma, we are on our way

Her: OK sweetie, just call Jason to open up for you because I'm in town at the moment and I'll only be back later on

My heart immediately started racing, I haven't seen or spoken to Jay since the incident. After our kiss, I locked myself in my room until he left. He texted me saying he is leaving and that's the only time I came out of my room. He didn't even apologize for what he did

Me: is Mike there as well?

Her: no Mike is out of town with his father

Me: alright ma

My mood had immediately changed but I tried to keep my composure. When we got to the gate, I texted Jay to open for us and he did

Q: sobona ukhulu?

Me: yes baby. Uyanikhumbula

Loy: yakhumbula nam

I unbuckled them out of their car seats, unbuckled Kaela as well then walked into the house. The twins immediately ran to Jay when they saw him and I just put Mikaela on the couch and went back to get the bags, as I turned around after closing the boot, I bumped into Jay

Jay: why didn't you ask me to help?

Me: I can handle it, it's just bags

He stood in front of me without moving an inch and with his eyes locked on me. My heart was racing, in fact I was actually uncomfortable

Me: please move

Him: can we talk for a sec?

Me: no. My kids are alone in the house, I don't have time to chitchat with you out here

I went around him and took the bags upstairs then returned downstairs again to take Mikaela to the room that used to belong to Soso

Me: please listen out for her when she wakes up, I put her in Soso's room

Jay: OK. Are you leaving ngok?

Me: yes. I have to go home and make dinner for my husband

I made sure to emphasize the husband part. He stared at me for a while and just let out a soft chuckle

Him: you can't avoid this forever

Me: Qhawe! Loyiso! Hambani nodlala phandle

They knew better than to argue with me so they went to play in the backyard and I sat down. Its now or never

Me: you said you want to talk, khuluma ke

Him: I want to talk about our kiss. I know you felt the chemistry between us

Me: firstly, it wasn't our kiss, it was your kiss since you ambushed me and secondly, I felt nothing. I'm going to be married to your brother in a few months, please get your shit together before then or else I'm going to tell him what you did

Him: you wouldn't tell him. If you wanted to tell him, you would have done so by now. Lwa, I was there for you when your so called husband abandoned you while you were heavily pregnant. I was the one that was going with you to doctor's appointments, taking care of you and protecting you. It was all me not Soso and I know we got close during that time. I tried to stay away but you said you missed me

Me: I missed your company but that doesn't mean I have feelings for you. What do you take me for Jason?

Him: I'm not saying leave my brother for me but I want to get close to you as well.

Me: you make me sick bruh. You are really disgusting. Nxxaaa

I took my bag and walked out and went to my car and started the engine, he opened for me and I drove to my house. I played music from my phone, the first Chris Brown album and started cooking. I was singing along so loudly that I didnt hear Soso come in. I got such a fright when he held my waist from behind. I jumped up and screamed

Soso: lol relax babe, its just me

He kissed my cheek then sat on the counter

Me: why are you home so early?

It was just after 3 and Soso usually gets home after 5

Him: I figured you might be lonely since the kids aren't here. Whatever you are making smells nice by the way

Me: lol its dumplings and lamb stew

Him: can't wait. Let me go change then come keep you company

Me: OK baby

*

*

Soso

My wife is acting jumpy and my brother isn't taking any of my calls. I swear to God if anything happened between them, I'm going to kill someone. I changed into grey sweatpants and a blue sweater then took my phone and went back to the kitchen

Me: Lwandile

Lwa: Lwandiso

Me: remember the day you thought Mikaela was missing?

Her: ye-yes

Me: you said Jason had her right?

She nodded, she was keeping very little eye contact with me which got me worried

Me: why was Jason in my house without my knowledge?

Her: he said he wanted to surprise us

Me: oh OK. That's fine then

Lwa was basically shaking now and I knew something must have happened. I know my brother, back in high school he slept with Luminjalo but I forgave the both of them because I was crazy in love and I wasn't going to let a girl come between my brother and I. He gave me the whole bros before hoes speech and because I was still a kid back then, I bought it but I'm a grown man now so I won't fall for that crap. I decided to test the waters with Lwa since she wasn't going to tell me what happened

Me: so, when were you planning on telling me that you and Jason slept together?

She immediately dropped the spoon and turned my direction. She was in tears which immediately pissed me off

Her: i... we...I'm sorry Soso

Me: what the fuck Lwa? So, you did sleep with him?

Her: no baby. I didn't. My towel fell and he kissed me but that's where it ended. I promise Soso, I'd never do that to you

Me: towel? what towel?

I felt my face burning, my veins were out and I was pissed off

Her: I had gotten out the bath, I thought I was alone and after I had put Mikaela down, I bumped into him and my towel fell. I was going to tell you Soso

Me: but you didn't. You fucken didn't tell me. Is this why you were missing him? Were you guys sleeping together while I was in East London? You better not lie to Lwandile because I will fuck you up right now. You and that asshole boyfriend of yours

She was crying her lungs out now and honestly, I didn't care, she should have told me this the day it happened not two weeks later

Me: stop crying dammit and give me a fucken answer. Now

My voice was raised and I was shouting at her and she still didn't answer me. I jumped off the counter, grabbed her by her shoulders and started shaking her

Me: answer me. Did you fuck my brother? Huh? Did you?

Her: you are hurting me Soso. Please stop

I smashed my lips onto hers and at first, she didn't respond but I parted her lips with my tongue and she kissed me back. I ripped her tshirt, followed by her bra, squeezed her boobs

Her: Soso stop. Please

Me: you are mine. Do you hear me? Only mine

I moved her against the wall, put her hands against the wall above her head and held them down with my one hand then started kissing her neck, more like biting it and leaving love bites. She was moaning now but still crying so I wiped her tears, smashed her lips again

Me: mine

Tears were streaming down my eyes, images of Jason having his way with her crossed my mind and as much as I tried not to get angry, I couldn't stop myself. I ripped her legging and panties, lifted her one leg around my waist as I took my sweatpants off and rammed into her. No foreplay at all

Lwa: aaah Soso

Her voice sounded like it was miles away. I fucked her hard against the wall, she was moaning and screaming from the pleasure and the pain. She was now healed but I'm a gifted man and when I ram in hard, there is no way you can't feel it. I pulled her hair and buried myself in her neck

Me: You. Are. Mine. Only. Mine

With that I came and then pulled out of her. She dropped to the floor as I pulled my sweatpants up then grabbed my car keys. She sat against the wall and the moment she saw me leaving, she started screaming and crying out loud but I didn't stop. I drove to my parents' house, I still had my remote so I drove in and walked in. My mom was in the lounge with my kids and Judas was in the kitchen.

Mom: Soso? What are you doing here?

I walked right into the kitchen and punched him. He stumbled around but didn't fall so I punched him again

Mom: Lwandiso what's gotten into you?

I was punching Jason and the idiot wasn't fighting back. He just let me beat him up which annoyed me

Me: fight like a man, you asshole. You think you can put your filthy hands on my wife and get away with it? Fight me like a man

Mom managed to pull me off him and his face was swollen and bleeding but I didn't give a fuck. He deserved it

Mom: what have you done? Call an ambulance

Me: what have I done? Mna? Ask your son what he did. He kissed my wife.

Mom: Jason please tell me you didn't

Jay: I love her mom

Hearing that just triggered my rage all over again and I kicked him on his face and he passed out. Loyiso and Qhawe were now crying in the lounge and so was Mikaela

Me: bros over hoes yamasimba nxaa

I spat on his face and walked out. My hands and my clothes had bloodstains on them so I drove back to my house. That will teach him to ever mess with what belongs to me. I got home, walked into my bedroom and found Lwa packing, I walked passed her to go to the bathroom where I washed my hands then got out of the dirty clothes. She wasn't crying anymore but she was pissed off

Me: uyaphi na Lwandile?

Her phone rang before she could give me an answer

Lwa: ma...he did what...oh my gosh is he OK...alright ma I'm coming

She looked at me with so much pain in her eyes

Me: ndithetha nawe fondin

Her: ngiyahamba. Ngiyekhaya Soso. I didn't sign up for this. You are a maniac.

Me: you are not going anywhere

Season 3

Insert 12

Lwa

I was pissed beyond words, I hate it it when Soso takes out his anger on me with sex. Its frustrating and demeaning nje and I was really determined on going home, clearly, we needed some time apart

Me: I wasn't asking you, I was telling you

Soso: I don't care but you are not going anywhere. We are married so this house is your home

Me: we are not married, you paid lobola but asishadile mina nawe

Him: in the eyes of the ancestors we are married

He took out navy sweatpants and a long-sleeved T-shirt and got dressed. I still can't believe he beat his brother up to a point of him getting hospitalized and being unconscious. How do you beat someone that badly over a kiss? Yes, he was wrong but he doesn't deserve this

Me: I'm fetching my kids from the hospital but when I get back, I'm leaving

Him: Lwandile ndithe awuyindawo.

I took my car keys and drove to the hospital where I found his mom with my kids, who were also so emotional which confused me. I know Soso is crazy when he is angry but he would never fight in front of the boys. They are only 2yrs old for goodness sake

Me: sawubona ma

S's mom: molo Lwandile

Loy: thatha mama

I sat down then put Loy on my lap while his brother had his head on his grandmother's lap and Mikaela was in her car seat on the floor fast asleep. She was my main concern because she is too young and she might get sick from being here

Me: how is he?

S's mom: they haven't given me any feedback, last time I saw him, he was unconscious with his face covered in blood and both his eyes swollen shut

Me: oh my...how could Soso do that to his own brother?

Her: Jason is my son and I love him with all my heart but he asked for it. He had no right to kiss you and he made it worse by telling Lwandiso that he is in love with you

Did she just say Jason is in love with me? That's impossible and it doesn't make sense. Jason can't be in love with me. I refuse to believe that

Me: ma I have to get Yandisa and the twins out of here. Please call me if anything changes

Her: I will dear. Please don't be angry with Lwandiso, he means well

I nodded, got up, hugged her then took my kids home. They were quiet throughout the journey which really worried. When we got home, Soso was watching TV so I put Kaela's car seat in front of him and took my boys upstairs to bath them. While they were in the bathtub, Soso stood by the door and they immediately got scared.

Me: Lwandiso what did you do to my kids?

Soso: nothing. Mikaela's crying so please attend to her. I'll finish bathing the boys

When I got up, Qhawe pulled my hand

Q: nahambi mama

Me: uzongeza utata boy

Loy: hayi mama nfuna wena

My sons were now really scared of Soso and I wasn't going to leave them with a man they feared

Me: please warm up the milk that's in the fridge then pour it in one of her bottles and feed her. I'll be there now now. Also check her diaper first

Soso: so much admin, you could just go and I finish up here

Me: they are scared of you Lwandiso. Can't you see that? Just get out of here and attend to the one person in this house who still looks at you the same

He looked at me with sadness in his eyes and I immediately turned to finish bathing the twins

Me: uyanthanda utata niyezwa?

Loy: yamoyika utata mna. Yabethana

Me: ubethe bani?

Q: uncle. Igazi mama

Me: ngeke anibethe nina. Uyanthanda and ningamoyiki. He wouldn't hurt you. Ok?

Them: ok mama.

Me: uzonthambisa. Ngiyogeza uYaya mina

Them: ok

I dried them and took them to their room and left them there then went downstairs. Soso had just finished changing Kaela

Me: I'll take over. The boys need to be moisturized and dressed warmly so please go do it

Him: are they not scared of me now?

Me: I spoke to them. Kodwa nawe what were you thinking? Gosh Soso you are so irresponsible sometimes

Him: I wasn't thinking at the time

Me: just go upstairs before my sons get pneumonia

He walked out the nursery then I took Kaela to the kitchen and got her milk then fed her. The boys and Soso made up quicker than I thought they would kodwa ke my boys are easily forgiving. They sat in the lounge together watching cartoons while I bathed Mikaela then I dished up for us and we ate as a family. I was still angry and very adamant about leaving.

Soso: I'll wash the dishes. You put the kids to bed and then we can talk

Me: alright

I took the boys to bed, tucked them in and kissed their little faces

Me: I love you boys

Them: avu mama

I left their room, put sleeping Kaela in her cot then went upstairs with the baby monitor. I took a quick shower then threw myself on the bed and Soso joined me a while later

Soso: please don't leave. I'll do whatever you want me to do, just don't leave me babe. I'm begging you

Me: do you even still recognize the person you've become? Lwandiso I'm not your punching bag mina

He had a confused look on his face

Him: andisoze ndakubeka isandla mna Lwandile. I was raised better than that

Me: so, you beat me up with sex? Is that how you were taught?

He remained silent for a while and then took my hands into his

Him: I'm sorry Lwa. Its just that I love you so much that I never want to imagine another man doing anything to you. Jason is an asshole and he got exactly what he deserved but I shouldn't have shouted at you. I'm sorry MaHadebe. Ndicela uxolo nyan sthandwa sam.

Me: I think we need some time apart. I'm scared to be around you Lwandiso and unfortunately, I'm not Qhawe's age so I won't forget easily. I thought you were going to hurt me today and I don't want to live my life in fear. I love you and I want to be happy and not scared

Him: I'll make you happy baby. I promise. I'd never hurt you Lwandile, I promise you. I swear on my parents' graves. Please baby just give me another chance. I won't let you down again

I took in a deep breath and slowly exhaled. I love this guy with everything in me, I could never leave him without hurting myself in the process but when will enough be

enough? We are always fighting and there is never peace in our home. Just screams and shouting and that's not what I want to build my home and family on.

Me: asilale Soso

Him: do you still want to leave?

Me: I'll decide in the morning

He nodded then we got in bed, he pulled me close to him and tightly wrapped his arms around me. It was like he was afraid that I might sneak out in the middle of the night

*

*

Soso

I couldn't sleep a wink. I stayed up the whole night, just holding Lwa tightly. I had really messed up this time and I have to work my ass off to regain her trust and for her to feel happy and safe around me again. When the sun came up, I gently got out of bed, trying my best not to wake her up, took a shower then went downstairs. I made breakfast for her and the boys, put hers on a tray then went out into the garden to find a flower. It was in the middle of winter so it was difficult but I managed to find one pink rose. I put the rose on the tray then went back upstairs. I placed the tray on the side table then softly pecked her lips. She slowly opened her eyes

Me: morning my angel

Lwa: morning Soso

Me: sit up. I made breakfast

Her: I have to check on Kaela first.

Me: I'll handle it. Just eat

I placed the tray on her lap, pecked her lips again then went to check on Kaela who was wide awake but not crying

Me: morning princess

She smiled when she saw me. I changed her diaper then took her upstairs with the breast pump and bottle

Me: say good morning mommy

Lwa: did you change her?

Me: yeah, I did but I think she is hungry so I brought the pump but finish eating first.

She ate while my princess and I played on the bed. Our other kids walked in as well since the door wasn't closed. They got on the bed and started playing with Yaya

Me: look at them baby. They are happy here with the both of us. Please don't take this away from me. I love my kids Lwandile

Lwa: ok fine. I won't go.

Me: enkosi sthandwa sam. I love you

I kissed her cheek before she took Mikaela to give her milk then my boys and I went downstairs to have our breakfast. I bathed them and dressed them warmly. After Lwa and Mikaela had bathed, we all sat in the movie room under blankets watching movies all day. My kids were happy and so was Lwa which made me happy as well. In the evening, my mom called

Me: ma

Mom: Lwandiso

Me: unjani mama?

Her: are you planning on coming to see your brother at the hospital anytime soon?

Me: no, I'm not.

Her: Lwandiso please mntanam. Xola kalok nyana wam

Me: andizokwazi mama. I will come see him after he gets discharged

Her: ok fine

I hung up and threw my phone on the seat in front of me. Lwa, who had her head on my chest, lifted her head to look at me

Lwa: are you ok?

Me: I'll be fine. Give me a kiss

She looked up and we shared a slow kiss which I soon broke

Me: lol uzovusa izinto ezilele makaYaya

Her: lol you are so easy

Me: only to you baby.

Her: we need to get a maid Soso

Me: haa baby ufuna i3sum?

She hit my chest playfully and gave me an unimpressed look

Her: no. To clean the house. I can't do it while I still have to watch Mikaela

Me: ok baby. Whatever you want sthandwa sam. As long as you are happy

I kissed her forehead then squeezed her

Her: anything I want? Can I get a car?

Me: lol you are now pushing it MaHadebe

She let out a chuckle and we focused on the movie. The twins were fast asleep on the couch and so was their sister. After a few hours we ordered pizza then I received a text from Ntando wanting us to go out and I really wanted to go out namajita since I haven't done it in a while

Lwa: what's wrong?

Me: nothing babe.

She took my phone and read the text kaNtando

Her: do you want to go out?

Me: nah I want to stay here with you guys

Her: liar. You can go out with your friends, babe, I don't mind

Me: are you sure?

Her: yeah just don't be out the whole night. I still need help with Mikaela

Me: enkosi my love. I'll be back by midnight.

I kissed her cheek then went to freshen up. Ntando texted me where we would be meeting up so I wore a jacket, kissed my wife and kids and left

Season 3

Insert 13

Lwa

3 MONTHS LATER

Mikaela had just turned 4months and I was ready to get back to work. The past three months have been hectic for me, between meeting up with the wedding planner, nanny interviews and gym, I've been busy. The nanny I found was about 20years older than me, well Phiwe advised me to get an older lady because these young ones tend to focus more on our men than the job they are hired to do. I woke up bright and early since I was going to start at the gym before going to work. I've been working hard to get my body back and my personal trainer says I'm doing well. After gym, I showered then got ready for work. As I was getting dressed, I felt a soft kiss on my neck and hands on my waist. I blushed before turning around to lock eyes on the love of my life. His beautiful pink lips curved into a smile the moment our eyes locked

Soso: hey

Me: hey

He planted a kiss on my cheek before planting a soft peck on my lips

Him: breakfast is ready

Me: you made breakfast?

Him: yeah, you deserve a break every now and then. I pulled him closer and rested my head on his chest as he wrapped his arms around me. Lord only knows how lucky I am to have this perfectly imperfect man in my life. I took in his scent before I got out of his embrace

Me: we are going to be late for work Mr Smith

Him: luckily for you Mrs Smith, you are married to the boss

I hit him playfully as we made our way downstairs where the twins were having breakfast while MaRose was feeding Kaela. I kissed my little princes before sitting down

MaRose: morning madam

Me: please call me Lwa ma and call Lwandiso by his name too. You are old enough to be our mother, it isn't right to call us sir and madam

She flashed me a smile then nodded as I started on my breakfast. My phone rang and it was Mike, Soso was the first one to look at it before I answered. We haven't spoken to or about Jason since Soso beat him up. He was still cool with the rest of his family and I guess they all understand why he did what he did. Anyway, I answered the call as the boys and I headed to the car

Me: Michael Smith

Mike: Lwandile Smith

Me: unjani?

Him: I'm good man. Jonga neh, mom wants you guys to come over for dinner tomorrow night. She wants to talk wedding stuff and she called Soso and he refused so ndicela uthethe nendoda yakho please

I took in a deep breath and slowly exhaled. I don't like these situations because they end up causing friction between my man and I

Me: yho Mike angithembisi lutho but ngizozama and because I'm willing to try, please fetch your nephews from school today. I have an appointment with the wedding planner

Him: lol uyand-user fondin but its fine, ndizowubalanda

Me: thanks, a mill

We hung up as I buckled the boys then went back in the house. I kissed my daughter and she just giggled while drooling all over the place

Me: Baby I'm leaving neh. I'll see you at the office

Soso: OK babe. I'm right behind you nami

MaRose: why ningahambi ngemoto eyi one?

Me: ngisazobeka abantwana ecreche kqala. Bye bye Nana kamama

I kissed Kaela again then walked out. I have such deep separation issues with her that I didn't have with the twins. Maybe its because I spent more time at home with the twins than I did with her. She reminds me so much of my niece, Alwande because she is a daddy's girl. I actually miss my family sometimes, especially my brothers since I haven't seen them this year. Anyway, I dropped the twins off then drove to the office and got to work. I was working under Yolanda which wasn't that easy now that news has gotten out that Soso and I are getting married. She makes me work extra hard and for long hours and I don't complain because I don't want her thinking I take advantage because I'm getting married to the CEO.

Yoli: Lwandile we have a new financial advisor joining us. She is filling in Smanga's position so I'm going to need you to do a coffee run.

Me: yes ma'am. Any special requests?

Her: cappuccino and espresso please. Strictly from Mugg and Bean

This lady is going to be the death of me. We have perfectly working state of the arts coffee making machines in our office but I must now drive to Mugg and Bean with my petrol for her and her so called new friend

Me: OK ma'am I'll get to it straight away

Her: good and I hope you finished the portfolios I gave you this morning. I don't care that you are sleeping with the boss, I'm still your supervisor and I expect you to do your job efficiently at all times.

Me: yes ma'am

Her: yes what? Yho Bawo sisbhanxa somntana lo.

Me: the portfolio is done.

I took my car keys and walked out of the office. I could feel the tears in my eyes but I quickly wiped them off as I got to my car. I drove to get the coffees and immediately drove back to the office. I think I took about 15mins but the moment I walked in, she was getting ready to shout at me.

Her: so, you decided to take all day? Did they ask you to boil the water yourself? Bring those coffees to the boardroom and stop staring at me.

I didn't even bother responding to her, I just followed her to the boardroom where this new financial advisor and Lwandiso were seated. She had her back to me so I couldn't see her face. I placed the coffees on the table

Me: morning Mr Smith, morning ma'am

She turned around and I almost laughed when I realized who the new financial advisor was. She flashed me a smile before she got up to hug me

Pali: you are so formal mati, you are busy with good mornings here

Yolanda shot me a death stare but I didn't care. I hadn't seen my friend all year so nje she can chill a bit

Yoli: thank you intern. You can leave us now

Pali: we will catch up at lunch time

I smiled then walked out. The boardroom was next to Soso's office which was next to the front desk so I stopped there and spoke to Liz

Liz: you look horrible. What's wrong?

Me: Yolanda aka Cruella Deville is what's wrong. That woman is driving me crazy

Her: lol why don't you just report her?

Me: that's would please her so that she can tell the whole world that I'm sleeping with the boss

Liz: bitch please, the whole world already knows. Yolanda should just get over it. You and Mr S are a great couple and I'm still mad at you for not telling me. I thought we were friends

Me: lol Liz come on, I've been apologizing since I got back. I'll take you out to lunch today.

Her: lol good boss lady. Now go back to work before Cruella comes out that meeting

I smiled then went back to work. I can't believe Pali is going to be working here as well, I wonder where she is staying and why Soso didn't tell me about it. After 30 mins Yolanda walked into her office and sat at her desk. Next thing the phone in my office rang

Me: ASPE hello, Lwandile speaking

Yoli: my office. Now

She sounded irritated but I kept calm then went to her office. I knocked and she said I must come in and I sat down and she got up and started walking around the office. Obviously freaking me out

Her: how did you get this job Lwandile?

Me: excuse me?

Her: how did you get this job?

Me: I applied for it

Her: hmmm and who called you and told you about the interview? Did you even get called or were you told in bed on a Sunday morning after a quickie with the boss?

Me: with all due respect Miss Ntabeni, if you don't stop harassing me, I will report you to HR. I don't know what your issue is with me but if you don't want to work as my supervisor then I'll be glad to ask for a transfer to another supervisor

She started clapping her hands and laughing sarcastically

Her: why go to HR when you can just go straight to the boss? Why act professional when we both know that nothing about you being here is professional.

Me: are we done here? I have work to do

She waved her hands as a way of dismissing me and I walked out of her office. I was pissed off and to make matters worse, I walked straight into Soso as I left Yolanda's office. He was about to walk in but stopped when he saw my face

Soso: hey hey are you OK?

Me: not now Soso. Please

I walked to the bathroom, washed my face and did a few touch ups before heading back to my desk. I started thinking that maybe Yolanda isn't the only one who thinks the way she does. I'm sure more females in the office think I slept my way into this internship. I played with my engagement ring, just twisting it around my finger over

and over again. I was basically day dreaming until Soso sat on my desk. He looked at me before he summoned me into his office

Me: no Lwandiso, OK. I can handle this by myself. You are making matters worse

Soso: Miss Hadebe I am your boss and I want you in my office right now. He wasn't smiling but he was authoritative. He was on boss mode so I followed him but when I walked in, I didn't close the door

Him: close my door Miss Hadebe and take a seat

I did as my boss had said and sat in front of him then a few minutes later, Yolanda walked in and sat next to me

Soso: ladies I don't have all day so one of you better start talking and tell me what's going on here or else I will have no choice but to suspend the both of you

Me: nothing is going on

Soso: Miss Hadebe, I'm not blind nor am I stupid so please don't insult my intelligence

Yoli: why call her Miss Hadebe? Just say baby or sweetheart. We all know about you guys sleeping together

Soso immediately looked at me then at Yolanda then back at me

Soso: oh, I see what's going on here. Miss Hadebe please excuse us

I nodded then headed for the door

*

*

Soso

I sat down on my chair and stared at Yolanda. Has she lost her mind? I felt like slapping her but I don't want to lose my job and I don't want to go to jail for assault but if her and Lwa continue working together, I will be forced to put my hands on her because clearly, she has no respect for me or for her fellow colleagues

Me: Miss Ntabeni please report to HR to collect your first written warning. I will not tolerate this kind of behavior in this office. If you have issues with the intern assigned to you, swap with someone else. Do we understand each other?

Season 3

Insert 14

Soso

She looked at me with blank eyes as if she wanted to say something but she couldn't find the words to say so I made it easier for her

Me: and if you don't want me to send you back to Jo'burg, you will apologize to Miss Hadebe in writing and I hope I never have to have this conversation with you again. Miss Hadebe didn't sleep her way into this internship, she applied and she was interviewed just like everyone else. I played no part in her being here and as much as I don't owe you an explanation, clearly you feel like you are important enough to know what happens in the lives of your colleagues

Yoli: Lwand-

Me: its Mr Smith to you Miss Ntabeni and you can now get back to work

She nodded and walked out of my office then I called Liz and asked her to announce a staff meeting after lunch time. I want to set the record straight with my staff so that I don't have a repeat of what I just went through with Yolanda and I know its going to come across as if I'm trying to protect Lwa or something but even if it were other staff members, I'd still do the same. Anyway, when lunch time came, I drove to my mom's house, Jason had moved out to his house since he wasn't renting it out this year so when I parked outside, I walked in with ease. I found my parents in the lounge and I sat down. I haven't been here since I fought with Jason and even after he was discharged, I didn't come see him. As far as I'm concerned him and I are done. I don't owe him anything and its for the best that we stay away from each other

Me: molweni

Them: molo nyana

Mom: to what do we owe the pleasure? I even forgot how your face looks since you haven't been here in 3 months.

Me: uxolo mama I've been busy. Niphilile?

Dad: siyacenga nyana akukhonto. Unjani umntana nomakoti?

Me: baphilile. Uyaphangela ngoku uLwa so kukhona unanny

Mom: unanny otheni ndikhona?

Me: we also needed someone to clean the house so it was beneficial to get a maid/nanny.

Mom: I see. How are the wedding preparations coming along?

Me: you'd have to ask Lwa. I just show up for fittings and payments.

Dad: that's how it should be kalok zinto zabafazi ezo

Mom: nonsense. You are coming to dinner, tomorrow right?

Me: yho andaz mama. Ndizakuxelela later emva kokuba sendithethile noLwa

Mom: hmmm I will call

She dished up for me and we ate over a light conversation. I appreciated that they didn't bring up Jason

*

*

Lwa

As promised, I took Liz out for lunch and Pali joined us. We had lunch at Fishaways and luckily Liz and Pali got along just fine

Liz: so, I have question, how long have you and Mr S been together?

Me: hmmm I think this is our second year. Yes, our second anniversary is next month

Pali: and you guys are getting married next month?

Me: yep on our anniversary

Liz: wow where can I find myself a Mr S though and he is so hot. Doesn't he have a brother?

Pali: he does and he is all mine

Liz gave us puzzled looks and Pali and I just laughed. There is a lot poor Liz doesn't know shame but ke Pali and I go way back so she would have to understand. After our lunch, we still had time before having to go back to the office so we did a bit of window shopping

Liz: girls let's go out on Friday. A ladies' night type of thing.

Me: I'm down for that, I don't remember the last time I had a night out or even a night away from the kids.

Pali: you asked to be a mom so now look at you. 22 and almost a wife and you have 3 kids. I could never

Me: lol wait until Mike wants kids then you will know my joy. I love my babies. No doubt

When our lunch break was over, we went back to the office. Luckily for me, Yolanda wasn't on my case any more. I did all my work then submitted it to her via email. I didn't even want to see her but because I have to work with her, I still have to communicate with her. When the clock struck 4pm, it was time to go home but knowing Soso, he will be working late so as everyone was leaving, Pali and Soso were still in their offices. I started at Soso's office. I knocked and he waved for me to come in since he was on the phone. I waited for the call to be over

Soso: hey babe

Me: Mr Smith we are still in the office

We both smiled as he called me over to come sit on his lap.

Him: office hours are over.

He planted a kiss on my neck before I rested my head on his shoulder then we sat in silence while he rubbed my back. For that moment I just wanted to be in his arms, nothing was wrong but I wanted to inhale his scent then have his arms around me

Him: are you OK?

Me: yes, I am. Just tired

Him: its been a long day and for me its not even over

Me: need me to keep you company?

Him: lol and who will take care of our kids?

Me: ukhona uMaRose nje baby

Him: haayi Lwa uMaRose is not their mother, you are. I appreciate what you are trying to do but our kids come first

Me: yeah, I know. I was just messing with you. I have to see the wedding planner now anyway

Him: OK ke MaHadebe wam. Ndyakthanda evha

I nodded before planting a kiss on his soft lips then I got up getting ready to leave

Him: I'll see you when I get home

Me: don't be too late, I have a surprise for you.

I blew him a kiss and he chuckled softly as I walked out of his office straight into Pali's

Me: shall we?

Pali: you sure took your time.

Me: lol I was just saying goodbye to hubby

We left the office and drove to wedding parlor where my planner and designer was. We walked into her office, her secretary offered us drinks and we got down to business

Lauryn: So Lwa, one more month then its wedding time. I hope you are still excited and won't get cold feet because I'd never want my hard work to go to waste

Pali: I doubt that will happen, those two have been wanting to get married since I met them

Lauryn: one could never be too sure when it comes to these young brides

She showed us her layout for option A and B. We had a back up plan just in case the weather doesn't co-operate on the day of the wedding since I want a beach wedding.

I didn't want to have the traditional in a church type of wedding, not that I had anything against church but I just wanted something different.

Lauryn: do you still want to have the reception at your house?

Me: yes. The backyard to be exact

Lauryn: I'll have to come see this backyard sometime next week so I can see how I will work around it. That's all for today unless you want to add something else

Me: I still want to keep the original white and silver we spoke about but I don't know if you can add a touch of sky blue here and there but not too much

Lauryn: OK I see where you are going with this and I'm sure I can make it work. I will have something for you to look at when we meet again in two weeks

Me: thank you so much Lauryn. You are heaven sent

From Lauren's office, we made our way to Talent's boutique which was also in the same building. Talent was my designer and only reason I was seeing him today is so that Pali can have her fittings done. I'm having 4 bride's maids and a maid of honor and Soso has 4 groom's men and his bestman. He had to replace Jason with his cousin since they are still not talking and I doubt Jay will be at the wedding.

Talent: Lwa darling baby, how are you?

We shared a hug with him kissing my cheeks as well. He did the same with Pali

Me: I'm good my love and I'm glad you could fit me in at last minute but this lady over here is one of my bride's maids so she needs to get her fittings

Talent: no problem my sugarplum. I'm always available for you.

He took out the sky blue and silver cocktail dress for Pali to try on and luckily it wasn't too big. Just a few adjustments here and there

Pali: I love how these dresses are so modern and that each dress has a different design

Me: all my bride's maids are different and unique so the dresses had to be as well

Pali: Sedi is going to love that boobtube one. It just screams her name

Me: lol and that's the one I chose for her

Talent: when is the rest of your entourage coming for fittings?

Me: mid month lovey. I'll make sure of it

Talent: good. I can't wait to see you in that beautiful gown I'm making you. You are going to love it baby

Me: lol knowing your amazing work, I'm sure I will. My love we have to get going but I will be in touch

Talent: anytime my fruit punch. Bluetooth kisses

We did the whole air kisses thing then we left

Pali: lol I like him. He is so vibey

Me: lol show me a gay person that isn't vibey. Anyway, where to?

Her: please drop me off at the Smith's. I'm staying there for now since I only got to town yesterday and Mrs Smith refused for me to stay in a hotel

Me: lol that woman is an angel from above I tell you. She is just amazing

The rest of the drive was just us catching up. I haven't seen this person since graduation in April and that was 4 months ago. We arrived at the Smith's and I could hear my sons making a noise before we even entered the house.

Me: molweni ekhaya

Soso's mom was watching the food channel while his dad was reading the newspaper and Mike was playing with the twins

S's mom: my two daughters. Ninjani?

Pali: exhausted ma

Pali was still shy around Mike's parents which was understandable shame since she only met them once

S's mom: how was your first day at work?

Mike: I hope Soso didn't over work you

Pali: it was good actually. It can only get better I hope

Me: ma, next week we have to do the fittings for your mother of the groom dress. I think my mom will be here as well for her fittings

S's mom: no problem sweetie as long as your designer will come here. Us Smiths don't go to people, people come to us

We all broke into laughter. This woman was everything and more. This is why I love being in her home, its always filled with laughter and love. The kind of home I aspire to have after all the dust in my life has settled. When it started getting dark, the boys and I had to leave because it was cold as well.

Me: boys masambeni

Q: hamba nokhulu andithi mama?

Me: uyaphi ukhulu manje?

Loy: hamba nathi

Me: nizobuye nibuye nizobona ukhulu. Asambe

Loy: yasala mina

Me: uqalile

Season 3

Insert 15

Lwa

After the whole family had to convince Loyiso that we had to leave, he agreed. I even had to use Mikaela and told him that his baby sister was missing him and if he doesn't go home, she will cry the whole night and if there is anyone who knows of Mikaela's cries, it's Loyiso. I buckled them up in their car seats and drove home. Luckily when I got home, it was still around 7pm so I still had time to cook. I took off my heels and work clothes then changed into sweatpants and bae's hoodie. MaRose was in the nursery bathing Mikaela. I stood at the door, just watching them

MaRose: awukhathele kodwa sisi?

Me: ngikhathele ngiyafa ma but ke mele ngiphekele umyeni wam nabantwana bami

Her: yebo ntombi

Me: uyivulile iheater?

Her: yebo. Kuyabanda impela ngalezizikhathi

I smiled before heading to the kitchen to start with the cooking. I wasn't up for being in the kitchen for hours so I just grilled pork and sausage, made creamy mashed potatoes, steamed vegetables with cheese sauce then made tomato gravy. By half past 8 I was done so I dished up for everyone and left my husband's food in the warmer. After we ate, I put the dishes in the dish washer then went to put the boys in bed since MaRose bathed them while I was cooking.

Loy: cela istory mama

Me: nginfundele istory?

Them: yes please

I took one of their story books from the shelf and started reading it for them. By the time I got to page 7, they were fast asleep. I kissed their little faces then went to take a shower. When I got out, I was greeted by the handsome face of my bae and he was holding our daughter

Me: you woke her up?

Soso: hell no. MaRose would kill me. She was still awake when I arrived which is a good thing since I haven't seen her in a while

Me: lol you see her every morning

Him: OK let me say I haven't put her to bed in a while.

Me: that's better. Hungry?

Him: starving

I moisturized my body then wore a gown and slippers so I can go get his food. I took the plate out the warmer, placed it on the tray with a wet cloth on the saucer and a glass of orange juice. When I passed the lounge, MaRose was still watching Zee world.

Me: goodnight ma. ULwandiso uzomlalisa uMikaela then he will bring you the baby monitor

MaRose: OK sisi. Goodnight

I smiled as I walked upstairs. Lwandiso and Yandisa were still playing on the bed so I gave Soso his food then took Yaya into my arms so daddy can eat

Me: awulelengani princess? Hmmm

She was just giggling all over the place. That's her favorite thing to do. Giggling and drooling. I took a piece of sausage from Soso's plate and he just looked at me and shook his head

Me: lol sharing is caring

Soso: not when it comes to my meat woman

Me: Lol I share my meat with you all the time

Him: lol no you don't. You can't finish your food then you give it to me

Me: same thing baby. Jonga neh sthandwa sam

Him: ndiyaz xa uthetha isiXhosa nami, I'm about to be asked for impossible favors or I have to pay for something really expensive

Me: lol you know your wife too well Mr Smith. I was thinking its about time we got Mikaela's ears pierced. She looks like a boy since she barely has hair

Him: no, she doesn't. She is beautiful. Next thing you are going to want to put a weave on my baby's hair

Me: you need hair to have a weave and your baby doesn't have hair

Mikaela has more colored genes than she has black genes so manje the hair on her head isn't as much as the hair the twins had but thankfully someone invented those headbands with the flowers. She never goes anywhere without one

Him: fine but I will take her not you

Me: on Saturday since I'll be out of town with the boys

Him: out of town? Where to?

Me: I'm just going home for the day. I miss my brothers

Him: oh, go put my baby to sleep since she is already asleep. I need to shower

He kissed sleeping Mikaela before I took her to the nursery then took the monitor to MaRose. I switched off all the lights, checked if the alarm is on and then went back to our room. I took off the gown then got in bed in my birthday suit. I checked my Facebook news feed and came across a picture of KK and Asemahle all lovey dovey. They look so cute together and I must say my little brother has grown but I just pray that he doesn't get that poor girl pregnant because Landile will kill him. A few minutes later, Soso walked out of the bathroom with just a towel around his waist

Soso: are you sleeping already?

Me: nah. I'm waiting for you

I put my phone on the table then turned my attention to the gorgeous man who just slipped into bed next to me. He pulled me towards him and made me rest my head on his chest while he held me tightly

Him: so, babe have you decided on where you want to go for our honeymoon?

Me: uhm how about Cape Town?

Him: you want to keep it local?

Me: yeah why not? We are already spending so much on the wedding anyway

Him: lol you mean I'm already spending so much. Money isn't an issue my love. I want us to go anywhere you want to go

Me: hmm OK then let's go to Miami

Him: Miami it is then sthandwa sam.

He kissed the tip of my nose while his hand traveled down to the space between my legs. My breathing increased with every touch. He slowly parted my legs before just running his fingers up and down my queen

*

*

Soso

I've been horny since the moment Lwa left the office, if I wasn't so busy with work, I would have made love to her in my office. Every time I ran my fingers up and down her pussy, her breathing quickened. She wanted me as much as I wanted her which made sense since we haven't had sex in a while. Work has taken over my life. I started planting kisses on her neck then inserted a finger in her pussy, she was dripping wet. I moved my finger in and out while leaving wet kisses on her neck

Lwa: Lwandiso baby please

She was breathing heavily with every word she uttered

Me: yintoni baby?

Before she could respond, I insert a second finger then used my thumb to press on her clit. She was now grinding on my fingers as if her life depended on it. I got on top of her then started sucking and biting on her nipples. She let out a loud moan which I silenced with a kiss. Our tongues dances in each other's mouths while she moaned in between our kisses. When I couldn't take it anymore, I inserted uSmith into her and she gasped loudly. I went in slowly until I was fully inside her then started moving fast. She was grasping on to the sheets while screaming my name with every thrust. I held her hands above her head with one hand then used the other one to gently twist her nipples. She moaned again and when I felt her walls tighten

around my dick, I knew she was about to orgasm so I went slowly and around in circles. I let go of her hands and she dug her nails in my back, scratching me like crazy. That's when I knew she was cumming.

Me: come ride this dick baby

I got on my back and she got on me, slowly lowered herself on to me and started moving back and forth while squeezing me in. I held on to her hips as I felt the taste of heaven on my dick. I moved here back and forth before she pinned my hands above my head and started bouncing on me. The more her ass and pussy bounced up and down on my dick, I felt myself getting closer to exploding inside her. I was groaning as I tried prolonging this round but I couldn't. Before I knew it, I exploded deep inside her and her walls squeezed around my dick which drove me crazy since my dick was still sensitive

Me: you are amazing. I love you

Her: lol I love you

She brought her face close to mine and we shared a slow kiss which led to my dick getting hard almost immediately. I turned her around, put a pillow under her and started pound her from the back. This was one of my favorite positions especially because my wife has a big ass and in that position her ass is right there in front of me. After our love making session, we got cleaned up and cuddled

Me: I'm so glad you decided on going on the injection after Mikaela was born. Best decision ever

Her: lol I had to. I would be pregnant again if it was up to you

I kissed her forehead and we fell asleep. When the weekend finally arrived, Lwa left to go home for the day and after MaRose bathed and dressed Mikaela, I buckled her in her car seat and we went to town. I took her to Clicks to have her ears pierced. When the nurse called us to go in, I picked her up and walked in with her. The nurse was one of those young ones

Nurse: how may I help you guys?

Me: I'm here to get my princess's ears pierced

Her: how old is she?

Me: 4months old

Her: she is still too young. We are only permitted to pierce babies after they turn 6months old.

Me: really? I had no idea. Oh well thanks I guess

Her: you are welcome. Your daughter is beautiful and she looks like you

Me: lol is that your way of saying I'm beautiful?

She smiled which turned into a blush. Lol these young girls though.

Her: have a nice day Mr Smith

Me: thanks nurse

I walked out of Clicks and we went to Baby Boom and bought a few toys for Kaela. I really didn't know what we were going to do today without mommy. She is too small for me to know what to do with her so I just went to my parents' house. I walked into the house with Mikaela in my arms. I almost dropped her when my eyes landed on Jason in the lounge. He was sitting there with Mike and my dad

Me: molweni

Them: molo Soso

Dad: zisa umuntu wam kum

I gave Mikaela to him but I didn't sit down. I could feel my blood boiling when I recalled how this scumbag told me he is in love with my wife. I felt like throwing another punch his way

Me: where's mom?

Mike: upstairs. I think she is napping.

Jay: where is Lwa?

Me: askies?

Mike: Jason come on bruh. What the fuck mjita?

Dad: Michael!!

Mike: no tata reprimand Jason. He is going to get himself fucked up again

Me: Mike awundikhapha bruh

Dad: uzawubuya?

Me: andaz

I took Mikaela and walked out with her and Mike, I put her in the car seat and closed the door

Mike: Soso calm down

Me: I'm going to kill him Mike. I swear to God, I'm going to kill your brother

Season 3

Insert 16

Lwa

The drive home was long especially because of the boys wanting me to stop every hour because they wanted to pee or they were hungry or thirsty. Traveling with these two without Soso really is a drag but eventually we got home around 12pm. The moment I opened the door, they ran to my brothers Sakhile and KK

Me: hey guys

KK: hey sis, its been a while

He got up to give me a hug and he was right, I haven't seen my brothers since December and its now August

Sakhi: yaz I thought the only time we'd see you again would be next month at your wedding

Sakhile's hug was tighter than KK's. He even lifted me up and spun me around. Clearly nam I've been missed in this house.

Me: so what's new guys? I've missed you guys so much

KK: right back at you. I thought you were going to come with your daughter since we haven't met her.

Me: it would have killed me to travel with all these kids without Soso but you will meet her at the wedding

I caught up with my brothers while my kids played with their uncles. I've missed the four walls of this house. I grew up in here and the memories are in every corner, the love I have for every person in this family is beyond words. Our catching up moment was disturbed by a call from Athandwe. He didn't hide his number today so I got up and went to take the call in my room

Me: hello

Atha: hey Lwa, uright?

Me: yeah and you?

Him: I'm OK hey, can't complain

Then there was an awkward silence. It was like he was waiting on me to say something and I wasn't going to do that. He must have a reason for calling so he must just get to it

Him: I've been waiting on your call for 3 months now

Me: oh yeah. Eish ngakhohlwa yaz.

Him: wow OK. Uhm so does that mean you don't or rather you won't come see me?

I took in a deep breath and slowly exhaled. A part of me wanting to see for myself the extent of the damage Soso did to him but the other part of me feared for her life. This is the same guy that has put me through so much, has hurt me so badly and basically single handedly destroyed the person I used to be.

Me: are you still at your parents' house?

Him: no. I'm at my grandmother's house now.

Me: alright I'll be there in a hour

Him: nyan? Are you serious?

I could here the excitement in his voice. It was like he was in disbelief and wasn't expecting me to say that

Me: I'm serious

Him: alright see you then

We hung up and I just threw myself on the bed. What did I just agree to? If this gets to Soso, I'm a dead woman walking but I'd rather face my demons now than have them show up after we are married. Soso is my world, my life and I'd never want to hurt him in any kind of way. That's just the kind of love I have for him and its all due to the kind of man he is. Yes he isn't perfect, he has his flaws but I love him with those flaws. I made my way downstairs and went to the kitchen to pour myself a glass of water then I called Sakhile into the kitchen

Sakhi: wassup?

Me: I need a favor

Him: sure

Me: I'm going to leave now but I don't trust the person I'm going to so I'm going to need you to follow me then park a distance away from the house

He had a confused look on his face. It was like he wasn't quite understanding what I was saying

Him: who is this person you are going to and if you don't trust him then why are you going there to begin with?

Me: its the twins' father.

Him: their biological father? Lwa are you crazy? Sis you are getting married in a month, why are you still wanting to see this guy?

Me: for closure I guess or rather to just face my demons. Angaz Sakhile but what I know is that I have to do this

Him: I'm not going to say I agree with all of this but fine. Its your life after all

Me: thanks

I took a bottle of water from the fridge, my bag and car keys then said bye to the twins

Me: KK please watch them. I won't be long and make sure they don't break anything.

KK: alright but cone back with pizza or ribs

Me: alright little on. Sakhile let's go

I got in my car and he got in one of dad's cars and I drove to Atha's grandmother's house. I was shaking the whole way there, second guessing if I'm even doing the right thing by going to see him. I parked at the gate then called him

Atha: Lwa

Me: I'm at the gate

Him: Lihle is coming to open for you

Me: sho

I hung up and waiting then within seconds Lihle emerged from the door to open the gate. She flashed me a smile and I smiled back. I drove in, parked the car then took a deep breath before walking out. My heart was in my throat beating so fast, I thought I would pass out. I was shaking from head to toe and the more I tried to keep myself composed, the more the fear crept into my system. Lihle walked up to me, gave me a hug and walked into the house with me. The house hasn't changed since the last time I was there and by the looks of things, the elders were not here

Me: kukhona bani?

Lihle: mna nobhut' Atha noSbusi nobhut'Lu

I nodded as she led me to the lounge and the moment I walked in, our eyes met but I quickly looked down. He was sitting on a wheelchair with a fleece blanket covering his legs, he looked weak and defeated as if ushaywe umhlaba and he has no intention of picking himself up. He had a beard and an afro but even through all that, he was still hot. Looking at him still sent chills down my spine. I sat down on the couch next to Lihle

Me: molweni

Lu: our long lost makoti, unjani?

Me: Lulonke awukahle. I'm good though and yourself?

Atha: you look beautiful

I tried not to smile but my face failed me as it lit up like a Christmas tree after he said those words

Me: thank you

Atha: no need to thank me for telling the truth. I don't want to keep you long so can we talk in my room?

Me: uhm sure

My voice was shaky and I'm sure everyone in the room could feel the tension. I got up with the hope that he will lead me to the room but he didn't

Him: please push me

Despite everything he has ever done to me, my kids and Soso, at that moment I honestly felt sorry for him. I know how much Atha hates depending on people but here he is having to do it for the rest of his life. I pushed him to the room then closed the door after. Ever since ngifikile la, I haven't looked at him in the eyes. I've been avoiding any sort of eye contact with him because I know if I do, I will get emotional

Atha: please look at me

Me: Atha I can't

Him: ndiyakcela Lwa.

I could feel the tears threatening my eyes as all our memories flashed through my mind. Coming here was a mistake. Old wounds suddenly feel so fresh and my heart is bleeding right now.

Him: Lwa please just look at me. I can't do this without you looking at me

The moment my eyes landed on his, tears streamed down my cheeks, I tried wiping them but there was no use because the more I wiped, the more they came out. Atha slowly exhaled before taking his hand into mine. His touch sent an electric bolt to my heart and I quickly took my hand away

Him: I'm sorry. Lwa I know I've done a lot of cruel and hurtful things to you, things you didn't deserve and I'm truly sorry. When I broke up with you I thought I was helping us because I didn't want to hurt you anymore but I was young and still wanted to have fun. I didn't anticipate that you wouldn't come after me. I didn't think you'd move on and replace me so quickly. Even when we broke up and I was with Katli, I was still in love with you. Lwa I've always been in love with you and I made one mistake which led to a few more and now I'm sitting on this chair with no possibility of ever walking again. I have no one to blame apart from myself for where I am today. I did this to myself all because I couldn't accept responsibility for my actions. I've lost my friends, my kids and I lost you. The kind of things I did to you still make my skin crawl from just thinking about it. I almost raped you, I drugged you and put you and your child's life at risk and worst of all I was willing to let my worst enemy rape you. Lunga was never my friend and deep down I'm sure nawe uyayaz lonto.

By now I was crying so much that I was struggling to breath. Having him replay all of this to me, admitting the things he has done to me felt like he just ripped all the plasters that were holding my heart together and just broke it all over again. I had nothing to say to him and even if I wanted to say something, I wouldn't be able to speak

Him: I'm not trying to get you back anymore because I know you would never come back to me especially now that I'm a useless vegetable that can't even take a shit without another person's help but I am asking for your forgiveness. I know I don't deserve it but my days on earth are numbered and I'd like to die knowing that I at least made right by you. Ndiyakucela MaHadebe, please find it in your heart to forgive me

Me: what... What do you mean? Your days are numbered?

Him: Lwa this is not the life I want for myself, this is not the life God intended for me to live and I'm not going to live my life depending on other people. I stayed with my parents for a month before they sent me here because my mom says she doesn't know how to take care of me. I'm 23yrs old Lwa, I shouldn't have people taking care of me

Me: so, you are going to kill yourself?

Him: yes. On the 5th of September I'm going down to the railway lines and I'm going to wait for a train then jump in front of it

I covered my mouth in shock and gasped loudly. The 5th of September is the day I'm getting married on and this person has chosen it as the date for his appointment with death

Me: why that date?

Him: I want to see my sons turn 3years old then do it. I can't do it on their birthday month. Please don't look at me like that, don't feel sorry for me. My time is up

Me: and who are you to decided that your time is up? God created you, he gave you life and never did he give you the power to take it away. So, what that you are in a wheelchair? So, what that you now need help to do basic things? That doesn't

change the person you, your brain still functions so don't be a coward and take the easy way out

Season 3

Insert 17

Atha

I looked at her while she shouted at me and as much as I wish I could say that her words had an effect on the decision I had taken, I couldn't because I would be lying. I've screwed up my life and there is no use in going back on the choices I've made. I know Lwa meant well but it was her emotions and shock talking and not her mind and at this moment I needed to hear her speak her mind. I needed to hear her blame me to the shit I've put her through, for her to tell me she hates me for all the things I've done to her and Soso. I didn't want her feeling sorry for me and just letting everything slide because I'm now sitting in a wheelchair with no way forward

Me: there is nothing you can say that will change my mind. My mind is made up

Lwa: then why tell me? Why didn't you just do it without having to tell me? I'm sure this is all part of your plan to fuck up my life like you always do. Dammit Athandwe, you will always be an asshole and you will never change. The moment I start getting over you, you bring shit up like this to derail me but guess what, its not going to work this time around. I'm happy with Lwandiso and whether you live or die will make no difference in my life. I'm getting married in a month and when Soso and I are married and you are dead, I will change the twins' surname to Smith and it will be like you never existed. We will forget you like we forget a neighborhood dog that gets hit by a car

She was angry but for the wrong reasons. I wanted her to be angry at me for what I did then forgive me so she can fully move on without having to watch her back at all times but now she is angry at me for me wanting to kill myself. Yes, I may be a selfish spoiled brat but I love my kids, they are my legacy so there is no way in hell I'm going to let her raise them with the belief that Soso is their father whereas they have my blood running through their veins.

Me: Lwa you would never do that. Those are my kids and as much as I'm OK with you and Soso raising them, they will always have the Dlamini surname

Her: and how will you stop me from the grave? Angithi ufuna ukufa wena? I won't have my sons tied to a coward that gave up on life. I'm raising my kids to believe in themselves and for them to know that time heals all wounds and that with time, everything passes. I'm raising my sons not to be quitters and never give up on life

I let out a soft sigh. Over the years I've forgotten how stubborn this woman is. I tilted my head and looked at her trying to wipe the tears that were flowing down her cheeks, she looks beautiful even when she is crying but that's not a sight I enjoying seeing. I still love her so much but I've hurt her to a point whereby I know I could never deserve her ever again.

Her: and yazini I'm not going to sit here and beg you not to kill yourself. If you feel like you have nothing to live for then OK fine, its been nice knowing you

Me: Lwa please don't be angry at me. I didn't call you here to hurt you or cause you more pain. I just wanted to say I'm sorry and ask, actually beg for your forgiveness.
Ndiyakucela chocolate chicken

She tried not to smile but she failed, I guess that name still has an effect on her. Seeing her smile through the tears frustrated me because I just wanted to get up and wipe her tears but I couldn't.

Me: yizapha

I patted my thighs indicating that she should come sit on me

Her: no haw. I'm fine sitting where I'm sitting

Me: I want to wipe your tears, I hate seeing you cry. Please just let me do this for you

Her: no Atha and besides I gained weight now since I gave birth 4months ago so I'm heavy

Me: lol its not like I can feel it. Yiza kalok chocolate chicken

She smiled again and got up from the bed, sat on my thighs and wrapped her one arm around my neck. I used my hand to wipe her tears and the moment my hand touched her face, she closed her eyes. It was like she was scared of me or nervous

Me: I'm so sorry Lwa. So very sorry MaHadebe

My voice was soft because I meant every word and I needed her to believe me

Her: with all the pain you've caused me please don't add taking your life to the list. If not for yourself then for uLoyiso noQhawe. They might not know about you but one day they will and I don't want to tell them that their father ended his life. Please

Me: Lwa this life isn't easy

Her: which life is? You have all the money in the world, I'm sure you can find a doctor that could help you. You are giving up too easily and that's not the Atha I knew and it's definitely not the Atha I fell in love with. You fought for months for me to start dating you, the least you can do is put up the same battle for your life

And then people always questioned how and why I fell for this girl. I looked at her, obviously she was still dodging the eye contact but I stared at her for a while. I knew she didn't care about me anymore, all the things she was saying were for the sake of Loyiso and Qhawe. I placed my hand around her waist and pulled her closer to me, she looked at me for a second and then smiled before looking down

Me: uyandoyika?

She shook her head

Me: then why won't you look at me? I won't hurt you Lwa. I promise you

Her phone rang and she cleared her throat before answering it

Lwa: bhuti...yeah, I'm still OK...ngizophuma manje. Shap

Then she hung up and got up from my lap

Her: I have to get going. KK is watching my kids and I still have to drive back to PE

Me: please come see me again. I won't call you because I don't want to cause problems between you and Soso so I'll wait on your call

Her: I can't promise anything but I'll try and please think about everything I said

Me: I will. Thank you for coming

She nodded before wheeling me to the lounge. She hugged me goodbye and then Lihle opened the gate for her. In the lounge I was now chilling with Lu who kept stealing glances at me

Me: thetha fondin

Lu: how did you convince her to come here? Did you blackmail her?

Me: no. I asked her to come and she did

Him: that easily? Wow maybe she is still in love with you

Me: I highly doubt that. She is getting married in a month

Him: damn that's messed up. Jonga ntwana, you have Lwa back in your life, are you sure about that plan of yours? Did you even tell her about it?

Me: yeah ndimxelele and she wasn't happy. She tried convincing me to change my mind

Him: and did it work?

Me: no. I'm still ending my life next month Lulonke. Not even Lwa can change my mind

Him: what if she brought your kids to come see you?

Me: fuck Lulonke don't you get it? I don't want my kids to see me like this. I didn't even want Lwa to see me like this. She kept looking at me with eyes full of pity. I don't want the world to pity me

Him: we don't pity you, asshole, we love you. Athandwe you are my brother, my only brother so, excuse me if I'm not so chuffed about you wanting to end your life

Me: mxm whatever. I'm going to nap

*

*

Lwa

The drive home seemed longer than what it should have been and I was trying to calm down throughout the whole time. I was still in disbelief over what Atha told me, maybe he was lying, just trying to get my attention like he always does but there was just something about the way he said it that made it all so believable. When we got home, I rushed to the bathroom, washed my face and freshened up. I applied a bit of make up then went back downstairs. I threw myself on the couch and sighed loudly to the extent that Sakhile and KK turned to face me

Sakhi: was it worth it? Look at yourself sis, you look broken

Me: I'm fine or rather I'll be fine. Loyiso woza la

He came to me and I picked him up and put him next to me and squeezed him tightly. How could Atha be so stupid and selfish? What am I supposed to tell these kids?

Loy: ishhuu mama yalimaza

Me: askies Nana

I kissed his forehead but still didn't let him go

Me: KK please text Nami and tell him that I'm here and that he should come with Phiwe and Alwande

KK: alright

Sakhi: you better snap out of that mood before Nami gets here because he won't buy the story of you being OK while you look like this

Me: look like what? I look fine

Him: keep trying to convince yourself

I got up, poured yogurt, ice cream and ultra Mel for myself and then made the twins noodles. Sakhile and KK fed them while I ate my dessert then I remembered that I have another child so I called Soso to check on them

Soso: Lwandile

Me: baby

Him: uright?

Me: yeah and you? Did you get Mikaela's ears pierced? How is she?

Him: nah, they said I should bring her when she is 6months old and she is fine. We are fine

He sounded agitated and knowing Soso, I know someone pissed him off

Me: what's wrong?

Him: nothing. We will talk when you get home. What time will you be back?

Me: around 7ish. I'm going to leave here around 4pm

Him: OK sizawuthetha xa ufika

Me: shap

We hung up and I continued with my delicious dessert. I was trying very hard to get my mind off Athandwe and the more I tried, the more he crossed my mind. I really hope he can pick himself up and get through this. It broke my heart to see him like that. When I was done eating I took my bowl to the kitchen, rinsed it and went back to the lounge. Nami and his family walked in through the door and the moment Phiwe saw me, she screamed and rushed to hug me

Phiwe: awusemhle sana. Yho

Me: lol thank you sisters and you look gorgeous too.

I picked Alwande up and gave her a tight squeeze

Me: how are you princess?

Alwa: I'm fine.

Me: awusemdala bakithi

I put her down and she ran to the twins while I got a chance to hug my brother. I've missed him the most since I'm closer to him than all my other brothers

Nami: you look good baby sis. How's my niece?

Me: gorgeous and growing way too fast.

Nami: you should have come with her and left these naughty ones in PE

KK: same thing I said

We all laughed and chilled together while catching up. Turns out Phiwe is expecting baby number 2 and apparently Landile got into a serious relationship when the news of my engagement reached his ears.

Season 3

Insert 18

Lwa

Being with my siblings really did brighten up my mood and it made me realize the importance of family despite that we are all grown up and living our own different lives. Sakhile and Nami were outside with the twins while Phiwe and I were catching up in the lounge

Me: so, who is Laa's new girl?

She gave me a funny look before letting out a chuckle

Me: lol what's with the weird look skwiza?

Phiwe: since when do you care about Laa? Or are you jealous?

Me: lol jealous? Boo have you seen the man I'm marrying? He is the full package

Her: lol well speak of the devil

Me: Laa is here? Where?

Her: no sweetie, your man's car just parked outside

I got up from the couch and approached the door, I opened it and ngempela there was Soso carrying sleeping Mikaela in his arms. Nami had already opened the gate for him so I walked towards them, took my princess and just stared at Soso who looking like he was ready to punch someone

Me: what are you guys doing here?

Soso: hey to you too Lwandile. Jonga neh ngizawubulisa oSakhile then you and I are getting in the car and we are going to drive somewhere. We need to talk

My heart started racing. What if he knew that I went to see Atha. What if Atha told him that I was there. Maybe it was all just part of his plan to ruin my relationship with Soso

Me: couldn't this wait until I got home? And where am I supposed to leave Mikaela?

Him: no, it couldn't wait. I'm sure Phiwe wouldn't mind watching Alwandiswe for a couple of hours.

OK this was freaking me out, Soso never refers to Mikaela as Alwandiswe. I got in the house and Phiwe was so happy to see Kaela. She immediately took her from my arms

Phiwe: oh my gosh Lwa, she is so cute. I love her and she is so white

Me: like father like daughter I guess

Soso: Lwandile

I don't even know when he walked in but I turned around and his eyes indicated that we should leave

Me: sis please watch her for a bit. I'll be back

Phiwe: lol just don't be out here making more kids. Hey Soso

Soso: uxolo Phiwe, hey unjani?

Phiwe: ndiright wethu

He flashed her a smile as I got up and followed him into the car. He sped off and I didn't say anything. I don't know what to say because he looked angry and I had no idea why. He found a park and parked there. I was now literally shaking

Soso: Lwandile

Me: tata kaYandisa

Him: I want you to be honest with me

Me: about what?

Him: you and Jason

I slowly breathed out. I didn't even realize that I was holding my breath. At least he doesn't know about Atha and that I went to see him

Me: what about Jason and I?

Him: what really happened between you guys? Please just tell me the truth before I end up killing someone

Me: what I told you was the truth. He kissed me and that was it

Him: and while I was in East London? Did anything happen?

Me: no, of course not. Baby where is this coming from? I thought we passed this already

Him: today Jason asked me where you are. It wasn't about the question but rather how he asked it. He asked as if he already knew, like he was testing me or something

I hate what Jason's actions have done to my relationship. Soso never used to be insecure but now he drove 3 hours with a baby just to ask me something that clearly could have waited until I got home. I took his hands into mine and looked him straight in the eye

Me: I love you Lwandiso Shaun Smith and I'd never hurt or disrespect you like that. Never in a million years. You brother is ju-

Him: that asshole is not my brother

Me: sthandwa sam Jason will always be your brother just like I'll always be uMaHadebe wakho. Only yours

Him: and you'd never lie to me or keep secrets from me, right?

Me: never sthandwa sam

Him: ok now give me a kiss

I knew I was lying because I was keeping my visit to Atha's house a secret and that's a secret I'm willing to go to the grave with. If he can get so angry over Jason asking him a simple question, imagine what he'd do when he finds out I went to see my ex.

Him: I'm sorry for driving out here for something so silly but Jason really got to me. He knew what buttons to press and he pressed them really well

Me: forget about him. Just focus on us. Just love me and trust me and we will be fine

Him: yeah, I guess so. I love you Lwa

Me: I love you too Soso

We shared a long slow passionate kiss before we broke it and he kissed the tip of my nose followed by my forehead. I love him so much that keeping this one tiny secret was hurting me but I know telling him will hurt us and that's not something I want to do

Me: let's go get our kids and go home please

Him: ok baby.

Then he just sat there looking at me and smiling to himself. I looked at him with questioning eyes but he just acted like he doesn't see me

Me: Lwandiso drive the car please

Him: ai umhle mahn baby wam. Yho

I just let out a chuckle before hitting him on his arm

Him: but you are a bully though.

He drove back to my parents' house and he chilled with the guys while I chilled with Phiwe and Mikaela. I was even surprised that she was still awake since she loves sleeping so much.

Me: hello Princess Kaela

She giggled as I planted a kiss on her face. This child looks so much like her father, its ridiculous actually. All my kids don't look like me yaz, they all look like their fathers

Phiwe: please leave her behind, she is just too cute for words. These light brownish goldish eyes just stole my heart

Me: lol make your own sisi

Her: lol I already have

She stuck her tongue out at me and I just laughed. I really hope their baby will be a girl again, we have too many boys in this family. After a while Nami, Sakhile and Soso walked in. My brothers couldn't wait to get their hands on their niece. Mikaela always steals people's hearts, she is 10 times cuter than the twins. In the early evening, my little family and I had to go back home. I dreaded the drive to PE because I didn't feel like driving

Me: babe I'm going to leave my car, I'm too lazy to drive

Soso: and how will it get to home?

Me: bhut' Sakhile

Sakhi: baby sis

Me: please bring my car tomorrow? I'm going to leave it

Him: sure, sis no problem

Me: thanks. There. Problem solved

I buckled the kids into their car seats then took my seat in the front. I connected my phone to the car via Bluetooth and played music. I was playing hip hop jams just to keep the mood light

Soso: should we stop for food or will you cook when we get home

Me: let's stop for food. I'm too tired to cook and I'm craving braai'd meat

Him: let me just buy meat and we will have a braai when we get home. We can even invite Pali and Mike

Me: sounds like a great idea babe

The rest of the drive home was chilled, we sang, laughed and stole a few kisses. Atha was now at the back of my mind where he belongs and my attention was on Soso. We got home and MaRose took the kids to go bath them while I poured myself a glass of juice and dialed Pali's number. She answered after a few rings

Pali: my friendship

Me: how are you babe?

Her: bored out of my mind. Mike has been chilling with Jason all day and his parents are not around

Me: well I'm going to save you from that boredom. Soso and I are having a braai so you and Mike must come

Her: this is why you are my bestie. I'm going to freshen up then we will come

Me: lol see you then

I hung up then started on the pap and salads while Soso got the fire started up. I played music and just had fun in my kitchen

MaRose: do you need any help?

Me: is Yandisa sleeping?

Her: yebo

Me: oh good. I need to freshen up before our guests arrive so please just watch the pap

Her: OK sisi

I took my phone upstairs and started gettin undressed when my phone beeped indicating that I had received a text. I checked it and it was from Atha

From: Atha>

Thank you again for today. It really meant a lot to me. Hope to see you again soon.
Love you always

I read the text and as I was about to delete it, the door opened and Soso walked it so I just locked my phone and placed it on the table

Soso: you going to shower?

Me: uhm yeah just want to freshen up quickly before Mike and Pali get here

Him: oh OK. Uright? You seem a bit agitated

Me: I'm fine my love. I just need a shower. Do you want to join me?

Him: lol I thought you'd never ask.

He stripped then wrapped himself in a towel before joining me in the shower. We had a quick shower without any funny business taking place. I got dressed in black jeggings, a black vest and a denim long sleeved shirt then wore ugs while Soso wore black sweatpants and a black hoodie with a white T-shirt underneath.

Soso: you like trying to watch with me

Me: lol but I got dressed first so technically you copied me

Him: have I told you how much I love you today?

Me: nope. You haven't.

Him: lol ai uzawuba strong skhokho

I hit him playfully on his arm and walked away from him but he gently pulled me toward him and my head was now on his chest so I looked up at him and our eyes locked. He smiled revealing his perfectly white teeth

Him: uyaphi?

Me: I'm leaving you

Him: you'd never do that to me. You love me way too much

He wasn't wrong there, I love him to the ends of the earth. He gently pecked my lips before taking my hand in his and we walked downstairs where we found Pali and Mike settling in the lounge

Mike: you guys are always making babies. We had to let ourselves in

Me: uyaphapha njalo wena Michael. My friend, how are you?

She got up to hug me and we headed to the kitchen while Soso and Mike checked on the meat outside. We sat on the high-rise chairs by the counter and caught up

Me: so, friendship I went to see Atha today

Pali: what? Lwandile are you crazy? That guy is dangerous

Me: he is harmless now. He is even in a wheelchair

Her: Athandwe? Harmless? Are you hearing yourself? That guy will never be harmless. You are putting yourself and your family at risk by even believing that for a second

I kept quiet because Palesa didn't see the guy I saw today. Atha has changed and he does feel bad for the things he has done. Everyone deserves a second chance, no matter what they've done.

Season 2

Insert 19

Lwa

Weeks went by and Atha and I had gotten a bit close, not in a romantic way but in a friendship way. He wants us to rebuild leya friendship that we had in high school before we started dating. We would text each other almost all the time but obviously I had to change the name in which I had saved his number because my phone doesn't have a password and Soso has access to it. It was the third week of August and I still failed at trying to convince him not to take his life. He said he felt like his time had come and he was done with life so nam ke I left the topic because we'd end up fighting every time we spoke about it. I woke up that Wednesday, took a shower then went to prepare breakfast for my family. I made bacon, eggs, toast with melted cheese then made lunches for the kids. Soso came down with the twins all dressed up and ready to go

Soso: morning my love

I flashed him a smile as he kissed the side of my head

Me: morning sthandwa sam. Morning boys

Twins: morning mommy

I'm so glad that their English is so good, not that I mind them speaking Xhosa but I just love that they are growing so fast. I sat them down at the table and then dug in. I made sure to leave some food for MaRose since she was still bathing Kaela

Me: baby

All 3 of my boys looked up which made me laugh because I was referring to Soso not Q or Loy.

Me: lol tata

Soso burst into laughter, that was his little inside joke with the boys and they enjoyed torturing me shame

Soso: ndikumamele mama lol

Me: lol uyaphapha yaz. Jonga neh tata walelikhaya, ndicela ukuhamba early today and take the rest of the week off

Him: why?

Me: wedding things kalok my love. Everything has to be finalized by next week

Him: kanene siyatshata in 2 weeks. Ndiyilibele nyan eyo

I looked at him with a very unimpressed look and he just winked at me. I knew he was kidding, well I hoped he was kidding. After breakfast I buckled the twins up, grabbed my bag with all my stuff in it then kissed my daughter goodbye and drove to the twins' daycare. I unbuckled them then walked in with them since I needed to talk to their teacher about something. She saw me at the door and came to me with a smile on her face. This woman is always smiling, I don't even think half the time, the smile is genuine.

Miss Harris: morning Mrs Dlamini

I was taken back by the Mrs Dlamini part until I remembered that she is most probably making an assumption since that's the surname the twins use

Me: uhm it's Mrs Smith actually

Her: oh, I just thought that...actually never mind. How may I help you?

Me: I'm going to be fetching the boys early today. There are a few things that I need to do with them this afternoon

Her: will you be fetching them yourself or will you send someone?

Me: I'll fetch them myself.

Her: alright no problem

I smiled before making my way to my car. This little conversation with this lady made me a little off schedule which resulted in me getting stuck in traffic and as a result, I was 15mins late for work. I walked into the office and as per usual I had to report to Yolanda first

Me: morning Miss Ntabeni. I'm so sorry that I'm late. I got stuck in traffic

Yoli: your work is on your desk and also check the emails I've sent you

Me: yes ma'am

As I turned to approach the door, she spoke to me again

Her: next time you realize that you are more than 5 mins late, don't bother coming in to work

Seriously? Kazi eyani idrama ekseni kanje. Clearly someone didn't get it all this morning but I nodded at her and walked out. I started on my work, calling clients, filing documents and doing some admin work. At 11ish my phone rang and it was private number but I knew who it was so I answered

Me: hello

Atha: morning, unjani?

Me: I'm good hey and wena?

Him: still wanna kill myself but I'm good despite it all

Me: thank you for ruining my day

Him: lol it was a joke kalok MaHadebe. Awudlaliswa na wena ngoku?

Me: well it was a crappy joke

Him: ndicela uxolo evha

Me: its fine

Him: I actually need a favor, that's why I called

Me: OK I'm listening

Him: I know I agreed ukuba we are going to take this thing slow since I'm trying to gain your trust and all that but please send me a picture of Alwakhe and Awakhe. I know its a lot to ask

Me: why not just call them Loyiso noQhawe?

Him: kalok those names were given to them by you and as much as they will always be Loyiso and Qhawe since makhulu named them that, I like the meaning you installed behind the names you gave them

I smiled to myself remembering the meanings I based their names on

Me: Alwakhe uthando lwethu and Awakhe umndeni wethu. Its fine, I will send you their pictures but after lunch time because I have to get back to work now

Him: Enkosi my chocolate chicken

Me: lol stop that and bye

He laughed before I hung up. I daydreamed for a good 5mins after that call, just reminiscing about our past, well the good parts only. I really hope my feelings for him are not resurfacing, especially so close to my wedding. It was Pali's voice that snapped me back to reality

Pali: I wonder who is on your mind that's making you smile like a lovestruck teenager

Me: lol it can only be my husband to be

OK I was lying but I couldn't exactly tell her that I was thinking about my ex because she becomes judgmental everytime the Atha topic comes up and I was tired of explaining why I feel as if Atha really has changed.

Her: hmm anyway what are your lunch plans?

Me: I have to pick Sedi up from the airport and then go see Talent for the fittings

Her: I'm definitely coming with you. I haven't seen that crazy girl in ages. I miss her

Me: makes the two of us my friendship

Her: and Lolz and Nomz? When are they getting here?

Me: Friday around lunch time. I have so much to do this week and next week. I actually have to submit my leave application at HR before I leave at lunch time

Her: let me let you get back to work before Cruella Devile gives you a hard time. She is already staring at us

Pali was right. Yoli was standing at her door looking at us with her arms folded. I got back to work, finished all my work for the morning and at half 12 I packed my bag and went to knock on Yoli's door. She told me to come in and I did. I placed a file on her desk

Me: the rest of the reports have been emailed to you and I won't be returning after lunch or for the rest of the week

She arched her eyebrow at me, folded her arms and leaned back on her chair

Yoli: reason being?

Me: I'm going on leave

Her: and what am I supposed to do? Do all the work myself?

Haibo kanti what does she get paid for? Ngiyajwayelwa nje la straight. I shrugged my shoulders at her and walked out of her office with my bad bitch smile on. I walked to Soso's office and knocked before he told me to come in

Soso: Miss Hadebe what may I do for you?

Me: sir I'm leaving now

He flashed me a smile and I was trying very hard to stay professional here and that smile was leading me astray. He got up from his chair and sat on the corner of his desk

Him: did you file a leave application with HR?

Me: yes, sir I did

Him: alright then Miss Hadebe, we shall see you back here on Monday

Me: yes sir, good day

I turned and walked out with an even bigger smile. This trying to be professional thing is actually fun yaz. I stopped at Liz's desk still wearing my smile

Liz: I hope you didn't have a quickie in the boss's office

Me: lol Elizabeth! Mr Smith and I are very professional people. Please call Palesa's office and tell her I'm ready

She gave me that "I don't believe you" look before calling Pali. Within minutes she was at reception and we left. I picked up the twins before heading for the airport

Loy: mama ndibawela ishokholate

Me: ngenze njani ke mina mfanwami? Ngiyithenge?

Him: ewe kalok mama.

Q: cela kalok nawe Yoyiso

Me: mtshele wena Q. Mele acele and not make demands here

Pali: yho I'm so lost with this conversation. Can we just stick to English?

Me: lol you have to learn this language if you are planning on marrying into that Smith family

The rest of the trip to the airport was pretty much chilled, just light conversation here and there. We found Lesedi already waiting for us and the moment we got out the car she started screaming. Now people were staring at us as if we were crazy but we didn't care. We had a group hug before helping her load her luggage in my boot. My polo really is too small and I need a new car as in yesterday day. I checked the time and I still had time before our appointment with Talent so I drove us to the shopping complex close to the boutique and we had lunch at spur. I had to accommodate the twins as well.

Sedi: the minions are so grown up now and they are so tall for their age

Me: well I guess they got that from their father

Pali: speaking of their father

I gave Pali a nudge under the table before she could finish her sentence then she kept quiet but Sedi shifted her eyes between Pali and myself

Sedi: spill it bitches

Me: haibo Sedi! Language

Sedi: askies but one of you bees better start talking

Pali: Lwa thinks Atha has changed

Sedi: changed? Changed into what? A vampire?

I almost chocked on my drink in laughter and Pali did actually choke and started coughing

Q: soli auntie

Loy: ewe soli auntie Pili

Me: auntie Pali Loy

Pali: thank you boys

Sedi: can we just focus on the conversation at hand

Pali: ok fine. You know he got kidnapped right?

Sedi: Atha got kidnapped again? Mxm I wouldn't be surprised, he must have pissed off the wrong people

Well my friends don't know that it was Soso that was behind Atha's kidnappings, well except for Nomz. She knows everything

Pali: yes, anyway the kidnappers killed his cousin and drugged him. The effects of the drug left him paralyzed.

Sedi: paralyzed? As in he is in a wheelchair? Atha in a wheelchair? Rhaaa he is faking it

Me: haa aah Sedi he isn't faking

Sedi: and how would you know? Don't act like you've forgotten that he is the biggest attention seeking guy on the planet. He is always trying to get your attention Lwa

Season 3

Insert 20

Lwa

The lunch with my friends continued with them throwing shade and judgment over me entertaining Atha and honestly it got to a point where by it annoyed me.

Me: Lesedi we have to get to Talent and Palesa needs to get back to work

Sedi: using our full names won't change how we feel about the whole situation you've started with Atha.

I ignored her and just settled the bill before grabbing my kids and walking out. They followed me, Sedi said bye to Palesa, making plans for later then she walked into the boutique after me. Talent was still busy with a client so we had to wait

Sedi: Lwa are you mad at me now?

Me: why would I be?

Her: friend, I love you and I won't let you walk into Atha's trap. He is playing you Lwa

Me: I'm not mad and can we please stop talking about this?

She nodded then started a whole new conversation with Qhawe, who was more than happy to talk to her. After 15mins, Talent let us in

Talent: Lwa, baby, you are always bringing me gorgeous ladies, are you sure you are not trying to change me into a straight man?

Me: lol maybe I am. Talent this is Palesa, Palesa this is Talent

They hugged, with Talent placing kisses on her cheeks then he took out the dress for her to try on. It looked absolutely beautiful on her, it was figure hugging and it made her boobs pop out

Me: I love your work baby. This is gorgeous

Talent: its all for you my sugar plum. So, Friday is the day you see your dress. You better be excited

Before I could answer, my phone rang. I checked the caller ID and it was private number

Me: excuse me guys, I have to take this

I stepped outside then answered the call

Me: hello

Atha: hey

Me: I haven't forgotten about the pictures

Him: that's not why I'm calling. I have a confession to make but please don't be mad

Confessions usually get me mad but I chose to just not say anything and wait for him to get to it. I was already having a crappy day so if he adds to it, I might just lose my mind

Him: Lwa

Me: hmmm

Him: I love you and I know my timing isn't ideal but my feelings are genuine. I love you Lwa and I need to see you again

I wasn't surprised. He has been hinting that he still loves me but I never wanted to confront it because where would it lead us? I'm getting married in 2 weeks with the man I love and who loves me. I kept quiet and naye he was quiet. I need to put a stop to this but how can I be harsh and mean to a man that has two weeks to live? After my wedding day, I will never hear his voice again or see his face.

Me: I need to go Atha. I'll come see you tomorrow

Him: thanks, my chocolate chicken. I love you makaQhawe

Me: bye

I hung up, put my phone on silent then went back to Talent and Sedi who were wrapping up what they were doing

Me: all done?

Sedi: yeah. Talent is still helping the minions into their suits

Me: alright

Her: was that him? On the phone

Me: him? Him who?

Her: Athandwe

Before I could answer, Talent walked in with my handsome little men, who looked totally adorable. I snapped a few pictures before they changed.

Me: you have totally outdone yourself Talent. My babies look so cute

Talent: I just want to meet the man that made all these kids and just have him for one night.

Me: lol Talent no. That's my boo

We shared a laugh then we had to leave. Sedi was going to be staying with us at the house so I drove straight home.

Sedi: this is a gorgeous house. Soso really knows how to go for what he wants

Me: yeah, he does. Let me show you to the room you will be using

Just then MaRose walked in with my daughter who started giggling the moment she saw me. She is just a ray of sunshine

Me: yiza kuMama nana

I took her ngamteketisa for a while and she just giggled and drooled like crazy

Sedi: she is gorgeous

Me: thank you friendship. Do you want to hold her?

Her: maybe later. I just want to lay down for now

She suddenly seemed offish but I wasn't going to push for an explanation. I showed her to the room and then went to my room to chill with my daughter. I sat her on the bed and we started taking selfies and videos then I made one of the pics my WhatsApp profile pic. After that I changed into comfy clothes then dialed Noma's number

Nomz: chomi

Me: unjani chomam?

Her: I'm broke and miserable

Me: you forgot dramatic. Listen ke chomam, I'm going to be at home tomorrow so if you haven't booked your flight, I'll come back with you guys

Her: oh yes please chomi. I was even dreading asking Syanda for money

Me: lol I'll see you tomorrow chomi. Tell Lolz as well please

She agreed and we hung up. After an hour or so daddy walked in and Kaela almost jumped off the bed. Umntanami ebene-excitement kababakhe. Soso's kissed me on my cheek before taking his daughter and tossing her in the air

Me: she is going to throw up all over you

Soso: she wouldn't do that to her daddy.

He kissed her face before walking out with her and calling MaRose to take her then he walked into our room and locked the door. He threw himself on the bed next to me and just stared at me for a while

Me: what's going on?

Soso: nothing. I'm just looking at my beautiful fiancé who thinks I'm the stupidest person in the world.

I sat up and looked at him. He didn't take his eyes off me during the whole time. I had this confused look on my face because I didn't know what he was talking about.

Me: ukhuluma ngani?

Him: zisa iphone yakho kum

My eyes immediately widened. I hesitated so he took the phone himself and went straight to my messages then stopped at Atha's texts which are saved as Akhile. He went all the way to the first text he sent me and my heart jumped to my throat because his name was on it

Him: andisosidenge mna Lwandile

Me: baby it's not what you think. Please give me a chance to explain to you

Him: no. I don't want your explanations. I just wanted to show you that you are not as smart as you think you are

He changed into sweatpants and a T-shirt then walked towards the door and stopped before he walked out

Him: I want you out of here before I come back. Leave my kids and just go

Before I had a chance to respond, he walked out the door and went downstairs where he took his car keys and walked out. Tears started building up in eyes as I sat on my bed with a confused look on my face. I'm not going anywhere, I know he just said that because he is still angry. There is no way Soso would kick me out, he loves me way too much for that and that's not the kind of person he is. I immediately deleted the texts, I don't know why since the person I was meant to hide them from already saw them. I should have listened to my gut but my heart and compassion took over where Atha was involved. I tried calling Soso but it just sent me straight to voicemail so I left him and went downstairs to my kids. I chilled with the twins but my mind was miles away.

Loy: mama

He was shaking me and it snapped me back to reality. I looked at him and he had this annoyed look on his face

Me: askies nana. Uthini?

Him: ndoda mna mama asinana

Me: khuluma ke ndoda

Him: faka uSofia kalok mama

I took the remote and changed to Sofia the first and watched it with my babies. They talked amongst themselves because I wasn't focusing on their conversation. When Soso walked in, he didn't look surprised that I was still there. He placed the boxes of pizza on the counter and then walked upstairs without saying a word to me. After a few minutes Sedi came downstairs and threw herself on the couch

Sedi: so, you and hubby are spending the rest of the week at a hotel?

Me: huh?

Her: Soso is packing in your room. I thought you were there so I knocked and he opened. He said you guys want to spend some time alone without the kids

Me: maybe he was planning on surprising me

I smiled faintly but my smile was far from real. Soso really wanted me out of here but this is my home too so I'm not going anywhere. 30mins later he came down the stairs with bags in his hands and put them in his car, I assume then walked in, took Kaela from MaRose and played with her

Q: yahamba tata?

Soso: ewe boy. Ndizabuya

Q: hamba nawe

Soso: uzawusala nabani uYaya

Q: noYoyiso njena

Loy: sala nomama mna

He gave Kaela to MaRose then looked at me and I immediately looked away

Soso: MaHadebe sthandwa sam masambe

I looked at him and as much as I didn't want to make a scene, I knew if I let him drive me out of this house, I'll never be back

Me: samba sobabili?

Him: ewe kalok baby wam

He took my hand and led me towards the door of my car. He got in the driver's seat and I sat in the passenger seat. The drive was quiet and awkward, I didn't know whether to speak or wait for him to talk first. He drove to a guesthouse, got keys then led the way with the bags. He sat on the bed then patted next to him with his hand, indicating I should sit next to him. I walked towards him and nervously sat next to him.

Soso: bendingatshongo ukuba andifuni ukukufumana endlini xa ndibuya?

Me: baby we have to talk about this. It really isn't what you think

Him: so, you are not texting your ex all the time? You didn't lie to me about wanting to go home so you can go see him? You didn't save his number under a different name so I wouldn't find out? All of that didn't happen?

I took in a deep breath and tried touching him but he moved away. He was angry and I was scared because Soso becomes a different person when he is pissed.

Me: I didn't lie to you. I didn't plan on seeing him. It just happened

Him: and the calls and texts also just happened? Sundigezela Lwandile

Me: he is going to die Soso. He wants to kill himself

Him: and how is that any of your concern? He wanted to kill me so if he wants to kill himself, why do you go behind my back to entertain my enemy?

Me: I feel sorry for him OK. I have a heart Lwandiso and when I saw him sitting in that chair, I felt sorry for him

Him: I'm done with you Lwa. You will never know what you want and honestly, I'm done with this back and forth. You are acting like a high school child and I don't have time for this. I don't want to be the reason you are not happy

Season 3

Insert 21

Soso

I've thought this through from the moment I saw a change in Lwa's behavior. She was spending more time on her phone than she was spending on me and that's the first and only sign I needed to know that she was up to no good. The moment I told her that I'm done with her, she broke down, started screaming and crying loudly but what was the point? She was getting what she wanted, I was giving her the freedom to do whatever she wants without having to hide it from me.

Lwa: Soso please you can't do this to me. I love you and I'm sorry. Please don't leave me

Me: don't lie to me Lwa. You are not sorry, you are only sorry because you got caught. I gave you everything and yet it wasn't enough for you. Clearly you like being beaten, cheated on and having your life put in danger. Lwa, I gave you my whole life and you threw it back in my face with no hesitation. That's the kind of person you are. You are selfish and inconsiderate. You disgust me

I clicked my tongue before taking my phone and walking out. I got outside and called a cab. I felt my tears rushing to my eyes but I quickly wiped them away because this was not the time to be weak. It hurts to know that after everything I've done for her, I'm still not enough for her. She would rather choose a useless asshole that's sitting on a wheelchair instead of me. The person who loves her more than life its self. Women can really be stupid sometimes but Atha will show his true colors and for her sake I hope it won't be too late. My cab arrived as I was still deep in my thoughts. I told the driver to take me to my parents' house. I wanted Mike and our friends to go out and get drunk. When I got home, I paid him then walked in. Luckily my parents weren't home so Mike was sitting with Pali

Me: hey guys

Mike: Soso ntwana ugrand?

Me: I'm top shayela boy. Pali, how are you?

Pali: I'm good.

Me: Mike call Ntando, Marc and Luke so we can go out. I feel like getting wasted

Mike: on a Wednesday? Wena?

Me: ewe kalok. Call them

Mike: OK sungxama fondin

He walked upstairs with his girlfriend while I made myself a sandwich. Lwa kept calling and I kept ignoring her calls. I don't want to talk to her because despite what she has been doing, I still love her with all my heart and soul but right now I don't want to see her or talk to her. She really hurt me and its going to take a lot for me to even want to speak to her, let alone want to marry her. After eating my sandwich, I called Ziya. On a night like this, I don't want to be surrounded by just my friends because they will keep asking me questions I don't have answers to

Ziya: ufuna nton Lwandiso?

Him: ndifuna wena

Her: ai tsek mahn Soso

I haven't spoken to her since she was in my office and I told her to hide in the storeroom so clearly, she was still mad at me about that

Me: my friends and I are going out tonight, do you want to join us?

Her: and why would I want to go out with you guys? Especially wena Lwandiso?

Me: usandiqumbela baby? Jonga kalok mabebeza, I'm going to take a cab to your place and apologize nicely. How's that?

She stayed silent for a while before I could feel her wanting to giggle like a teenager on the other side of the line

Her: I'll text you my address

Me: sho mntana...oh and make sure you are not wearing anything when I get there

I didn't wait for the response, I just hung up. I jumped off the counter and stood by the bottom of the stairs

Me: MIKE! MICHEAL

Mike: sugxola bruh

Me: I'm going to leave in five minutes, you shall text me the club that you decide on going too

Him: OK cool

Me: mayishiyeke icherry yakho

Him: ai Soso I can't do that

Me: its a boys' night kalok bruh and I want to fuck bitches so I don't want her there

Mike gave me the most confused look but I didn't entertain him, instead I just dialed the cab number and waited. The cab arrived after 7mins and I directed him to the address I had been given then called Ziya when I was at the gate. She opened the gate for me, I paid the cab driver then walked through the gate and knocked on the door. She opened for me while dressed in a short silk gown which showed her gorgeous legs. I swallowed spit before going in through the door

Me: so, I don't get a hug?

Ziya: you didn't ask for one

She was giving me attitude which funny enough, I found to be quite sexy. She led the way to the lounge and she made sure not to sit on the same couch I was sitting on. She crossed her legs which revealed her thighs and I was distracted

Her: you said you want to apologize. I'm listening

Me: oh yeah. I'm sorry for that day at my office. I shouldn't have done that to you.

Ndicela uxolo evha

Her: OK. You can leave now

Me: do you at least forgive me?

Her: no

I got up and went to sit on the couch she was sitting on then brought her closer to me and started whispering in her ear

Me: I want you. I want to rip that gown open then let my hand glide to your thighs before sliding my fingers in your wet pussy.

She pressed her thighs together tightly and I knew she was getting turned on

Me: then I'm going to lay you down on this couch and suck your swollen clit while my fingers dance inside your pussy. I want to fuck you on this couch right now

She let out a moan as she continued to press her thighs together. I untied her robe and just as I had requested, she was naked underneath it. This woman's body always turns me on within 5seconds. I slid my hand towards her inner thighs and she slowly opened her legs while I also planted kisses on her neck which made her moan. When my hand came into contact with her pussy, she was soaking wet. I rubbed her clit between my thumb and my finger and she let out even louder moans with my name in them. I laid her down on the couch without removing my fingers from her. I finger fucked slowly and she kept grinding on my finger, hinting that she wanted more which made me chuckle a bit. Then I started planting wet kisses from her neck to her stomach while gently twisting her nipples between my fingers

Ziya: Lwandiso

The way she said my name was just sexy as fuck, it was soft and yearning. I parted her legs then buried my head between them. By this time, my dick was rock hard and fighting to get out of my pants. She pushed my head deeper between her legs as I sucked on her swollen clit and gently biting it. I licked and sucked her until I knew I couldn't take it anymore. I needed to fuck this woman as in yesterday. I unzipped my pants, lowered them and my briefs then rubbed the tip of my dick on the opening of her pussy

Me: are you on the pill?

Her: uh huh

Me: and you are clean? No viruses?

Her eyes immediately opened and she looked pissed. I know my question might come across as disrespectful but I had to know

Her: what the fuck Lwandiso? What do you...aaaah

I didn't even wait for her to finish her sentence before I slammed into her and didn't move. I lowered my head next to her ear and started nipping on it while she was grinding from under me

Me: sorry about that. You were saying?

Her: what the hell do you take me for?

Me: you are a bitch Ziya. That's what I take you for so that's why I asked

Her: tsek Lwandiso. Get off me

She tried pushing me off but I took her arms and pinned them above her head and started fucking her

Me: should I get off?

Her: aaaah don't...stop...please

I went into her hard and fast. I enjoyed the sounds she made, sounds of pleasure and pain mixed together. When I felt her walls tightening around my dick I pulled out and flipped her over

Her: what the fuck, I was about to cum

Me: shhh. You talk too much

She was now on her hands and knees with her back perfectly arching. Looking at her ass in that position almost made me cum immediately. I inserted myself in her soaking pussy and she moaned again. The aim wasn't to make love, the aim was to fuck my anger and hurt away. I spanked her ass and she screamed which led to me doing it over and over again.

Her: ouch Lwandiso it hurts

Me: this is what you wanted andithi? You wanted me to fuck you so now shut up.

I continued with my slamming into her and again when I felt her orgasm building up, I pulled out of her then put her on top of me and picked her up and pinned her against the wall with just one leg wrapped around me. I sucked on her neck and boobs while rapidly fucking her and when I felt I was about to cum, I pulled out again

Me: get on your knees

Her: what for?

Me: just do it please

She obliged and looking at her in that position, being obedient and submissive just almost drove me over the edge. I directed my dick to her mouth and she was hesitant at first

Me: I'm a married man Ziya, I can't get home smelling like another woman's pussy. Clean your mess up please

I placed the tip of my dick on her mouth and she opened. She sucked me gently while caressing my balls. She wasn't as good as Lwa but she wasn't bad either. I picked up the pace from my side and she started gagging but I didn't care. I fucked her mouth until I came inside it and she started choking and rushed to the bathroom. I laughed a little before getting dressed. I checked my phone and I had a text from Mike and Lwa. Mike was telling me where I will meet them and I didn't bother checking Lwa's text. I washed my hands in the kitchen sink, dried them with the paper towels then called my cab. Ziya came back into the lounge still butt naked. This woman is truly blessed with a beautiful body. She wasn't impressed to see me all dressed up but she tried to hide it well

Her: leaving already?

Me: yeah. I still have to meet up with the guys for drinks

She moved closer to me, wrapped her arms around me before planting a soft peck on my lips.

Her: I was thinking maybe we should go for round two before we leave

Me: maybe next time. I already called the cab

Her: next time? Soso I didn't cum?

Me: lol but I did. You will cum next time and don't wear any panties to the club. Oh, and wear a dress

Her: mxm whatever

She tried walking away and I pulled her close to me then kissed her cheek. She is a great fuck after all.

Season 3

Insert 22

Soso

When my cab arrived, I told Ziya where she will find us then I left. This thing of leaving my car at the house was a mistake. Now I'm busy paying cab fares the whole night. On the way to the club, I kept reminiscing about the sex I just had with Ziya. Thinking about it still made my dick twitch and tingle a little bit. Had I known that her pussy was this good ngabe I hit that a long time ago

Driver: bruh we are here

I didn't even realize that we had arrived at the club. I paid then I got out the cab and texted Mike to come out. He came out within minutes, we did our handshake and he led me in

Mike: where are you coming from? Lwa has been looking for you

Me: fuck Lwa bruh. Where are you seated?

I followed him to our table then called the waiter over

Me: my brother ndicela undiphe a bottle of Jameson Select Reserve with Soda water and lots of ice

Waiter: alright

He walked away and I focused my energy on my friends

Me: kutheni kuyiFathers day apha? Ziphi izifebe majita?

Ntando: I thought this was a boys' night

Me: kwenzeka ntoni kwiBoys night kalok?

Luke: dude, are you OK?

Me: never been better ntwana yam

I saw a few hot girls sitting at a table with one bottle of Moet amongst the 6 of them so I went over to them

Me: molweni girls

Them: hey

Me: ndinguShaun mna. Ningobani nina?

Girl 1: ndinguBabalwa mna, these are my friends Lani, Loot, Ash, Kay and Zee

Me: nice to meet you guys. Would you like to join us at our table over there? We need a bit of female company

Babs: yeah sure.

They followed behind me while Mike organized one of the waiters to extend our table. These girls were definitely still in varsity, probably first or second year but no one was trying to date them, we all just wanted to have fun

Loot: so, do you guys work or go to school?

Marc: how old do we look to you?

Loot: maybe 22

Me: lol wow. We are 24, baby

She blushed a little and that's when I realized that these are kids.

Luke: how old are you?

Kay: 19 and 20. We are doing our second year

Just then Ziya texted that she is outside so I went to get her. She was dressed in a black and yellow tight fitting short dressed. I gave her a hug then kissed her cheek

Me: you look beautiful Miss Phakati

She flashed me a smile then she took something out of her bag and gave it to me. I opened my hand and realized that it was her lace panties

Ziya: as requested

I laughed then placed my hand on her waist and led her to our table but the guys were moving

Me: and now?

Luke: we are moving to the booths. There are too many of us now

Me: alright.

I helped the girls with their drinks and when we got to the booth, I sat between Ziya and Kay.

Me: ladies this is Ziya. Ziya that's Babs, Loot, Kay, Ash, Zee and Lani

They greeted each other, I didn't have to introduce her to the guys since they know her from the beach last year

Me: what should I get you to drink?

Ziya: cranberry and vodka please

Me: coming right up

I went over to the bar to get the bottle of vodka and juice and that's when I felt a hand on my waist. I turned around and it was Kay so I just smiled and pulled her closer

Me: what's up Kay?

Kay: nothing. I was checking if you are managing

I was in varsity once upon a time so I know how varsity girls hint when they want you and this little girl right here wanted me. She wasn't bad looking yena shame, its just that she was a child.

Me: lol don't worry about it, sweetheart. I've got it covered

Her: is she your girlfriend?

Me: who? Ziya?

Her: yeah

Me: nah she isn't. Masambe

She followed me back to the table and the drinking started properly. My phone was ringing nonstop until I decided to switch it off. I didn't need stress in my life at that moment, I just wanted to have fun. I leaned over to Ziya's ear as I placed my hand on her thigh

Me: still wanna cum?

She flushed as her cheeks turned red and she tried to close her thighs but I pushed them apart. This woman's body was doing things to my dick. I planted a kiss on her neck and she closed her eyes leaning back. The fact that there were so many people around us made it even more thrilling. I could feel everyone's eyes on us but I didn't care

Mike: ai mahn Soso kutheni ngoku?

Me: Mike, ntwana there are girls all over this table. Have fun mahn

As I slid my hand up Ziya's thighs, I felt a hand on my own thighs which made me stop on my tracks. Kay was sliding her hand towards my dick and started rubbing it. Oh, dear God have I died and gone to heaven? I lifted Ziya's dress but because it was dark, no one could see what was going on under the table. I inserted my fingers in her and she squealed but due to the music, no one heard.

Luke: Soso it's getting late and Ziya looks sleepy

I looked at her and her eyes were shut but I knew it wasn't because she was sleepy, it was because of my fingers that were deep in her pussy. She was soaking wet so my fingers went in easily. So here I was finger fucking Ziya while Kay was rubbing my dick, getting it harder with every rub. My thumb was working its magic on Ziya's clit while my fingers were ramming in and out of her.

Me: lol she isn't sleepy bruh. Its most probably the vodka taking its toll on her. Don't worry about her. I'll take care of her

I kissed her neck, gently biting it and that drove her over the edge as her walls tightened around my fingers and she came. By the time I took my fingers out, they were dripping wet. I kissed her cheek and she slowly opened her eyes, beaming from ear to ear. I poured myself a glass of whiskey and immediately downed it then got up to go to the bathroom. Since it was a weeknight, it wasn't packed. I walked in as the only guy that was in there walked out. I washed my hands before unzipping my pants to pee. As I was peeing, the last person I expected to see in the male bathrooms walked in

Me: Kay, what are you doing here?

Kay: I saw what you did to Ziya

Me: I don't know what you talking about

She looked at my dick as I peed and she smiled to herself. OK that's creepy so I just finished peeing and zipped up my pants

Her: Soso I want you

Me: lol join the queue baby girl.

Her: I'll suck your dick

Me: baby girl you are offering something I can get anywhere. Suka and let me get out of here.

I left her in the bathroom and went back to the table. I checked the time and it was 2:30am. Yeah no, it was about time I called it a night.

Me: ladies and gents, I'm calling it a night. I still have work ngomso

Mike: how are you getting home?

Ziya: I'll drop him off

Mike: Soso?

Me: I'll be fine ntwana.

I fist bumped all my friends then hugged the chicks and walked out with Ziya. I was drunk to another level but I could still keep my balance

Me: drop me off at the guest house

Ziya: which one?

I told her which one before passing out. I was woken up but the coldness of the air con and Ziya shaking me. I rubbed my eyes then stretched and yawned.

Her: we are here

Me: alright. Thanks baby neh. You were amazing tonight.

I put my hand in my pocket to fish for the key but I found her panties instead so I took them out

Me: these belong to you

Her: my gift to you

Me: lol thank you

I put them back in my pocket and walked out the car into the guest house. I struggled with the key of the room until the door opened from the inside.

Lwa: Soso!! Thank God you are OK

I moved her out the way and started taking my clothes off

Her: where have you been all night?

Me: I definitely wasn't with my ex. Unlike you

I threw myself on the bed before I heard her reply and I passed out almost immediately. After what felt like 10mins, I was woken up by someone shaking me. I slowly opened my eyes in annoyance

Her: wake up, you are going to be late for work

Me: hmmm what time is it?

Her: half 6

I sat up and my head was so heavy and painful. Damn how much did I drink last night? I got out of bed and I was naked. I wrapped my body in a towel then as I picked my pants up to get my briefs, lace panties fell out of my pocket. Woah where did they come from? They landed right in front of Lwa and she picked them up using a pen and looked at me with tears in her eyes

Me: I'm going to shower

Her: what's this Lwandiso?

Me: ipantie leyo Lwandile

Her: its not mine

Me: bendingatshongo nami ukuba yeyakho kalok

Her: uyangijolela Soso?

Me: yho hayike ndicela ukohlamba fondin. I have to get to work

Her: we are still talking Lwandiso. Who is she?

Me: jonga Lwa, I said all I have to say to you yesterday. We are done talking phof ke we are done mna nawe. Its over Lwa so whatever I did last night and who I did it with is none of your business. Phuma kum

I walked into the bathroom and took a shower. I could hear her sobs coming from the room but I wasn't going to comfort her. I needed space from her as soon as possible, I don't know how its going to work considering that we work together and we have children together. I don't care if she goes back to Atha but Loyiso and Qhawe will always be my sons. After I finished showering, I got dressed while she sat on the bed looking at me with red puffy eyes

Me: aren't you going to work?

Her: I'm on leave for the rest of the week

Me: oh, so what will you be doing today?

Her: I'm going to go home to fetch Lolz and Nomz

Me: what for?

Her: for the wedding fittings

Me: lol what wedding Lwandile? We are done. There won't be a wedding. Tchin lomntana

Her: I'm not going to give up on us just like that. We love each other Soso and yes, I made a mistake but I'm sorry baby

Me: mxm say hi to Atha when you go see him. I know theres no way you would go home and not see him

Her: I won't be going to him.

Me: lol whatever.

I texted Ziya asking her to pick me up and she agreed so now I was waiting for her

Her: baby I just want you to know that I forgive you for whoever you slept with last night

Me: I don't remember asking for your forgiveness. Lwa live your life and forget about Lwandiso, I'm definitely going to forget about you. Go be with the person you feel sorry for and leave me alone because how I feel doesn't matter to you

Season 3

Insert 23

Lwa

His words pierced through my heart like a spear. This guy spoke with so much disregard for my feelings, he acted without considering the consequences of his actions. Yes, I admit I was wrong for everything I did but I never cheated on him but he has the audacity to come home to me drunk and with panties in his pockets. No matter what I've done, its not enough to amount to the kind of disrespect he is giving me

Me: I should forget about you? Where do I even start with that considering that we share a life together. We have kids Lwandiso and we love each other

Soso: its funny how you remember all of this now whereas you left these kids with your brother so that you can go to your ex. Fuck it Lwa yaz you are so selfish. I can't deal with you

His phone beeped indicating an SMS then he started gathering his work things. Clearly, he was about to leave

Him: I'll see you around. I don't know when and how because I'm going back to the house after work

I just nodded because the lump in my throat wouldn't let me talk. Tears streamed down my cheeks when he walked out without even a kiss goodbye. I want to fix this but I don't even know where to start anymore, I know Soso loves me and he cares about me, its just that he is still angry right now but do I wait for him to calm down or do I keep pushing? Sometimes my life just moves faster than my years and I end up stuck without a way forward. I spent the rest of the morning in bed, crying my eyes out. My heart was breaking with every minute that passed and I didn't know what to do in order to make it stop. Around 12, I got out of bed, took a shower and dressed in black boyfriend jeans, a long-sleeved white T-shirt and black body warmer and white sneakers. I applied my make up then tied my weave. I didn't look miserable at all so I grabbed my phone and car keys then drove to the Smith residence. I needed to talk to an elder about this before it gets out of hand. I called Soso's mother when I was

outside and she opened for me. I parked at the garage then knocked on the door and went in

S's mom: wow this is a great surprise

We shared a hug before she led me to sit down in the lounge

Her: how are you my baby?

Me: I'm alright ma and you?

Her: what's wrong? You look far from alright?

You know when you are barely holding yourself together and then a person asks what's wrong and you just break down? Well that was me at that moment. Tears just uncontrollably fell on my cheeks and the more I tried wiping them, the more they fell. She came to sit next to me and held me tightly while I cried in her arms.

Me: I messed up ma. He hates me now and he doesn't want me anymore

Her: shh baby. Its OK

She rubbed my back until I was composed again and I got out of her embrace only to be met by her warm smile

Her: go wash your face so you can tell me what's going on

I nodded and headed to the bathroom. I looked at myself in the mirror and I looked horrible. My eyes were red and my make up was ruined. I washed my face, took in a few deep breaths then went back to the lounge. She was already waiting for me with a cup of tea

Her: here. This should calm you down

Me: thank you

I took a sip then placed it back on the table. She had her eyes on me the whole time so I can't back out of this anymore

Her: uthi kutheni na mntanam?

Me: uLwandiso uyangizonda ma. He found out ukuthi I've been in contact with the father of the twins and that I went to see him and now he wants nothing to do with me. He ended things between us and went drinking the whole of last night

She leaned back on the couch and folded her arms across her chest. I was ashamed to the point whereby I couldn't bring myself to look at her.

Her: Lwandile its never advisable to keep secrets from the man you love. Especially so close to the wedding

Me: I know ma but there won't be a wedding. Soso doesn't want me anymore

Her: but do you blame him? I raised that boy and I know everything about him. He is hurt so he won't talk to you about how he really feels because he doesn't trust you anymore. You betrayed his trust

I sighed because this woman was telling me things i already knew. I want to fix this

Me: I know ma but how do I fix it? I love Soso so much and I can't lose him. I just felt sorry for Atha, seeing him sitting on that chair wasn't easy because I knew the person he used to be before the drugs took over his life. When he told me, he is suicidal I thought of my kids. Yes, Soso is an amazing father to them but it is Atha's blood that flows through their veins. Its not easy to accept that someone who has given me so much could be no more in less than a month. He has changed and I wanted to remember him without hating him because I don't want that hate to spill over to my sons, who are a spitting image of him.

Now it was her that sighed while I continued to sip on my tea. It really was working in calming me down. We sat in silence for what felt like forever until she broke the silence

Her: baby you need to give him time to calm down and then sit him down and tell him your reasons. My son loves you and as a result I love you too but I am Lwandiso's mom before I am your mother-in-law so I'm disappointed in you but I'm not going to shun you out. We are family now and family sticks together. You are good for him and he is good too you. You guys might not believe in each other anymore but us as the family believe in you

I smiled faintly as I finished the rest of my tea then took the cup to the kitchen

Me: so, do I cancel the wedding?

Her: of course not. You and Lwandiso are getting married in 2 weeks.

Me: but ma he sai-

Her: leave him to me. Continue with the wedding preparations

Me: OK ma I have to get going. Thank you for listening and the advice

Her: anytime sweetie. This is your home too as much as it is Lwandiso's home and baby thank you for not mentioning that he cheated last night. You are a true wife for that

I creased my eyebrows in confusion and she just smiled

Her: like I said, I know my son and how he behaves when he is hurt. Please be patient with him. Love him even when he doesn't want you too and when it hurts you to. It might not seem like it right now but he is worth it

Honestly, I didn't want to think about what he did last night and with who. I was partially to blame for his behavior. Damn you Athandwe Dlamini. I curse the day you came into my life. Anyway, I said my goodbyes to Mrs Smith then drove home, to my parents' house. I still had to pick up Lolo and Noma. I plugged my phone to the car with an aux cord and played the Justin Bieber album and drove the 3hr journey. When I got home it was just after 4 and my mom was home preparing supper. She was so happy to see me. We hugged before I offered to help her but she declined

Mom: to what do we owe this wonderful surprise?

Me: bengikukhumbule mama and ngizolanda oLolo

Her: for the fittings?

Me: yebo. Niyaphila?

Her: yebo sweetie. I've missed you

Me: me too mom.

Her: so how are you and Lwandiso? Konke kusahamba kahle?

Me: uhm yebo mama. Konke kuright

Her: OK ke sthandwa sam. I'm not going to keep you ke nam because you must fetch your friends and still make it home to make supper for your husband

I smiled faintly just thinking about the so-called husband that wants nothing to do with me right now. I was missing my kids so much and I'm sure they were missing me as well but ke their father wants space and that's what I'm going to give him. Just until Monday though. 4 days is more than enough. After my little catch up session with mommy dearest, I called Noma telling her I'm on my way so she should be ready. Luckily for me, her and Lolz were together. We hugged and they got in the car

Lolz: chomi unqabile rhaa

Me: I know chomam but its this life thing

Nomz: it gets in the way

Me: wazi kahle wena mngani. So how have you guys been? What's new?

Nomz: Lolothando has a new man that we all don't approve of

Lolz: Nomalanga stop it. This isn't the time

Me: oh, OK who is this new man and why don't you guys approve?

They both went silent. Haaibo Kanti ngikhuluma ngedwa yini?

Me: guys?

Lolz: when I'm ready chomi I'll tell you all about it. Everyone is just overreacting nje

Me: OK, do I at least know him?

Nomz: you definitely do babe

Me: hmmm as long as its not any of my exes or brothers then I don't care who it is

Lolz: I'm glad to hear that

Nomz: I know Lwa, she will definitely mind but anyway I'm dropping it

My phone rang before I could say anything so I took the aux cord out and inserted earphones and answered

Me: Lwandiso

Soso: uphi?

Me: I'm driving back to PE. Why?

Him: apparently Mikaela has been crying nonstop since we left last night. My daughter hasn't slept a wink so I wanted to bring her to you

Me: babies can sense everything that's going on. Bringing her to me won't change anything.

Him: so, what must I do? Leave her to cry her life away?

Me: is Sedi still there?

Him: I asked her to stay at my parents' house while we sort this out.

Me: oh, so we are sorting thing out?

Him: mxm tell me when you are back and I'll bring Mikaela

Me: shap

I hung up and played music again. The conversation in the car was light and fun. We were catching up and they were telling me how much they can't wait to see the princess and my house. I've missed these souls. I dropped them off at the guest house, a different one from the one I was staying in. I didn't want them knowing my business especially right now. After dropping them off, I went to the house. The moment I drove through the gate, I could hear Mikaela screaming her lungs out. I parked outside the garage and rushed in. Soso had her in his arms, trying to keep her quiet. He looked surprised when he saw me but I didn't care, I just took my daughter and tried soothing her.

Soso: I said I'll come to you

Me: so, you were going to drive with a screaming baby in the car?

After 10mins, Kaela started falling asleep. My baby's face was even red from all the screaming she has been doing. I kissed her forehead then let her sleep

Season 3

Insert 24

Lwa

He kept his eyes glued on me without saying a single word and I didn't know what my next move should be so I just walked past him and headed to the kitchen and poured myself a glass of juice then sat on the high-rise chairs in the kitchen. He walked in and sat next to me without saying anything which just made the whole set up weird and awkward

Me: do you have something to say?

Soso: Lwandile why are you here?

Me: because my daughter needed me. I'm honestly not here for you. I'm going to leave soon

Him: OK good.

He took a sip of my juice then got up and headed for the lounge. I took out my phone and texted my friends in the whatsapp group. We agreed to meet up for breakfast the next day. As much as I wanted to keep them out of my business, I needed my friends to help me get through this. Soso and I are like strangers now yet I'm expected to continue with the wedding preps whereas he doesn't even want to marry me anymore. After 20mins, I finished my juice, rinsed my glass and placed it on the sink then walked into the lounge. Soso was now watching a movie while Mikaela slept on her sleeper on the couch

Me: Lwandiso where are my sons?

Soso: at my parents' house

Me: you split our family apart and yet you expect Yandisa to remain calm

He turned to face me with his arched eyebrows then clicked his tongue and continued watching the movie

Me: ngikhuluma nawe nje Soso

Him: andizomamela ububhanxa mna Lwandile. Ndim ngoku osplit(e) ifamily?

Me: well you are that one that kicked me out of our home, cheated on me and then sent the kids to your parents. Why didn't you send Mikaela as well? Did you want to get rid of everyone that wasn't your blood

Yho it was like I had poked him in the eye with those words. He got up furious and walked towards me and I walked back until my back hit the wall. He was furious, chewing the inside of his mouth and clenching his jaws

Him: uthini Lwandile?

I didn't respond. If he hits me then so be it but I'm not going to take back what I said. It makes no sense to send the twins away and keep Mikaela, who needs to be around older people more than the twins. I knew he sent them away because they are Atha's kids.

Him: you really want to see me pissed off neh? You are pushing my buttons because you want to get a reaction from me. I will not hesitate to fuck you up Lwandile, ask your boyfriend how good I am at fucking people up

Me: do it. If it will make you feel better then ngishaye. If it will make you listen to me and forgive me then its fine Soso. Fuck me up.

Our voices were now raised which resulted in Mikaela waking up and crying her lungs out

Us: You see what you did

Us: me? It was you

Then we paused for a second and looked at each other before laughing. I guess the simultaneous talking got us laughing

Us: lol I'll get her

Soso: don't worry, I'll get her. You need to get going before it gets late. I don't like you driving in the night

My smile soon turned into a frown. For a moment there I actually thought... Mxm what did I even think vele? Soso wouldn't forgive me that easily. I took my bag and car keys then moved closer to him so I could give my daughter her goodnight kiss. I kissed her tiny lips and her forehead before planting a kiss on her father's cheek

Me: I'll see you around Soso

Him: alright. I'll bring the boys to see you ngomso

Me: thank you. Goodnight

He flashed me a smile as I walked towards the door. I drove out the gate with a heavy heart. I wanted to cry but at the same time I wanted to hold it together. I drove to McDonald's, bought food then drove to guest house. I ate before getting in bed with my phone. I checked social media then played games until I fell asleep. I was soon woken up by my vibrating phone from under the pillow. I took it out and answered without checking the caller ID

Me: hmhhh

Soso: ulele?

I checked the time and it was 1:30am so he definitely knew I was asleep

Me: what do you want Soso?

Him: uhambe kakuhle?

Me: yeah. I'm sure you knew that when I answered the phone

Him: suba rude kalok Lwa. Ndiyakucheekisha tchin

I sat up because now my sleep was gone. I rubbed my eyes then switched the bedside lamp on

Me: what's going on?

Him: I can't fall asleep. I'm not used to sleeping alone so ngoku ndisengxakini

Me: oh askies

Him: can I come over? I really need to sleep

I sighed loudly. First, he asks for space, kicks me out of his house twice then now he wants to sleep next to me

Me: yeah, its fine

Him: OK please open the door because I'm outside.

He hung up before I got a chance to respond. I put on my silk gown then went to open the front door and there he was, wearing his gorgeous smile but I wasn't going to smile back. I moved out the way as he walked in then ngakhiya umnyango and followed him into the bedroom

Him: uxolo MaHadebe ngokukvusa.

Me: mmm

I took the gown off and got in the bed, he took his clothes off and remained in his briefs then joined me in bed. I had my back to him and he was laying on his back facing up. As I slowly drifted off to sleep, I heard him call my name

Me: mmmm

Him: yizapha

I ignored him because I wanted to sleep not cuddle

Him: MaHadebe yizapha kalok

I slowly turned around and he snaked his arm around my waist and brought me closer to him. I put my head on his chest and he kept his arm around me. He kissed my forehead while rubbing my back

Him: you hurt me Lwandile. You hurt me really badly

Yho hayike was Lwandiso being serious right now? Its almost 2am and he wants to have this conversation. I wasn't going to say anything, I'm going to let him talk and then sleep

Him: you forgot about me the moment Atha came back into your life. You made me feel like all I'll ever be to you is a place holder for Atha. That given the chance, you would go back to him in a split second. I understand that you guys were friends for a long time and you dated for a while as well and maybe you haven't completely gotten over him. I've done everything in my power to show you that I love you but that's not enough for you. I don't want to marry you while you are still so confused.

Me: I'm not confused. Its you that I want. I swear to you, its you that I love

Him: and Atha? You can't deny that usamthanda. Don't lie to yourself because you want to please me. It won't help either of us. Just be honest with yourself and be honest with me.

How could he think that I still love Atha? Since when does feeling sorry for someone lead to a person falling in love with them? This is crazy. I don't love Atha, I love Soso. I just felt sorry for him. That's all there is to it. I just wish people could stop saying I love Atha when I don't. Its starting to annoy me

Me: I don't love him. I really don't love him

Him: I hope you are being honest with yourself because if along the line, it comes out that you lied to me, I'll never forgive you. I can't go through this again. You turned me into someone I'm not, I told you I'd never cheat on you and I was keeping that promise until last night. I hate hurting you Lwa and I hate seeing you cry

Oh, so he really did cheat on me. I tried getting up but he held me tighter. I wanted to look him in the eyes and find who it was that he fucked while I laid in bed crying my eyes out and worried sick about him.

Me: who is she?

Him: Lwa it doesn't matter now. I still want space, we both have a lot of stuff to figure out.

Me: and the kids? They are my biggest worry

Him: I'll take them to my parents' house. Mikaela and MaRose as well and the reason I didn't take her there in the first place is because she was crying nonstop and mom said its because she needed her mother. It doesn't mean I love the boys any less

Me: oh

Him: yeah. Masilale MaHadebe

Me: great idea

He kissed my forehead and I slowly drifted off to sleep. It felt weird at first but I was too tired to analyze the situation. He must have turned around in the middle of the night because when I woke up in the morning, he had his arms around me and

holding me tightly. I was now on my side. His scent was all over the room and it brought a smile to my face. Can this part of our relationship come to an end so we can get back to loving each other the way we are meant to? I tried getting out of the bed and he held me tighter then kissed my neck.

I turned around and he was still fast asleep. Soso's reflexes are on some other level but luckily his alarm went off and he stretched to switched it off before getting up.

Soso: morning

Me: uhm hey

He went to the bathroom to wash his face then came out and started getting dressed

Me: are you leaving?

Him: yeah. I need to go back to the house to shower and get dressed

Me: oh OK

He got fully dressed then got on the bed, I was under the covers and he was on top of them. He kissed my forehead then looked at me, I smiled and looked away

Him: kutheni ublusha ekseni fondin? Uright

I burst into laughter as my cheeks turned pink. I covered my mouth with my hand and continued laughing

Him: lol awusemhle MaHadebe. Ndiyahamba ngoku neh but ndizawubuya xa ndiphuma emsebenzini. Ndizoza noLoyiso noQhawe

Me: lol OK.

He kissed the tip of my nose and I blushed again. What was happening here? What's wrong with my face right now?

Him: lol I'll see you later. Ndikhuphe kalok

I got up, put my gown on and wore my slippers then walked him to the main door. It was still early so it was dark and cold. I clutched my gown close to my chest to feel warmer.

Me: OK this is goodbye. Kuyabanda la

Him: yiza ndiphuze before I go

Me: huh? I thought we are broken up

He pulled me closer to him then hugged me. I swear Soso gives the world's best hugs. He pulled out from the hug then pecked my lips

Him: lol stop blushing tchin. Go back inside before you catch a cold

I waved goodbye then walked back into the house and got in bed. I tried sleeping again but I couldn't, the bed suddenly felt bigger, colder and emptier. I cuddled the pillow he was sleeping on which still had his scent. He isn't perfect, he messed up, I messed up as well but we love each other.

Season 3

Insert 25

Soso

I drove all the way to the house with a bit of a smile andaz noba kutheni because mna ndisasifuna ispace, ingxaki yam ukuba Lwa is my life. There are certain things I can't do without her and last night showed me how true that is. Anyway, I parked outside the garage, unlocked the front door then made my way upstairs. I took a shower, moisturized my body then wore my boxers and vest and made my way to the laundry room. MaRose walked in dressed in a gown and holding a pan and dishing up spoon. I laughed like crazy when I saw her

MaRose: yho bhuti undothusile. Bendicinga ukuna kungeni isela

Me: lol ubuzombetha ngespoon ma?

She looked at the things she was holding and started laughing as well. She looked funny nyan, like those people from the movies abangakwaz ukubetha abantu

Me: you can go back to bed ma. Akukhonto

Her: zisa apha ndikuncede

Me: usure?

Her: ewe. Go eat

I smiled before walking out the laundry room and into the kitchen. I poured myself a bowl of cereal and sat on the counter. It was 7am and I was really early but I guess its better to be early than late. Just as I was rinsing my bowl, my phone rang. I checked the caller ID and it was Ziya. I declined the call but she kept calling.

MaRose: nansi ishirt yakho.

She handed me my shirt and my chinos the I kissed her cheek

Me: enkosi ma. Undincendile

She smiled before walking towards the nursery and I walked upstairs to get dressed. By the time I was done, it was 7:30am but I decided to head to the office anyway. I walked into the nursery and the screaming princess was fast asleep. She looked so

beautiful and so much like her mother. I kissed her little face then I snapped a few pictures of her then I left. I played la album ka Emtee and jammed to Roll Up as I drove to the office. I was the first person there so I settled in my office and admired my gorgeous princess then I forwarded the pictures to her mom who called me back almost immediately

Me: morning beautiful

I could sense her blushing on the other side of the line as she let out a chuckle

Lwa: lol what's going on with you today? You so different from how you were yesterday

Me: lol ndihappy mahn Lwa, ndiyeke. Uyambona ubhabha wethu ukuba mhle nyan

Her: ngimkhumbule yaz. She looks so peaceful in her sleep

Me: yeah and not screaming for once. Anyway, what are you doing today?

Her: breakfast with the girls then I'm seeing my boys later today

Me: so, no lunch plans?

Her: nah not yet

Me: jonga please meet me for lunch. I want to put everything to bed. I just want us to talk without screaming and shouting at each other

Her: alright. I'm OK with that

Me: enkosi MaHadebe. Ubenemini emnandi mntana. Wonwabe ne

Her: lol enjoy your day too Lwandiso

I hung up and started on my work. The rest of the stuff started walking in a few minutes later.

*

*

Lwa

After my call with Soso, put my phone in the charger and got out of bed. I took a shower then wore light blue cropped high rise jeans, a peach long sleeved hooded

top and white roshe Nike sneakers. I applied my make up and pink lipstick then called Lolz

Lolz: I hope you are on your way

Me: lol are you guys even ready yet?

Her: well I am but of course Noma isn't

Me: lol OK I'll fetch Palesa and Lesedi first then come get you guys

Her: great idea. See you now now love

Me: mcwa mcwa boo

I hung up grabbed my bag with all my essentials, locked up and drove to the Smith residence. Sadly, I knew my boys will be in school so I won't see them. I parked at the gate then called Mrs Smith to open for me and I walked in. When I got to the door, I took a deep breath, put a smile on my face then walked in.

Me: good morning family

S's mom: morning sweetie. You look good

We shared a hug then I dropped myself on the couch, since my friends weren't done yet

Me: how are the boys? I hope they are not troublesome

Her: they are sweet little angels but they miss their mother. They ask for you every few hours. Especially Loyiso

Me: lol he has always been a mama's boy shame but I do miss them. Soso promised to bring them later today

Her: oh, so you guys are talking?

Me: yes, I guess we are but obviously we still have a long way to go

Her: marriage isn't a sprint dear, its a marathon. Take your time baby

Just then my friends came downstairs looking lavishing. We shared hugs then said our goodbyes to Mrs Smith

Sedi: babe what's going on with you and your bae?

Me: nothing why?

Her: uhm you left and your daughter cried all night then he came back alone the next day and asked me to stay at your parents' house

Me: he came back alone because I had to fetch Nomz and Lolz. Soso and I are fine

Pali: well Mike tells me th-

Me: guys can we not spend our morning analyzing my relationship. Kea le kopa tu

Them: fine

The rest of the drive to the guest house was a quiet one. I called Nomz as we were approaching the guest house and they were ready. When I arrived, they were already standing outside. They got in the car and I drove to town

Lolz: Pali and Sedi. Its good to see you guys again

Pali: it's been a while

Sedi: I hope I find a man while I'm this side. This single life is tough on me guys

Lolz: isn't Jason still single?

I choked on my saliva when I heard that name. I haven't heard it in a while yaz and I was caught by surprise

Nomz: are you OK?

Me: hmmm just had a tickle in my throat. So where are we having breakfast?

Them: spur

Me: lol OK choir.

We kept the conversation light until we got to spur. The waitress took our orders and then the interrogation began

Nomz: I want to see Kaela after this breakfast

Lolz: why didn't you bring her?

Me: aibo guys its too cold.

Well that was a blatant lie because it wasn't that cold but I'd have to get Soso's permission for such things right now because uhlala naye okwamanje

Sedi: well in that case, we can go to your house after breakfast and see her

Me: uhm I'll check with Soso first

Nomz: kanti isn't that your house as well?

Pali: I guess its a matter of the head of the household has to approve first

Sedi: death by head of the household

We all burst into laughter as the waitress brought our food. It felt good to be surrounded by my friends. It brought back the days of varsity and high school. I felt a sense of belonging since I've been sort of an island this year, just being on my own but now I have my besties

Lolz: call Soso girl. We want to see Mikaela kalok or ndizomfounela ngokwami

Me: call down.

I took my phone out and dialed Soso's number and put the phone against my ear

Nomz: loudspeaker chomam

Lolz: Ai tchin Nomalanga

Me: mtshela Lolz

Soso picked up on the second ring and I smiled at the sound of his voice. Yho I feel like a teenager experiencing her first crush.

Soso: mama kaYandisa

Me: tata wabo

Him: miss me already?

Me: lol you wish. The girls want to see Mikaela, do you mind if we go to the house for a few hours? I promise we won't stay lo-

Him: relax Lwa. That's your house as much as it is mine. I don't mind having your friends there.

Me: alright thanks

Him: no need to thank me. We are still on for lunch, right?

Me: yeah, we are

Him: OK MaHadebe ndizakubona ngoko

We hung up and my attention turned to the girls

Nomz: and? Utheni?

Me: we will go to her after breakfast. I just hope she is awake

Pali: well I have to go work after breakfast so you guys have fun

Lolz: kanene uyaphangela wena Pali

Nomz: nami ngiyasebenza nje

Sedi: even me

Lolz: OK guys I get it, I'm the only unemployed one here

Me: lol uyaphapha nje

Lolz: we better get wine sometime today. I've been sober for too long.

We all laughed and continued eating. After breakfast, I dropped Pali off at the office then drove to the house. When we got there, MaRose was still cleaning so we chilled outside and Yandisa was still sleeping so it worked out

Nomz: mngani uyashada nje ngempela in two weeks.

I smiled because that is still in Soso's hands. He still hasn't said he wants me, all I've been hearing is how much he doesn't want to marry me but I'm still keeping hope alive.

Sedi: we have to throw you a kitchen party since we didn't throw you a baby shower for the princess

Lolz: with strippers I hope

Sedi: lol o rata bashemane Lolz

Nomz: I wonder what Laa would say about that

Me: askies? Did you say Laa as in Landile? The one and only Landile

Nomz: yep girl. The one and only. Your Laa

Lolz: tchin Noma he isn't her Laa

Me: you guys are dating?

Nomz: I told you ukuthi you are going to mind

Me: aibo I don't mind. I'm just shocked. I'm happy for you Lolz

Nomz: I just hope she doesn't turn out to be Aviwe 2.0. Ngiyamaz uLandile mina, he will always love you Lwa.

Lolz: seriously Nomz? Mxm uyadika rhaa

She stormed into the house and I just gave Noma the "what the fuck" look and she just shrugged her shoulders. Then MaRose came out to us to tell us that she is done and Yandi is up so she is going to bath her. We walked into the house and sat in the lounge

Sedi: Vuzu please

Me: of course, babe. I'm going to check on Lolz

I handed her the remote then went to knock on the bathroom door. I knocked a few times before she opened for me. I walked in, sat on the edge of the bathtub while she sat on the toilet seat. She had been crying and I don't know why because her and Nomz are always going at each other, she should be used to it by now

Me: are you OK?

She nodded while wiping her face

Me: you sure?

Lolz: ewe. I didn't want you to find out the way you did. Bendizokuxelela ngokwam.

Me: it fine mahn. Its not like Laa and I were ever a thing but please don't take Noma's words lightly. Uyaz ukuthi kwenzekani kuAviwe and then she started hating me. I don't want you to hate me

Her: seriously Lwa? Did you ever stop for a second to think that Laa got over you?
Gosh you are so full of yourself.

She got up and left me in the bathroom. Yho haike ngizamile so if this blows up in her face then angizingeni. I got out the bathroom to join the others in the lounge. There was clear tension between Lolz and I and I wasn't going to speak up shame. I've said all I wanted to say about lento yakhe noLaa.

Season 3

Insert 26

Lwa

My friends couldn't help but fall in love with Mikaela, its just how my baby is shame. They took pictures and videos of her and she behaved throughout the whole time

Nomz: I think I want a baby now guys. Yandisa is beyond adorable

Me: have one chomi. Babies are a blessing

I said this while kissing my daughter's forehead. She was busy with her teether and paying no attention to me

Sedi: are you still going to have more kids? Or are you done now?

Me: maybe one more. Hopefully another girl then I'll be done but that will be in 5years or so. Definitely not now

Lolz got up to take Kaela and I gave her to her. She was still sending a bad vibe towards me and honestly, I didn't care. I was over her little tantrum earlier. Around 12 my phone rang and it was Soso so I went to take the call in the kitchen

Me: hello

Soso: hey did I catch you at a bad time?

Me: nah not at all. What's up?

Him: ohk uhm let's meet at Panarotti's in 20mins

Me: OK I'll be there

Him: you sure you are OK? You sound offish

Me: Lwandiso I'm fine

Him: alright

I hung up, rushed upstairs to freshen up and decided to change my shoes. I wore nude heels instead but now the shoes didn't match the top so I change into a black and white long-sleeved crop top and a black long cardigan. I checked myself in the mirror and I was good to go. I made my way downstairs and all the heads turned

Sedi: where are we going?

Me: I am meeting my husband to be for lunch

Nomz: gosh you guys are too adorable for words.

Lolz: its what people in relationships do all the time, its not that cute

I raised my eyebrows at her and she didn't bother looking my way so I ignored her. I grabbed my phone and my car keys then kissed my daughter and headed for the door

Me: guys please behave.

Sedi: bring wine babe

Me: alright I will

I blew them air kisses then walked out. I got in my car and drove to town. Soso was already there because I saw his car in the parking lot which means I'm late. I checked myself again on the mirror in the car, took in a deep breath then got out. The walk towards Panarotti's felt so long, my heart was in my throat and I started getting nervous. When I saw him sitting at the table, I walked towards him, flashed him a smile then sat down

Me: sorry I'm late

Soso: its OK. I haven't been waiting long. You look beautiful by the way

I smiled while lowering my head. My cheeks were turning pink all over again.

Him: lol you look like a teenager

Me: lol uyaphapha

We ordered pasta and drinks then after the waiter left us, he took my hands into his hands and looked at me, I looked away

Him: ndicela undijonge Lwandile

I slowly lifted my head and looked at him. Those gorgeous golden-brown eyes captured my soul and I immediately got lost in them. It made it worse when he smiled, his perfectly white teeth got my heart racing

Him: ndicela uxolo for not acting like a man when I should have. Two wrongs don't make a right, they create more problems that could have been easily avoided.

I knew he was talking about whoever he fucked that night, the person he is hiding from me for whatever reason.

Me: can I ask you something?

Him: anything

Me: remember the time Njalo came to your parents' house and you comforted her because she was in a bad space or something?

He sighed loudly before nodding his head and breaking the eye contact we had. Maybe he knew where I was going with this but I was going to continue anyway

Me: imagine if I went on a rampage and fucked a random person after that, would you have forgiven me?

He removed his hand from mine then used both his hands to secure his head while he looked at me without responding

Me: would you have forgiven me Lwandiso?

Him: most probably not

Me: so why expect me to forgive something you wouldn't forgive? It has become a habit with you, when we fight or have problems, you leave me at home to find comfort between the legs of another woman

Him: that's not true. I find comfort between your legs but it was you that told me that you are not my punching bag andithi?

Me: so now its my fault that you cheated on me? Seriously Soso?

I clapped once before leaning back and folding my arms across my chest. Now I've heard it all

Him: jonga Lwa when I'm pissed off, I want to take out my frustrations just like every normal person so either I punch something or someone or I fuck someone. Its just the way I am and all along its been you that I've been fucking but you said I'm

disrespecting you by doing it. I wasn't going to hit you so I left. I have issues fondin but I hate cheating because I wouldn't want to be cheated on

The waiter brought our food and I dug in almost immediately but Soso didn't eat. Instead he just looked at me like he was anticipating an answer from me

Me: what?

Him: are you not going to say anything?

Me: who was it? Who did you fuck?

Him: why does it matter?

Me: I want to know. Angithi we are putting this issue to bed so ngifuna ukwazi

He sighed loudly for the second time in less than an hour then bowed his head in shame

Him: it was Ziya

My eyes immediately shot wide open. Now I see why he didn't want to tell me who it was. I love Lwandiso but honestly sometimes he can be a real idiot

Me: oh, wow I hope you used a condom especially considering Ziya's history with sugar daddies

He took a gulp of his juice then his eyes wandered the room.

Me: Lwandiso you did use a condom, right?

Him: I pulled out

Me: what the fuck? Yho ungehlule Lwandiso. Ai udom ngempela. What if she gave you a disease? What if you made her pregnant? You really are on a mission to destroy us yaz

Him: I pulled out andithi ndiyakuxelela. I didn't have condoms on me, its not like I was planning on cheating that night

Me: hmmm

I continued eating my pasta without paying any attention to him. I didn't have any tears left in me and what would crying change? I'm in love with a selfish bastard that only thinks with his penis when he is angry.

Him: look I'll take an HIV test if it will make you feel better and I got those emergency ARVs phezolo. I'm clean baby. I promise

Me: for your sake I really hope you are because I will leave you. You and Ziya will sail off into the sunset together because I will not settle for the mess you have started

Him: lol yes ma'am. I love you baby and I really am sorry.

Me: I know and I know

Him: you can come home now

Me: nah. Ngizobuya Monday

Him: haw baby I thought we were good now

Me: we are good. I just need time that's all

Him: oh

We had the rest of our lunch in an awkward silence. When we were done he settled the bill and we walked out towards our cars. I unlocked my car and he held my arm and pulled me towards him then held me tightly before kissing my head. He let out a sniff and I knew he was crying. One thing about my man is that he hardly gets emotional. It takes a lot for him to shed a tear

Him: I'm sorry Lwa. I really am sorry. Tell me what I have to do to make this right and I'll do it. Please

Me: take the day off. Let's go back to the guest house and just spend some alone time together

Him: what about your friends? You can't desert them like that.

Me: Lwandiso we need this. I can't forgive you overnight but I do love you and I don't see myself with anyone apart from you so can we just take this one day at a time. My friends will have to understand. I'll just reschedule with Talent

Him: or you could tell him to go to the house.

He kissed my forehead and I look up to meet his gaze. His eyes were watery but he smiled through it.

Him: enkosi baby.

Me: I didn't say I forgive you. I'm just taking it one day at a time

Him: OK but usandithanda andithi?

Me: asambe Soso.

I got in my car and he got in his then he followed me to the guest house. I called Talent and he agreed to go to the house for Nomz and Lolz fittings and I'll have to do mine on Monday since today was already Friday. Anyway, he parked next to me and we walked in together. I sat on the bed and he sat next to me

Me: my friends are going to be so mad at me

Him: ndikuxelele kodwa baby

Me: they will be fine

Him: OK so where to from here?

Me: I'll come home on Monday. In the mean time, we are burying everything after the HIV results come back

He gave me that "are you serious" look and I was dead serious. I'm not putting my life in danger because of his stupidity.

Him: ndiyakukhumbula kalok baby.

Me: HIV results first then we can have that conversation

Him: lol but are we good though? Right now?

Me: you've asked that question 20 times already in different ways and my answer is still the same. One day at a time.

He leaned in for a kiss and I met him halfway. How I've been longing for these lips though and the moment our lips touched my heart started racing again and I pulled

out of the kiss. We laid on the bed cuddling and talking nonsense which included a lot of laughs here and there. He tickled me a lot and I was laughing like a little girl

Him: I've missed this. I never want this to end mamazi. I want to be this happy with you all the time so please marry me. I promise I'll be the man that you want

Me: let's not talk about serious things okwamanje please. Let's just enjoy the moment

He started getting a worried look on his face and I knew exactly what it meant. So, I put him out of his misery

Me: Lwandiso

Him: Lwandile

Me: ngisakuthanda. A lot. But you need to start appreciating my love for you. I'm not always going to be around so if I start feeling unappreciated, I will take my kids and go home. We have a good thing going and we love each other. That's all that matters. Yes, trust has been broken but if we work on it, we can rebuild it and be good all the time. I'll come home on Monday and we will take it from there. OK?

He smiled then nodded and pecked my lips. I rested on his chest with his arms around me. I wanted this moment to last forever but sadly it couldn't because at some point he had to fetch my kids and I had to fetch my friends but we made sure to enjoy it while it lasted.

Him: I love you MaHadebe

Me: I love you too Smith

Season 3

Insert 27

Soso

The next two weeks flew by quite quickly. Lwa and I were good again, well I could tell that she hasn't completely forgiven me but we were not fighting anymore and she had moved back into the house. The twins turned 3 a week ago and Lwa and I hosted a party for them which made my boys really happy and of course I got them lots of presents. Today was the 3rd of September, 2 days before Lwa and I say I do. I woke up to her trying to sneak in a kiss. I flashed a smile and looked her and she smiled shyly

Me: I caught you in the act Mrs Smith

Lwa: lol I don't know what you are talking about. I was removing an eye lash from your eyes. I didn't want it to get in your eye

I pulled her towards me and smashed my lips on to her and we shared a long slow kiss then I broke it before it got heated

Me: morning beautiful

She smiled again shyly, she honestly looked like a teenager. She was happy and blushing almost all the time which made me happy. I'm my happiest when she is happy as well. We stayed in our cuddling position without exchanging any words between us. Ndaze ndacimela mna, just enjoying the moment but seconds later I felt Lwa shaking me

Her: hayi baby wake up

Me: andilalanga kalok MaHadebe, ndiyacinga

Her: yeah right. Get up and go take a shower. I'm going downstairs to prepare breakfast for everyone

Her whole family was here staying with us so it was a bit crowded but the twins loved it since Alwande was here as well so they had someone to play with. I wanted to let her go but the raging boner I had couldn't allow me to

Me: yima kalok baby. Its still early and mna ndikukhumbule

Her: how can you miss me when I'm here?

Me: uJunior misses his queen.

We haven't had sex in a month. Ever since I slept with Ziya, she has been denying me access to her queen even though my test results stated that I was negative. I pulled her on the bed and got on top of her, making sure that my junior is directly on her queen then started moving on top of her while planting kisses on her neck

Her: hayi Lwandiso suka kimi. I need to go make breakfast

Me: this will be my breakfast. Ndiyakucela baby, ndizoyifaka kancinci. I just want to feel the heat

Ndandixoka. If she gave me access, I'm shoving my whole dick into her cervix, its been way too long

Her: maybe later. Suka

She pushed me off, fixed her gown then looked for her slippers around the room

Me: but baby iwrong lento. Jonga uJunior ustressed njani

She came towards me, planted a kiss on my cheek and walked out the room. I squirmed around the bed, slamming my fists on the bed in frustration. After a while, I got in the bathroom, took my clothes off, turned the water on and walked into the shower booth. My boner wasn't planning on going down. I placed my hand on it and started rubbing it. Images of my wife popped in my mind as I rubbed my dick harder and faster until I shot my cum on the glass of the shower booth. After that I was fine enough to shower then cleaned the shower booth. I can't leave evidence of such in the bathroom I share with my wife. When I was done showering, I got dressed in caramel chino shorts and a baby blue v-neck T-shirt and Adidas flip-flops. I sprayed my cologne, put on my black leather wrist watch and made my way downstairs. Ndafumana iintwana zami zijonge icartoons with their cousin and little sister. Kaela could sit on her own now so she was making baby sounds and not focusing on the TV

Me: molweni

Twins: molo tata

Lwande: molo lume

Kaela: dadadadadada

My princess is always the highlight of my morning. She couldn't speak but she made these baby noises of hers that sounded a lot like dad. I kissed the older kids then picked Kaela up and went to the kitchen. MaRose was preparing her porridge.

Me: molo MaRose

MaRose: molo sana lwami. Uright?

Me: ewe ndiright ma, unjani?

Her: ndiphilile

Me: ndizomtyisa ngokwam uYandisa

She smiled before handing me the bowl of baby cereal. I kissed my baby girl's cheek as I sat down in the dining area to feed her. I scooped the first spoon and she opened wide but the moment the porridge touched her tongue, she spat it out, resulting in my T-shirt being covered in baby food

Me: Mikaela you are making daddy dirty. Eat your food

She looked at me and started giggling, clearly mocking me. The rest of the feeding didn't get any easier. She clearly doesn't like this porridge but give her yogurt and custard and she will want to like the bowl. By the time I was done, I had more porridge on my T-shirt than she had in her stomach

Me: Loyiso

Loy: tata wam

Me: yiza kum

He came running into the dining area

Him: umdaka tata

Me: I know boy. Yiya kuGogo kaYaya akunike iwaslap kaYaya

The way the twins are so territorial, they call MaRose uGogo kaYaya but my parents and Lwa's parents are their grandparents but not Yandisa's grandparents. After a

while he came back with the wet cloth which I used to wipe Kaela's face and hands then I went into the kitchen to put the bowl in the sink. Lwa took one look at me and started laughing like crazy

Lwa: lol you and your princess are always making a mess

Me: lol she didn't like daddy's T-shirt without the porridge deco. Andithi baby. Andithi nana kaSoso. Yithi Soso nana.

She giggled and added drool onto my already dirty shirt. Yho this child thixo. I took her to MaRose and went upstairs to change my T-shirt.

*

*

Lwa

I was starting to feel bad for not having sex with Soso, its not like I wasn't horny because trust me when I say my queen was yearning for his touch and more especially the touch of his junior but I was going to hold on until our wedding night. I want to be so hungry for him that night that he feels obliged to make long everlasting love to me for the whole night. After he disappeared out the kitchen with his daughter, I finished up making the breakfast then KK came downstairs just in time to set the table

KK: morning sis

Me: morning little one. Are the parents up?

Him: nah. Not yet. Bhut' Nami and sis Phiwe are up though

Me: OK good. I'll just keep mom and dad's breakfast in the oven. Please set the table

Him: OK

I gave him the plates and cutlery. Everyone was going to dish up for themselves so I placed the serving dishes on the table then placed the two jugs of juice as well. Soso came down with my brothers and Phiwe who was starting to show. She was 4 months pregnant with a baby boy.

Phiwe: you should have woken me up to help you sis

Me: hell no. Firstly you are a guest in my home and secondly you are pregnant

Nami: uyezwa baby. Kuthiwa guest in my home lol

Me: musa ukuphapha Onami

We all sat around the table with the kids and MaRose, Kaela was on her uncle's lap. She liked Sakhile more than all her other uncles. Anyway, I said grace and we all dug in. After breakfast, I placed all the dishes in the dishwasher and started it while I went upstairs to change. I changed into black jeggings, a white loose T-shirt and black and gold thong sandals. I applied minimum makeup with my watermelon labello. I was meeting up with the girls for our final fittings with Talent. Soso walked in as I was checking myself out and he started whistling. He wrapped his arms around my waist from the back and slowly blew hot air on my neck which immediately gave me goosebumps

Soso: you look gorgeous baby

Me: lol thank you my love. What are you doing today?

Him: fittings, checking on the catering and cake tasting then later I'm meeting up with the pastor

Me: such a busy day. I'll see you at the cake tasting ke muntu wam

I grabbed my bag, phone and car keys then headed for the door

Him: so awuzondiphuza ngoku?

I smiled faintly which led to a mini blush session. God, I love this man though. He gives me the most amazing butterflies in the world. I walked back to him, wrapped my arms around his neck and his hands immediately went for my butt, giving it a gentle squeeze while my lips made contact with his. He slowly parted his warm lips and we shared a short kiss which I broke then pecked his lips. He smiled which made me smile then I walked away but not before he playfully spanked my ass. I walked out the room smiling from ear to ear and bumped into my parents

Mom: you are glowingly beautiful

Dad: abantu abamithi abaglowayo

Me: lol and happy people dad.

I kissed both their cheeks then we walked downstairs together. I took their food out the oven and served them then took Mikaela, the twins and Alwande followed behind me

Phiwe: ndiyashiyeka mna?

Me: lol asambe babe. The more the merrier

Soso: in your polo?

Me: eish ngcela ungboleka eyakho imoto baby

Dad: take my car princess. uLwandiso naye uzobe ehamba nabantu

Me: thanks dad

I rushed over to the dining table, where he was still having his breakfast, and kissed his cheek then took the car keys and left mine. My dad's car is a Renault Koleos so the kids fit perfectly in the backseat. I connected my phone to the car via Bluetooth then played music

Phiwe: so how are the nerves?

Me: they haven't kicked in yet yaz. I think its because of all the drama we had to go through to get here.

Her: lol there is always drama. Men are full of drama phof they can't keep it in their pants

Lwande: keep what mommy?

Me: lol I'm looking forward to the answer you are going to give her

Phiwe: haayi Alwande ncokola noLoyiso apho

Lwande: but mom

Phiwe: ndizakbetha

Lwande: I'm going to tell dad

Me: your daughter is such a daddy's girl

I wanted to say spoiled brat but considering the way Loyiso sometimes behaves, I'm not one to point fingers. When we got to the boutique, all my girls were there so we shared hugs then Palesa picked Loyiso up, Sedi took Mikaela and Nomz took Qhawe while Lolz took Alwande's hand and we walked in. We did the fittings ke and I got to try my dress on for the second time and I still can't get over how gorgeous it is. It had a lace finish at the top until the boob area and it was a mermaid dress with little bling. It was simple, beautiful and elegant.

Loy: muhle mama

Me: ncoah thank you my boy.

Sedi helped Mikaela into her dress, it was similar to mine.

Season 3

Insert 28

Soso

When we arrived at my designer's place, the excitement was in the air amongst my guys. It was myself, my dad, Mike, Ntando, Marcus, Luke and my cousin Brandon. Mike is my best man and the rest are groomsmen except for my dad of course. We did our fittings, took tons of pics. My suit was a 3-piece silver grey suit with a turquoise double-breasted waistcoat and turquoise pocket squares. The groomsmen were in black pants and silver-grey single-breasted waistcoats whereas Mike's suit was similar to mine, only difference is that he didn't have a waistcoat. After the fittings were done, we went to spur for an early lunch and bonding session. We got there, the waiter led us to our table then took our drinks orders, we all ordered alcohol and it wasn't even 12pm yet but I wasn't going to say anything.

Dad: so, who is planning the bachelor party?

Me: lol why taima? You want to come?

Dad: lol you want your mom to kill me?

Mike: Ntando and I are handling it. You are going to have the time of your life Soso
bruh

Me: wena noNtando? Now I know for sure that it will be crazy

Ntando: come Saturday morning, you are not even going to want to get married.

Me: lol never bruh. I love my wife like crazy ntwana

My phone rang and it was Lwa, I laughed to myself since I was just talking about her

Me: speak of the angel. Excuse me guys

Marc: it's speak of the devil wena

Me: dude you've met Lwa, there is nothing devilish ngalomntana

I got out the booth and headed for the door, spur was full so it was too loud. By the time I got outside, the phone had stopped ringing so I had to call back

Lwa: Lwandiso

Me: mkami

Her: lol in 48hrs time

Me: 48hrs and counting

Her: lol what time are we heading to the caterers?

Me: in 2 hrs sthandwa sam. I'm having lunch with the guys right now then we will head there straight after

Her: please don't be late and don't be drunk

Me: lol andisonxila mna baby. I can control my liquor

Her: that's the scary part. OK I'll see you then

Me: ndixelele kalok

Her: ndikuxelele nton?

She sounded so cute trying to speak Isixhosa with a Zulu accent. It just made me want to pull her out of the phone and kiss her. Crazy right?!

Me: ndixelele ukuba uyandithanda

Her: lol who said I love you?

Me: lol baby mahn

Her: lol I love you Soso

Me: uthandwa ndim my love

We made kissing sounds then we hung up. I stared at my wallpaper which is a picture of us and just smiled to myself for a few seconds before heading into the restaurant.

Luke: you took forever, did she change her mind about marrying you?

Me: fondin have you seen me? Show me a woman that wouldn't want to marry me. Ndimhle bruh, uyandibona nawe

Luke: tsek andiboninto apha. Andisostabane mna

We all broke into laughter as we sipped on our alcohol. By the time our food arrived, we were on our third round of drinks and talking nonsense with my boys. When I saw that some of them were getting tipsy, I settled the bill and we left. The last thing I need today is Lwa fighting with me because my friends are drunk. We drove in a convoy to the caterers, bumping Nasty C all the way there. When we arrived, the girls, parents and Lwa's family were there and Jason was also there. I tried not to get pissed off but my anger was winning this battle, especially because I wasn't sober. I parked outside the venue but I didn't get out the car. Instead I texted my mom and asked her to come to my car. As I waited, my dad knocked on my window, I rolled the window down but didn't look at him

Dad: are you ok?

Me: ewe tata. Ndimele umama

Him: alright kwedin

I rolled the window up again and ndanqenqa and waited for my mom while trying very hard to calm down. The more I looked at Jason's car, the more my anger levels rose. I clinched my jaws and chewed the insides of my cheeks. After what felt like forever, the passenger door opened and mom got in

Mom: is everything ok?

Me: mama kutheni uJason elapha?

My question came out as a stern whisper. I wasn't going to raise my voice to the woman that raised me, never in a million years and no matter how angry I am, I still showed her the utmost level of respect.

Mom: he said he wants to fix things between you guys before Saturday. He doesn't want to miss his brother's wedding. You don't have to forgive him Lwandiso but the least you can do is hear him out

I let out a heavy sigh then massaged the temples of my head. I'm clearly being tested apha. I nodded then we both got out the car. When we got inside, they were already serving the food so I planted a kiss on my lovely wife-to-be then took Qhawe and sat down with him sitting on my lap. We made small talk nentwana yam while we ate. Everyone engaged in a convo with each other and I wasn't going to entertain it.

Jason was 3 seats away from me and a seat away from Lwa. He would have small talk with her every now and then and it really pissed me off. After dessert, we were served the cakes. Our wedding cake has 5 different flavors for each tier. The parents' cakes are fruit cakes and so is the cake we are supposed to keep for Kaela's first birthday.

L's dad: nizowathini amakhekhe angaka?

Lwa: they will be served to the guests and some we will eat later, after the honeymoon or something

Lolz: where is the honeymoon?

Me: Miami

Nomz: please put me in your suitcase guys. Please. I love Miami

Everyone broke into laughter except me. I couldn't wait to get out of here

Jay: Soso can we talk

I looked up at him and laughed sarcastically. He can't be serious

Mom: Lwandiso. Please

I sighed then gave Qhawe to her and got up, walked towards the door with Jason following right behind me. I leaned against my car with my hands in my pockets

Jay: 2 more days until the big day

Me: that's what you wanted to talk about?

He cleared his throat and took a long pause

Him: uhm no. I wanted to apologize to you bro. I was out of line and I'm sorry

Me: hmhhh

Him: you are my brother and I shouldn't have looked at Lwa in anyway except as a sister. I'd like to come to your wedding.

Me: so, who was it? Was it mom? Did she tell you to apologize since your behavior has separated the family? Jonga ngqawa come if you want to, I don't care but know

that I will never forgive you for laying your filthy mouth on my girl. You know she sucked my dick the morning you kissed her? So how does my cum taste?

I chuckled before leaving him there and walking into the venue. Obviously, Jason and I will always be brothers but we will never be boys again.

*

*

Lwa

Judging by the mood Soso was in when he walked in, it was clear as daylight that he was not please with Jason being here and when they stepped out to talk outside, I got up with the intention to go with them. I know my man when he is pissed and last time these two spoke, Jason ended up unconscious in hospital

S's mom: let them be sweetie, they need to sort this out on their own

Me: but ma you kno-

Her: I trust him not to do anything crazy, you should too.

Mom: ok, what's next on the agenda?

I sighed and dropped myself onto the chair. My eyes refused to leave the door. They were taking too long to come back in

Mom: ngikhuluma nawe Lwandile

Me: askies mama, what was that?

Her: what do you still have to do?

Me: nothing. That's all for today. The rest is being handled by the wedding planner

Just then Soso walked in with a crooked smile on his face and Jason wasn't behind him. He sat down and finished the rest of his cake without saying a single word to anyone. After everything was done, we went our separate ways. Lolz has Landile's car for the weekend since he is only coming on Saturday with Enzo and Asemahle. When I arrived at the house, I went straight upstairs into our bedroom and threw myself on the bed. I was tired and too full. As I was about to fall asleep, my phone rang and I answered it without looking at the caller ID

Me: hello

Siv: hey mother of my nephews

I removed my phone from my ear and looked at the caller ID. It was Lulonke, Atha's cousin. Oh gosh not today.

Me: hey Siviwe, unjani?

Him: ey mfethu, jonga we just entered PE, please give us directions to your house

Me: us? Who is us and why do you want to come to my house?

Him: I'm with Atha, Lu notata kaSmanga.

Me: yho let me call you back

Him: sharp

He hung up and I literally jumped out of bed and ran downstairs. Soso was playing FIFA with my brothers while my mom was chatting to MaRose in the dining area and I couldn't see my dad anywhere.

Me: Lwandiso ngcela ukukubona in our room please

Soso: ok baby. After this game, I'm coming

I took the joystick from Sakhile's hand and paused the game. They all looked at me and protested but I wasn't in the mood for waiting

Me: it can't wait until you finish the game

He placed the joystick on the couch then followed me into the room

Soso: kutheni na baby wandinxamisa

Me: I just received a call from Atha's cousin

Him: ufuna nton?

I told him everything Siviwe had said and I was expecting Soso to be pissed but he wasn't. He was too chilled for my liking

Him: give them the directions

Me: are you sure?

Him: yeah. I'll call my dad in the mean time

I did as I was told then went to give my parents the heads up as to what's going on then asked Sakhile and KK to take the twins out. I don't want them to be here for this but Soso had a different plan in motion

Soso: babe we can't keep hiding this forever. Maybe they want to see the twins so sending them away won't help. Let's just see what they want and take it from there

I nodded. I was in panic mode because I know what Soso is capable of and if Atha mentions what Soso has done to him, my parents will never see him the same again. Soso saw the panic in my eyes and just wrapped his arms around me then kissed my forehead

Him: relax babe. Its going to be ok. They won't take our sons away from us. That I'm sure off

Me: you don't know that family Soso, they might just be coming here to take my kids.

Him: shhh baby, I won't let that happen. No one is taking the twins.

After an hour or so, there was a hoot at the gate and Soso got up to open

Season 3

Insert 29

Lwa

My whole body was shaking, I didn't want these people in my home or even near my kids. My family and Soso's family were seated in the lounge, I was holding Mikaela and the twins were sitting next to where Soso was seated before he went to open the gate and door. Within a few minutes, the Dlamini's walked in with Siviwe pushing Atha's wheelchair. The moment they entered through the doorway, I felt myself getting sick, running out of breath and shaking like a leaf. They sat down then I got up with my mom and headed for the kitchen. I made refreshments and snacks.

Mom: sweetie relax before you break all these glasses, these people haven't even said what they are here for but you are already thinking the worst

I nodded because I knew if I opened my mouth, I would burst into tears. I placed everything on a tray then took it to the lounge and placed it on the coffee table

Me: sanibonani

Them: molweni ekhaya.

Soso: ndithemba nihambe kakuhle

A's uncle: ewe sihambe kakuhle. Mna ndinguMalume kaAthandwe. NguSiviwe lo and ndiyethemba niyamaz uAthandwe

Everyone nodded, I had no reaction. I want them to say their piece and leave already

S's dad: how can we help you?

A's uncle: bendithemba ukuba singathetha nomndeni wakwaHadebe qha

Dad: ngokucabanga kwam into esihlanganisayo nabantu bomndeni wakho ileziyngane uLoyiso noQhawe.

A's uncle: ewe kunjalo

Dad: then kumele babekhona abantu bakwaSmith ngoba yibona abakhulisa leziyngane

The Dlamini's looked at each other then Atha shook his head.

Atha: these are my children and the reason we are here is because I'm here to fetch them. Lwa is getting married and she has her own child with Soso now so what's the point in her holding on to my kids

I blinked away the tears that had formed in my eyes then sat up

Me: don't talk about me like I'm not here. If you want to talk to me, direct your words to me and not everyone else

Atha: andizothetha nawe izinto zamadoda. Ungumfazi andithi wena?!

Yeses alikho igama engilizonda njengokubizwa ngomfazi. I just find the word insulting and offensive nje. Rather refer to me as umuntu wesfazane then ukuthi ungibize ngomfazi. I got up from the couch ngoba Mikaela was getting restless. The moment I got up, the twins jumped off the couch and ran to me

Atha: Loyiso yizapha kutatakho

Loy: awusiye utatam. Nangu utatam

Ingane yam yakhomba uSoso kwangathi someone just slapped Atha with a brick on his face. He was at a lost for words and the twins followed me to MaRose's room. I knocked before she came to the door and opened it with a warm smile on her face and I returned the smile

Me: Ma please watch them, Yandisa is getting restless and kukhona abantu abadala ngale

MaRose: alright sisi.

She took the kids then I closed the door and went back to the lounge. Now this little conference had my undivided attention

Atha: bendisatsho ukuba ndizothatha abantwana bami.

Me: awunabantwana wena la

Soso: my love please calm down

Atha: listen to indoda yakho Lwandile because I'm not leaving here without my kids. I paid damages for these kids, they belong with me

A's uncle: ewe kunjalo MaHadebe. Nam ndandipha kubhatalwa inhlawulo.

Zinkwenkwe zakwaDlamini ezi

Dad: aningitshela bahlobo ukuthi ukuhlawula kusho ukuthini? Because ngokwazi kwami inhlawulo ikhokhelwa ukuthi you have damaged our daughter and you are asking for our forgiveness.

S's dad: ewe nami ndiyaz imele okho

Atha: OK have it your way then. Tell me how much I must pay so I can take my sons and I will pay it

I felt my anger brewing from the depths of my heart and Soso saw that I was pissed so he just held my hand and gave it a little squeeze

Soso: khawume kwedini usuke kokwenu wakhwela imoto yakho, bakuqhubela wayizisa apha ngoba uzothatha abantwana? Abantwana abatheni abo? Uyayaz nokuba yimalini ipampers okanye iTin yobisi? Phof ke abatyi nabisi oLoyiso abanxibi pampers but awuyaz lonto wena. Abakwaz labantwana

Soso was now fed up with Atha's bullshit and so was everyone. Angaz nokuthi uzothini lana ngoba he should be getting ready to die somewhere close to his family

*

*

Soso

Andzokwaz ukuvumela lechap izondigezela kwam. Libala mchanam. Ndifuna ahambe apha endaz ukuba ndingubani. He stared at me while his uncle looked at him with a confused look on his face. Its like he was unaware of what his nephew has done to Lwa and these kids

A's uncle: kxanimeni zihloba, I'm confused. Kanene ngubani oyingxaki apha?

Athandwe khawuthethe kwedin

Atha didn't respond, he just kept shifting his gaze between me and Lwa.

Embarrassment was written all over his face. I leaned back on the couch and folded my arms in front of my chest

A's uncle: thetha Athandwe

Atha: ndaxabana noLwa sohlukana

Lwa: ungakhulumi indaba ewuhalf bhuti. Tell your uncle everything. Tell him how you started taking drugs and told me to raise my children with my boyfriend ngoba they are no longer your kids. Tell him how I came to you countless times to try and get you to be in their lives and you refused over and over again. I even called you when they were in hospital and you didn't give a damn. So, don't you dare walk into the home I share with my husband and talk nonsense in front of my family. Don't you dare

Tears were already streaming down her cheeks, they were not tears of pain but rather tears of rage and anger. He must just thank his lucky stars that Lwa didn't mention that he kidnapped her and tried to rape her because had she mentioned that, her dad and her brothers were going to give him his death wish sooner than later.

Atha: are you going to bring that up every chance you get? I've apologized to you, I'm sitting on this chair because of the mistakes I made. I've paid for my mistakes and now I want to have my kids in my life

Me: lol you are funny yaz Athandwe, hilarious in fact. Khange utsho wena ukuba you want to commit suicide? Ngoku ulapha uzothetha ikaka nomkam. Uyadika fondin. Mna andisazi kalok ukuba undifuna nton. Ufuna ubomi bam ngoku and ntwana yam you keep asking for it and mna ndizokunika lanto oyifunayo.

Dad: hayi Soso calm down nyana wam. Kukho abantu abadala apha. Yiba nembeko I chose to remain silent for the rest of this little meeting and let the elders take over. I've said my peice.

L's dad: Lwandile noLwandiso ngicela nisishiye kancane. Sonibiza uma sesinidinga I nodded, took Lwa's hand and headed upstairs naye.

Me: ugrand sthandwa sam?

She nodded. I kissed her forehead as we walked into our bedroom, closing the door behind us. She wasn't ok. She was trying to stay strong but I know my Lwa and I know she was faking it.

Me: talk to me. What's on your mind?

Her: I will fight them tooth and nail for my sons. Athandwe is selfish, my sons don't know him and I don't want them to know him. This whole fiasco is going to confuse my kids

I pulled her towards me, her head landed on my chest then I kissed the top of her head and held her tightly

Me: everything is going to be OK. Our families will put those Dlamini people in their place and they will leave with their tails between their legs.

Her: they paid damages though and my family is traditional so that clearly means something to them.

Me: how much did their pay?

Her: angzazi but it was a lot of money because when Atha turned his back in us, that money managed to help us for a few months

Me: can't I just pay them their money back, I take the kids and we change their surname and move on with our lives?

She exhaled loudly but didn't give me an answer. That's how fed up I am with this Atha kid, I should have killed him when I had a chance then we wouldn't be in this mess we are in now. This kid will never let go of Lwa and I know he is doing this on purpose, trying to mess with her mind 2 days before our wedding. He is indirectly trying to stop her from marrying me kanti this kid doesn't know what I'm capable of. He might just not make it home today if this stupid meeting doesn't end in the way that will please me. I was so lost in my own thoughts that I didn't hear ukuba uLwa uthetha nam

Lwa: Lwandiso

Me: hmmm

Her: are you even listening to me?

Me: sorry babe. What was that?

Her: the wedding planner just texted me, we have to go check out the area at the beach we will be using

Me: ngoku?

Her: yep. She is only available now

Me: and then sizawuthini ngalenghlanganiso epha?

She shrugged her shoulders.

*

*

Atha

I watched as the woman that owns my heart walked up the stairs with this man that doesn't deserve her. When I found out that Lwa was getting married the same day I had scheduled my suicide, I felt like she was celebrating my death and that she was going to wipe out any memory of me like she said she would when I told her what my plans for the 5th were so I had to do something. If she marries this guy then it will be all over, she will be gone forever with my sons, my blood and my heirs. After Soso and Lwa left the room, all eyes turned on me.

L's dad: I'm not going to allow you to take these kids away from the only parents they know.

Atha: with all due respect Bab' Hadebe, these are my kids and they need to know their real father.

L's mom: no one is disputing that but they don't know you and at the age they are at, they don't need any confusion.

Siv: uxolo bantu abadala but I have an idea

We all turned our attention to loSiviwe who was speaking for the first time since we got here

Uncle: thetha kwedin

Siv: if Atha is serious about being a father to the twins again, how about he gets introduced to them as icousin kaSoso or something so that he can visit when he wants and get to know the kids then when they are old enough to understand, they will be sat down and told the truth

The elders nodded in agreement but I didn't like this idea. It seems like no one understands my pain. Its not about the damn kids, its about me and Lwa. I'm the person she is supposed to end up with not this Chris Brown wannabe cheese boy.

Uncle: that seems fair.

L's mom: it does but Lwa would have to agree to this as well

Me: mxm masambeni

Uncle: kutheni ngoku mhlekazi?

Season 3

Insert 30

Atha

Uncle: kutheni ngoku mhlekazi? Lento abakunika yona is better than what you had when we came here

I shot a death stare at my uncle then let out a sarcastic laugh

Me: better? Okukhonto ebetter apha. I don't want murders to raise my sons. I don't want my sons to turn out like anyone in that filthy Smith family

Uncle: hayi Athandwe mntanam. Suthetha ngalohlobo.

Me: ngobani malume? Yinyani kalok.

S's dad: ndibona kubetter ukuba nihambe ngoku. Ndyaqonda ukuba unyana unomsindo but he is crossing the line

L's dad: yho ngigeza izandla ngawe Athandwe. Kazi umntanam wayeboneni kuwe

I wasn't going to disrespect Lwa's father because he is the father of the mother of my children but as for Soso's family, I don't give a flying fuck about them. My cousin and my uncle got on their feet, shook hands with the elders

Uncle: enkosi zihlobo ngexesha lenu.

L's dad: sizokhuluma noLwandile about the idea of introducing Atha to the twins then we will let you know

Uncle: enkosi kakhulu tatuHadebe.

L's dad: ukhule mahn Athandwe, awusesiyo ingane manje.

I faked a smile then nodded before shaking his hand. Siviwe pushed my wheelchair out the door then helped me get in the car. The gate opened and we drove out with my uncle hooting before we were out the gate just to say goodbye I guess.

Siv: bruh what is wrong with you? You ruined this whole thing for yourself

Me: I achieved what I wanted to achieve. I have Lwa's attention

Siv: is that all you care about? She is in love with another man, she is marrying another man and I don't think, actually I know for a fact that you don't stand a chance with her. Just let her go

Me: let her go? Are you hearing yourself? I love that girl more than life itself. Fuck it, she is my life and I will fight for her until my last dying breath

My uncle turned to look at me then shook his head and continued driving. I didn't expect him to understand, I didn't expect either of them to understand because clearly none of them have ever loved someone the way I love Lwa.

Me: malume I think we should book rooms at a hotel, I want to stay until the 6th

Uncle: the 6th? Ngoba kutheni?

Me: kalok ngfuna ukwazi ukuba uzawthini uLwa about Siviwe's idea.

The look he gave me told me that he doesn't believe me but I didn't care. I had a plan up my sleeve and its going to be put into action one way or another. My uncle drove us to the closest hotel we could find, we did all the admin then settled in our rooms. I was sharing my room with Siviwe for obvious reasons.

*

*

Lwa

About 45mins later, we heard the gate open then we looked at each other, simultaneously shrugged our shoulders but didn't break our little cuddling session. I was really hoping that it was the Dlamini's that were leaving ngoba to be honest, i had no more energy left in me to fight with Athandwe. Soso and I decided to go downstairs just to survey the coast. We found our parents seated in silence in the lounge. There was so much tension in the air that I was even regretting walking down the stairs. We sat down then my dad lifted his eyes to look at us

Me: what happened?

Dad: uAthandwe ufuna izingane zakhe

Me: well he isn't going to get them. I'm not changing my mind over that

Dad: yaz he said something interesting just before they left

Me: something interesting? Like what?

Him: he said he doesn't want his sons to be raised by murderers. What did he mean by that Lwandile?

My heart jumped to my throat and I slowly turned my head to Soso whose eyes and emotions were unreadable

Dad: ngikhuluma nawe Lwandile

Me: angaz baba.

My voice came out as a whisper because I wasn't even sure of the answer I was giving and the way I said it was unbelievable. Even I wouldn't believe it if it was said to me

Dad: I didn't raise you to lie to me. Musa ukungenza islima ngoba ngizokhipha ibhande mina manje ngikubhambhabule. Uwumfazi le kwaSmith hayi kimi. You are still my child and I will beat you

I swallowed spit as my eyes got watery. My dad doesn't make empty threats so I knew ukuthi he meant every word.

Soso: tatuHadebe uAthandwe ubhema iziyobisi, he doesn't know how to differentiate between fantasy and reality. I'm not a murderer and you know your daughter isnt one either

Dad: I'm not so sure of what I know or don't know anymore but what I'm sure of is that uLwandile is lying to me

Me: baba angiqambi wona amanga. Angaz ngempela ukuthi ukhuluma ngan uAtha

My dad just clicked his tongue and got up from the couch then walked up the stairs. My tears rolled down my cheeks the moment he took the first step. Soso pulled me closer to him but I got out of his embrace then locked eyes with my mom. The look she had on her face was new to me; she was hurt, disappointed and ashamed. I shook my head as a means of showing her that Atha was lying but she didn't buy it. Instead she just kept this new and unfamiliar look glued on me. I was saved by my ringing phone. I sniffed, cleared my throat, wiped the tears and answered it

Me: hello

Lauryn: Lwa hey, did you get my text?

Me: text?

Then I remembered the text about meeting her at the beach with Soso

Me: uhm we are on our way now

Her: alright. See you soon

I hung up then turned to Soso who seemed like he was miles away

Me: Lwandiso

He turned his gaze on me and smiled faintly

Soso: baby

Me: that was Lauryn. We have to go to the beach right now

He cleared his throat then got up to take his car keys

Me: siyabuya. There are some wedding things that we still have to sort out

S's mom: alright sweetie but stop by my house when you come back. We are also going to leave now

Me: OK ma

They said their goodbyes to my mom then we walked out together. The drive to the beach was a quiet one, I was in my own world and so was Soso. We did all we had to do there then he drove us to his parent's house. They were seated in the lounge when we entered but Soso's dad soon got up and Soso followed him while I sat down next to his mother

S's mom: is everything in order for Saturday?

Me: yebo ma

She nodded while flashing me a comforting smile

Her: I want to tell you a little story

I nodded in approval

Her: when I was 16 I fell in love for the first time with a boy that I knew wasn't good for me. This boy was from a wealthy family that had a bad reputation and this boy was a lot older than I was. He was 21 at the time, a real bad boy and the most wanted boy in our community. When this boy asked me to be his girlfriend, I was a bit skeptical at first because firstly I knew my parents would be against it and secondly because of his reputation but my heart had chosen him and there was no use in me denying it. This guy and I dated for 2 years before I fell pregnant. My parents kicked me out of their house and disowned me. I was lost, confused, homeless and pregnant while still in high school. This guy that got me pregnant took me in, took care of me since he had a lot of money which he never told me where he got it from. Every time I asked him, he avoided the question. After our son was born, we got married and only then did he let me in on his gangster lifestyle. I'm not going to lie to you and say I wasn't scared because I feared for every moment he wasn't by my side but I stayed with him because I love him

The more she reminisced about her past, she glowed and smiled with happiness plastered on her face. You could see that she really did love her husband despite the life he lived but why was she telling me this two days before my wedding?!

Me: that's a beautiful story ma. You and Mr Smith really do love each other

Her: very much so. The reason I'm telling you this is because I want to show you that being a Smith wife isn't for the faint hearted or the disloyal. In this family we stick together no matter what happens, we love and protect each other and we never betray one another. Being a Smith wife requires courage and understanding. What you did today in front of your parents showed us that Soso didn't make a mistake by choosing you to be his wife. You are a perfect fit

Perfect fit she says? I know there is nothing perfect in the world. Soso and I have our problems, we have our fights and issues so we were the furthest thing from perfect but I understood where she was coming from. We shared a hug which left me feeling warm and fuzzy. I wonder if I will receive the same kind of hug from my own mother when I get to the house. I hated that being a Smith wife might cost me the relationship I have with my parents. After all was said and done, we said our goodbyes then drive to the house. Ukufika kwethu, we were welcomed by the smell of lamb stew. My mom was in the kitchen with MaRose while the kids played in front

of the TV. My house didn't feel like a home because of the tension. I joined my brothers in the lounge where they were watching a movie

Me: y'all have been scarce today

Sakhi: sis, what did you do to the parents?

He was whispering, clearly not wanting mom to hear

Me: nothing why?

Nami: dad wants to leave

Me: leave? Haibo guys I'm getting married in 2 days

Sakhi: lower your voice. He is really pissed. He even said there won't be a wedding. He wants you to stay away from the Smiths

Me: stay away? Where is he?

Nami: upstairs

I got up from the couch and literally ran up the stairs. I knocked on the door of the guestroom he was using

Dad: ngena

I took in a deep breath then slowly walked in. I found him on the bed, busy on his phone

Me: baba

He looked up at me then placed the phone on the table next to the bed. I sat on the edge of the bed but didn't look at him

Me: baba ngicela ungahambi. Ngiyashada baba and ngiyakudinga

Dad: you are not marrying into a family I don't trust Lwandile

Me: kodwa baba ngiyamthanda uLwandiso and naye uyangthanda. Please baba, Lwandiso's family is trustworthy

Him: ababulali Lwandile. They killed Atha's cousin and they are the reason why Atha is on a wheelchair. Just because Lwandiso was jealous of Athandwe

I immediately lifted my head and stared at my father. How could the wisest man I know be so easily fooled?

Season 3

Insert 31

Lwa

I know Atha is a lying, scheming asshole but this was taking it too far. My dad sounded adamant about me not marrying Lwandiso but I wasn't going to take this laying down. If Atha wants to fight dirty then him and I are going to war. I got up from the edge of the bed and went to kneel in front of my father. Tears streamed down my cheeks as I begged him

Me: baba that's a lie. Lwandiso isn't a petty person. You know him baba, he wouldn't do that

Dad: and why would Athandwe lie?

Me: baba, are you listening to yourself? Atha is always up to no good, he lies all the time to get his way

My words came out as a shout and my dad looked at me with his one eyebrow cocked. I knew right then that I had crossed the line

Him: watch your tone Lwandile, I'm not your friend. Lalela you are not marrying that boy. Finish and klaar. Pack your things because we are leaving first thing tomorrow morning.

What was wrong with this man? You can't just decide to uproot my life and expect me to be OK with it. I have the utmost respect for my parents and I've always believed that they know what's best for me but this time, my dad has it all twisted

Me: baba you don't even want to hear my side of the story or Lwandiso's for that matter.

Him: what side of the story could you possibly have that would make me trust you again? You've embarrassed me Lwandile and caused shame to this family by bringing a gangster and a murderer into our lives. You know how I feel about izinto ezibheke eceleni but you went on and defied me. Do you want to end up dead as well? Is that what you want to achieve?

I was still on my knees in front of my father, with tears covering my face but he felt no compassion towards me. He just threw his harsh words at me then took his phone and busied himself with it

Him: sesiqedile lana. Your mother is already packing for the kids so I suggest you go pack your things as well.

I got up from the floor, wiped my tears with the back of my hand then headed for the door but stopped before opening it

Me: I'm not leaving with you and if it means you disown me because of choosing the man I love over the guy that has made my life a living hell then fine. So be it. Atha is lying and ukwenza islima just to spite Soso but if you choose to believe the man that almost raped your daughter and almost killed your granddaughter then so be it.

With that I walked out, I didn't even wait for a response. I was done trying to beg my father to see reason, I was done defending myself because he chooses to believe a good for nothing asshole instead of his own daughter and I was sure as hell done with his lectures and harsh words. I walked into my room, locked the door and just buried my face on my pillow. I cried my heart out, starting with silent sobs which turned into loud, heart breaking cries. I was crying for everything I've held in since the last time I cried, I cried for the shit Soso has put me through, I cried for everything Atha has done to try and destroy me and my relationship and I cried for how my parents had looked at me after the rubbish Atha had told them. It was all too much for me and the louder my cries got, I felt knocks on the door. At first it was my brothers, all three of them but I didn't open. Even if I did, bengizothini kubo? I was struggling to breath properly, now imagine how difficult talking would be. Next at the door was Lwandiso and my man didn't give up. He stood at the door for over an hour, begging me to open the door but the more I heard his voice, the more my tears ran down my face but at least the loud cries had stopped. After 2hrs, I must have fallen asleep because when I woke up, it was dark outside. I checked the time, it was half past 9. How long was I asleep for? I got up, closed the curtains then went into the bathroom. Ngachama then washed my hands and my face. My eyes were red and swollen and my face was red ngokwayo. I got out the bathroom with the intention of going to check on my kids but when I opened the door, I got the shock of

my life when I found Lwandiso sleeping outside my door. I kneeled down, shook him gently and he opened his eyes. He smiled faintly then sat up and rubbed his eyes

Soso: hey

Me: hi

Him: uring?

I nodded. He pulled out his arm and asked me to help him up. I stood up then pulled him up and the moment he was on his feet, he pulled me towards him and held me tightly before placing a kiss on my forehead.

Him: uyaphi?

I cleared my throat then tried to get out of his embrace but he wouldn't let me

Him: you don't need to leave my arms in order to answer me

Me: I was going to get a glass of water then check on my kids

Him: OK I'm coming with you

He held my hand then we walked downstairs, the lights were still on and everyone was watching TV. No wonder Soso wanted to accompany me

Loy: mama

He jumped up from the floor and ran to me. I picked him up and walked into the kitchen with him in my arms

Me: awulelengani?

Loy: ndbuka imovie nooLume nokuku

Me: imovie ethini?

I placed him next to his father who was already seated on the counter then warmed up my food and poured myself a glass of water, mixed it with sugar and downed it

Soso: kutheni usela istruggle juice na baby? Ikhona ijuice

Me: I just need it to calm me down.

Loy: mama ndiyakthanda mna evha. Sukhala kaloku

I sniffed then wiped the tears that had formed in my eyes. My sons get me so emotional at times. I kissed his forehead then he pouted his lips at me wanting me to kiss him on his lips. I know Loyiso hates getting kissed so this was a little strange

Soso: uncamisa umama boy? Iyancamisa ngoku indoda?

Loy: umamam akekho kahle. Ndfuna anwabe umamam yikho ndimncamisa

I smiled as I took my food out the microwave

Me: sengiright manje boy. I promise

I kissed him again then Soso put him on the floor and told him to go sit down where he was while he followed me into the dining room and sat down next to me. I took one spoon of my food then placed the spoon on the plate and he took a spoonful as well and ate. I looked at him and creased my eyebrows then he smiled. My man has a warm and beautiful smile and its contagious ngoba I found myself smiling as well

Me: uyangsukela Soso

Soso: okwam ngokwakho sthandwa sam and vice versa

I smiled again as I continued eating, well we were eating my food together using one spoon

Him: ndineworry ngawe baby. Andiyithandanga lento yokuba abantwana bethu bakuve ukhala ngalohlobo. It tore my heart in pieces because I couldn't get to you, I couldn't hold you and it felt like I was failing you and our kids. uLoyiso noQhawe kakade bendibuza ukuba kuqhubeka nton ngomama and I couldn't give them an answer because andiyaz nam

I looked up from my plate and my eyes met his worry felt eyes. I immediately placed my hand on his cheek and brought him closer to my face then pecked his lips

Me: I'm sorry Lwandiso

Him: andifuni ucele uxolo, I want you to tell me what's going on. One minute you were fine and then next minute you are locked in our room crying.

I let out a sigh and continued eating without uttering a single word. When I was done, I rinsed my plate in the sink then placed it on the rake of dishes and went to the

nursery to check on my daughter and again Soso followed me. Luckily, she was awake and MaRose was feeding her mashed potatoes

Me: Ma, do you mind if I take over?

MaRose: no problem sisi

She handed my princess to me then walked out. Soso sat on the bed while I sat on the chair. I fed Mikaela while her father just sat there and stared at us. I knew he wanted me to talk but how am I supposed to tell him what my father said? He will lose it and I know Soso when he is angry, he is disrespectful and doesn't care about what he does. He will just make matters worse

Soso: Lwandile?

Me: Baby

Him: thetha nam fondin. Kwenzeke nton?

Me: can we not do this right now? I just want to bond with my daughter

I looked down at her, her golden-brown eyes met mine and I just smile and she laughed

Him: umenza nton umntanam?

Me: lol nothing. She is enjoying her mother's company

Our little bonding session was interrupted by KK walking in

KK: Lwa uyakbiza umama

Me: ngisafunza ingane ngyeza

Soso: lethu umntana kum Lwa, ndizamtyisa ngokwam

I looked at him and he cocked his eyebrow and stared back at me. Mxm I got up, gave him his daughter then walked out the door with KK

Me: ufunani umawakho?

KK: lol angaz

Me: uphi ubaba?

Him: still in his room

I nodded then when we got to the lounge, he sat down and I went to the dining area and sat opposite my mom. I didn't look at her but just bowed my head

Mom: Lwandile

Me: ma

Her: have you packed?

Me: packed? Ngiyaphi?

Her: utheni ubaba kuwe?

Me: angiyindawo mina mama

With that said, I lifted my head up and looked at her and she shook her head

Her: so, you are going against your father's instructions? Are you no longer his child?

Me: with all due respect mama, I love Lwandiso, we have children together. I can't just take his kids and leave for no valid reason.

Her: no valid reason? He is a murderer Lwandile

Me: no, he isn't

Her: so, he didn't kill Smanga?

I kept quiet. I was getting annoyed by this thing of Lwandiso being referred to as a murderer

Me: he killed Smanga because Smanga tried to kill him. It was in self defense

She looked at me with cocked eyebrows. She folded her arms in front of her chest and leaned back on the chair

Her: self defense? Khuluma Lwandile

I told her sonke istory sika Smanga and Soso, from the time Smanga messed from the breaks of Soso's car to the time Soso held them hostage and killed Smanga. She covered her mouth with her hands and said a short prayer

Her: how could you want to spend the rest of your life with such a ruthless man?
Uzokubulala lomuntu Lwandile. I wasn't sure of your father's decision but now
ngivumelelana naye even more.

Me: mama Soso has never laid a hand on me which is not what I can say for Atha.
Atha drugged me, kidnapped me and almost raped me with his friend.

Season 3

Insert 32

Lwa

Me: its his fault that my daughter was almost born with disformalities. It was because of his drugs. I hate Atha with every fiber of my being but ngamxolela because I had to free myself. That's the kind of man that you and dad are choosing to believe over me. Yes, I admit that it was wrong to keep Soso's actions from you but he is my husband and as much as I don't know everything that goes on in your marriage, you don't need to know everything that goes on in mine. I love Lwandiso and I know he won't do anything to hurt me or the kids. He loves us and his actions were because he was trying to protect us. He is a good man mama. Please don't force me to leave him because I won't, you will lose me before I will ever consider leaving him

She was now in tears. All this was new information to her because I chose not to have my parents involved in the kidnapping. I didn't want to worry them but now it was about to time. I was forced to be weak and involve my parents in my problems

Mom: oh, kodwa nkosi yam ngomntanam. I'm so sorry you had to go through that on your own but why ungashongo Lwandile? I would have been on the first flight out to be by your side

Me: that's the thing mama, I wasn't on my own. Soso was by my side every step of the way. He really isn't bad mama

She got up from her seat and wrapped her arms around me. Her tears dropped on my face and I wiped them. I didn't have any tears left in me, I had nothing to cry for anymore. I just want my parents to understand that this is my life and I know my man more than they do. She let go of me and looked at me, her eyes were still wet and I smiled and she smiled back at me.

Her: ngizokhuluma nobab'wakho and make him understand everything

Me: don't waste your breath mama. I told him and he doesn't believe me

She seemed shocked but also in disbelief. She shook her head and started crying all over again

Her: ai ngeke baby. He has to believe you. Maybe awumtshelanga kahle. Your father loves you more than anything in this world. Ngizokhuluma naye mina. Please baby don't hate him, he is just confused. Give him time. Ngiyakcela nana

Me: time? I don't have time mama. I'm getting married in two days and I would love nothing more than my father to walk me down the aisle but him refusing to do that won't stop me from getting married. Even if it means I walk down the aisle ngedwa, anginandaba

Her: yehlisa umoya Lwandile. Ngizokhuluma nobaba wakho. Sizokhuluma ekseni ke mntanam

She kissed my forehead then gave me another tight squeeze

Her: your strength is impeccable Lwandile.

I nodded then flashed her a smile. She walked up the stairs and I remain seated in the dining area. How was I going to get through the next two day? They are supposed to be the happiest days of my life but I'm drowning in stress. Why is it that I always have to go through trials and trying times before I can be happy? I'm tired of fighting for things that other people have easily. I wish I could say I curse the day Atha came into my life but then I look at my two beautiful boys and I see the good in the evil man he has become. I covered my face with my hands and sighed deeply. I was drained, both emotionally and physically. I was tired of crying and hurting, my heart was literally tired. I needed God to cut me some slack. Yes, bra G, point proven, you made a strong woman in me, I've passed every test you've given me and now the reward needs to come. I've turned every lemon life has thrown my way into lemonade and now I have enough lemonade to quench the thirst of the whole planet. My thoughts were interrupted when I felt a tap on my shoulder. I removed my hands from my face and turned my head. I smiled when I saw Nami's face. He sat down next to me then took my hands in his and kissed them

Nami: baby sis

Me: big bro

Him: you good?

I nodded with a smile on my face but it didn't look like he was buying my story

Him: itaima lithi siyavaya ksasa

Me: oh

Him: but we decided to stay and support you. We are your brothers and we love you
Just then KK and Sakhile joined us. I looked at them, shifting my eyes from Nami to KK to Sakhile

Sakhi: itaima licasukile sho, but he will realize his mistake and come to his senses

KK: and in the mean time, we shall hold you down

I let out a soft chuckle and my brothers joined in. We lightened up the conversation and spoke about nonsense and cracked jokes. Sakhile has a girlfriend now that he is planning on bringing to the wedding, apparently, she looks like Nomzama Mbatha, well that's according to KK. KK now has another girlfriend apart from Asemahle and he got caught cheating so he is walking on the grace of forgiveness. Hanging with my brothers made me realize how much I was missing them ever since I left home. Just then I smelt a very familiar scent before I felt his cold lips on my neck

Soso: I want to know your secret majita?

Nami: secret?

Soso: ewe secret to making my wife laugh like this?

KK: sorry Ta LDS, its a family secret

We all burst into laughter once more and Soso sat on top of me

Me: uyasinda Lwandiso

Sakhi: is this our cue to leave?

Soso: lol of course not bruh

He got off me and sat next to KK. We spent an hour or so just talking and laughing and just bonding. Around midnight, I took my sons to their room since they were asleep on the floor. I took Loyiso and Soso took Qhawe

Me: goodnight guys

Them: goodnight sis

I walked up the stairs, tucked my son in and Soso did the same then we both gave them kisses and we walked out their rooms, leaving their doors slightly ajar. When we got to our room, I placed my phone on the side table then started taking my clothes off

Soso: uyohlamba?

Me: yeah

Him: awufuni ndikuhlambe?

I chuckled softly until I saw that he was serious

Me: userious yini?

Him: ewe

I agreed then we followed each other into our bathroom, he opened the taps in the shower booth then put his hand in to feel for the temperature while I brushed my teeth. He waited for me to finish then took my hand and we walked into the booth. He took the sponge, poured shower gel onto it then rubbed it on me, starting from my neck. He extended my arm towards him and scrubbed it clean then moved on to the other one. I was chuckling the whole time

Soso: turn around my baby. I want to see your figure

He was singing this and I just burst into laughter but followed his instruction then I heard him moaning to himself

Him: kodwa thixo how did I get this lucky?

Me: lol please focus

He laughed then started scrubbing my back and moved lower to my buttocks and gently gave it a squeeze. I felt myself getting wet down there so I quickly turned around. I was greeted by his king which was standing at attention. Looking at it made me wetter and I knew right there and then that I wanted him. My eyes moved from his abs to his king and back to his face. He moved closed to me and I moved back until I was against the wall

Him: lol how am I supposed to wash you if you keep running away

Me: lol mxm I'm not running away

He dropped the sponge then moved his hands onto my hips. I immediately felt my body getting goosebumps from his first touch and I closed my eyes

Me: Lwandiso

His name came out as a moan

Him: baby

He moved his hand to my queen then gently cupped it while his thumb ran up and down my slit

Me: baby we can't.

Him: ndiyaz baby and I understand sthandwa sam

He cuffed his hand around both my hands then pinned them above my head and started biting on my neck before moving to my earlobe. He took it between his teeth then gently bit it and a moan escaped my lips

Him: vula kalok baby

I parted my legs and he inserted his finger into my already soaked queen and I moaned again, louder this time. He finger fucked me and I started grinding against his finger then he inserted a second one and I lost it. I lifted my leg up and wrapped my leg around his waist then he pulled his fingers out. I gasped out loudly and shot my eyes open

Him: lol let's behave baby. Sizohlamba apha

Me: but baby

Him: hayi baby, we will make love on our wedding night.

I was so close to my orgasm and it was driving me crazy. His every touch made me want to just jump him but he wouldn't let me. When he was done giving me a bath, I wrapped a towel around myself but he quickly removed it then lifted me up and carried me to our bed and laid me down

Him: ndikuthambise?

Me: baby ngiyakcela. Please make love to me

Him: andizokwazi baby. We made a deal kalok

I sat up on the bed and just looked at him. I wanted him so badly. The ache in my queen was unbearable, it needed to be serviced

Me: is this pay back for this morning?

He came to me, smashed his lips onto mine, slowly inserting his tongue into my mouth and I sucked on it then wrapped my arms around his neck. After a while I pulled out of the kiss and looked at him. Lord knows how much I love this man and anyone who would see him would understand why

Me: please make love to me. Please

Him: baby I don't want to break the promise you've made to yourself, I want us to wait until we are married but I'm going to kiss each and every each of your beautiful body until you cum.

I smiled just as he planted a kiss on my left boob, gently sucking on it and biting my nipples. He inserted his fingers back into my queen then lifted his head up

Him: you are so wet baby

Me: its all for you baby

He continued planting kisses until he got to my queen where he sucked on my clit gently and I lost it. I held his head in that position and when he stuck his tongue in my queen and I quickly closed my legs which resulted in him gently hitting my thighs

Him: suvala amathanga baby. Ndvulele

His voice was husky and so sexy. He continued with the amazing thing he was doing between my legs and before I knew it, I was gripping the sheets and shaking like crazy as my orgasm took over me. When I was eventually calm, he lifted his head from between my legs and came to my face and pecked my lips. I could still taste myself on his lips

Him: uright ngoku?

Me: yebo baby. Thank you

Season 3

Insert 33

Soso

The next day I woke up naked with the love of my life resting her head on my chest fast asleep. I took this moment to fully admire her, she really was beautiful, even in her sleep. I slowly reached for my phone which was on the side table and checked the time. It was 7:40am which means her parents are most probably up and so are the older kids. I slowly lifted her from my chest, trying very hard not to wake her up then I got up from the bed, wore my briefs and shorts and vest then headed to the bathroom. I took a piss, washed my face and brushed my teeth then walked downstairs where I found my father-in-law watching the news but there was no one else in sight

Me: molo tata

He turned his head around and looked at me before nodding

L's dad: yebo Lwandiso. Awuzohlala lapha sixoxe

I slowly walked into the lounge and sat down then he turned down the volume on the TV and adjusted the way he was seated

Him: you are aware that I only have one daughter, right? Yes, I have been blessed with a lot of children but I only have one daughter

Me: ewe tata

Him: that means I will protect my daughter from anything and anyone I feel might not be good for her

I nodded but didn't say anything. I knew where this conversation was going and I was ready for it

Him: I don't doubt your love for my daughter and your children but I do doubt your capabilities of being the type of man that she deserves. Love makes people do crazy things and I don't want my daughter to find herself in the life of crime just because she is doing it in the name of love

Me: with all due respect tata uHadebe but are you accusing me of living a life of crime?

Him: last time I checked murder was a crime

I sighed loudly then moved forward and sat at the edge of the couch. I looked up at him and kept eye contact with him

Him: murder is a crime, so is attempted murder, kidnapping, indecent assault and drugging someone. My actions were justified because I was defending myself from an imminent attack but what justifications did Atha give you for the crimes he administered on your daughter?

He creased his eyebrows and stared at me for a while before uttering a response

Him: I'm not saying Atha is an angel, he has his own mistakes

Mistakes? Is this man even listening to himself? I know for a fact that if anyone tried to hurt my daughter in any kind of way, that person would know me very well. I would never try to justify the actions of a man who brings harm to my family. Never

Me: yho ndithule andithethi. So, what's the way forward?

Him: I don't want to lose my daughter but I also don't like her marrying you so I will let her marry you but I will be watching you Smith. If you harm even one hair on her head, I will kill you.

Me: luckily it won't come to that because I would never lay a hand on a woman. Anyway, enkosi for giving us your blessings, I'm sure Lwa will also be happy

He nodded and turned the volume up on the TV, I guess lencoko ibisigqibiwe. I got up and made my way to the kitchen, poured myself a glass of juice and when I was about to get started on breakfast, MaRose walked in with Mikaela

Me: molo mama

MaRose: molo sana lwami

Me: unjani ma? Hello bhabha zam

I took Mikaela into my arms, kissed her lips and cheeks then she rested her head on my shoulder

Me: ma ndicela wenze ukutya. uLwa had a hectic night and ndfuna aphumule kancinci

Her: akukho ngxaki mntanam

Me: enkosi mama

She had been preparing Kaela's cereal so she gave me the bowl and spoon and I made my way to the pool area outside to feed her. My little one needed fresh air.

*

*

Lwa

I was woken up from my deep slumber by the annoying sound of my ringtone. I reached for it and answered without looking at the caller ID

Me: hmmm

Laa: morning beautiful

I immediately shot my eyes wide open and sat up on the bed. I removed the phone from my ear and checked the caller ID and it was indeed Laa that was calling

Me: Landile?

Him: yep. Unjani beautiful stranger?

My cheeks flushed as I blushed a little. This guy and his smooth talks

Me: I'm good and you?

Him: I'd be amazing if you joined me for breakfast

Me: wait, are you in PE?

Him: yeah. You didn't think I'd miss your wedding now, did you?

Me: lol aw angaz phela people change when they get into relationships

He kept quiet for a few seconds then let out a sigh

Him: so, spur at 10am?

Me: yeah, I'll be there

Him: see you soon beautiful

I blushed once more then hung up. It was still early but because there were guests in the house, I decided to get up. I washed my face, brushed my teeth then wore my nightdress and gown over it and my slippers. When I got downstairs, MaRose was already serving breakfast to everyone.

Me: morning everyone

Them: morning

Me: Loy, uphi utata?

Loy: phandle mama

I turned on my heels to go outside but my dad stopped me and summoned me to sit down and I did as he had asked

Dad: ngikhulumile nomama wakho noLwandiso

I didn't say anything, angaz noma he wanted me to say something or not

Him: ngifuna ukuxolisa mntanam for jumping to conclusions and not hearing you out.

Me: OK

Him: I'm not happy about you wanting to marry Soso but I'm not going to stop you

Me: thank you

Him: we will discuss everything else after the wedding.

I just wanted this conversation to come to an end already and it didn't look like my father was going to stop talking anytime soon so I cut him off

Me: its fine baba. Everything is fine. I understand your concerns and they are justified but right now I just want to focus on my wedding day

Mom: that's understandable

I nodded then smiled. I watched as my family ate their breakfast and since I wasn't eating I went to take Kaela from her dad so he can eat. I found him playing with his daughter, tossing her in the air and laughing with her

Me: I see you guys are having fun without me

Soso: morning babe

He kissed my cheek then pecked my lips. I also pecked Kaela's lips and she just looked at me

Me: my love, breakfast is served in the house, you should go eat

Him: have you eaten?

Me: no. I'm having breakfast with Landile and Asemahle and most probably with Lolo as well

He looked at me with cocked eyebrows and I just stared back at him

Me: his girlfriend will be there so I know he won't try anything funny

Him: he better not because I will hurt him

I laughed until I saw that he wasn't laughing which means he meant every word he was saying. He even tilted his head to the side and didn't remove his eyes from me

Me: uhm... OK then. Letha ingane yam so we can go bath

I took Kaela from her father then walked into the house and as I walked up the stairs, the kids followed me

Me: niqedile ukudla?

Lwande: yes auntie. Can I play with Yaya?

Me: we are going to bath. You can play with her when she is done bathing

After bathing I wore black leggings with a white T-shirt and white sneakers. I applied my makeup and topped it with dark maroon matte lipstick then packed my things into my bag and made my way downstairs

KK: you look good sis

Me: thank you little one. I have a date with your girl

KK had a puzzled look on his face and I just laughed at him. Soso came to my side and asked to walk me out then handed me his car keys

Soso: take my car

Me: are you sure?

Him: ewe. I want to get your car washed and most probably when you come back, I won't be here so Mike will come get the car later today

Me: you going to be staying at your parents' house?

Him: yeah so next time I see you will be when we promise to give ourselves to each other for the rest of our lives. I can't wait for you to finally be Mrs Smith

I smiled then wrapped my arms around his neck and brought his face to mine and our lips locked. We shared a slow passionate kiss which he soon broke

Him: go before you are late for your breakfast. I love you Lwandile Hadebe. You are my heart

Me: I love you more baby. I'll see you at the alter

Him: I'll be the one in the blue and silver suit wearing my heart on my sleeve

I smiled, pecked his lips then got into the car and drove off to town. I called Enzo as I entered town but he didn't answer then I called Laa and told me he was already waiting for me. I parked at the parkings, grabbed my bag and walked out. I found him seated alone and he got up when he saw me then gave me a hug. He smelt heavenly even if I do say so myself. I sat down opposite him and he stared at me without saying a word but just wearing a smile on his face

Me: lol what's wrong?

Laa: who said anything is wrong? Im just admiring your beauty

Me: aibo Landile, you are dating my friend

He sighed the same sigh he sighed over the phone earlier that morning

Him: angijoli with your friend Lwa. I wouldn't do that, I'm not crazy

Me: so, you are saying she is lying?

Before he could answer, a waitress came to take our orders and then walked away

Him: she isn't lying, she is in denial. We hooked up a couple of times and she just assumed we are dating.

I knew it and my conscience is clear because I warned Lolo about Landile and she bit my head off. Landile isn't the dating type, we all knew it but Lolo is in denial. We had our breakfast over a catch-up session and after 30mins or so Enzo and Asemahle joined us. I screamed when I saw them and gave them hugs.

Enzo: buddy bae. Angisakwaz

Me: I know hey. You are such a stranger, you don't even know your daughter

Enzo: work is hectic bae but I'll meet her today

Mahle: you have a daughter sis Lwa?

Me: yebo baby girl, you will see her later on.

After having breakfast, Laa went to pick up the girls while I drove home and Enzo drove behind me. It was already after 1pm when I got to the house and all the guys were gone; only my mom, my kids, MaRose and Phiwe were left behind. I walked in with Asemahle and Enzo, they greeted everyone then we sat in the lounge

Me: MaRose ngicela ungilethela uYandisa

MaRose: OK sis and should I organize you some snacks?

Me: yebo ma

She walked away and Enzo just looked at me

Me: what?

Enzo: you have a nanny; a house and you are getting married. You are adulting buddy

Me: and I'm 22. So young but ngoba ngithanda izinto here I am

Season 3

Insert 34

Lwa

When Landile arrived with Noma, Lolo, Pali and Sedi, we were all chilling outside with the kids. They had wine with them so my mom took the kids and we had a mini party outside. During this whole time, Lolz couldn't keep her hands off Laa which honestly made her look desperate but I wasn't going to say anything about it. It wasn't my place after all

Enzo: buddy we are going to leave you soon

Laa: yeah, we have to join the other guys for the bachelor party

I looked at them with an unimpressed look but they just laughed at me. I remember specifically saying that I don't want Soso having any of those crazy bachelor parties

Enzo: don't look so worried, I'll make sure he behaves but in the mean time, I got you a little something something

Just then the bell rang and I got up to go open. I looked at Enzo with my eyebrows creased together and he just smiled. The smile was a naughty one

Laa: lol you should probably get that

Me: what are you guys up to?

Enzo: lol lutho buddy. Siyahamba thina manje

He walked up to me, gave me a tight hug then I hugged Laa and we approached the door

Enzo: Enjoy buddy bae

With that said, he winked at me and opened the door to find 3 male strippers dressed as firemen. These guys had bodies to die for and I caught myself staring at them. After they walked in, Enzo and Laa laughed and walked out

*

*

Soso

I woke up on my wedding day with the worst hangover I've ever had and with a naked girl in my bed. I slowly rubbed my eyes and sat up to look at the person who had interrupted my sleep

Luke: Soso bruh wake up, we have an hour to get ready and be at the beach on time

Me: beach? What beach?

Him: lol you are getting married ntwana

Me: oh shit

I turned to look at the girl who was laying next to me then lifted the covers to see that I was naked as well with a condom half rolled on my dick. My face immediately changed. Did I? Nah but I would remember if I did. I shook the girl, trying to wake her up but she took her time

Me: did we fuck?

Her: you don't remember?

Me: I wouldn't ask if I did

Her: nah we didn't. I wanted to but you kept telling me about some chick called Lwa that you love

Me: and the condom?

Her: that's was me trying to convince you. I rolled it up with my mouth but you passed out in the process

I smiled to myself, it was more of a relief kind of smile. I got up from the bed, looked for my clothes but only found my briefs and boxers then got dressed and left the room. I took a shower, had strong black coffee while I got dressed. We were all getting dressed in the lounge, just so we get done quicker and we can help each other. Just then the chick I woke up next to entered the lounge, looking lost as ever. My brother and my friends exchanged looks before all staring at me

Me: yintoni?

Mike: lol one last smash before you get married?

I fixed my tie, wore my blazer than looked for my shoes

Ntando: please tell me you did it

Me: guys I wouldn't cheat on the woman I'm marrying, especially the night before our wedding

Marcus looked at me with a gapped mouth. He was either in disbelief or he thought I was lying. At 10:10am, my phone rang from the kitchen, I rushed to it, smiled when I saw the caller ID then answered

Me: the most beautiful woman in the world

Lwa: the most beautiful man in the world

Me: handsome baby not beautiful

Her: uright?

Me: ewe sthandwa sam. Wena?

Her: I'm nervous but I'm also excited. Ukuphi manje? You should be at the beach already

Me: lol I'll be there my love. I wouldn't miss our wedding

The gents called me from the background so I soon had to hang up. We said our I love yous and I hung up. When I walked back into the lounge everyone was fully dressed and ready to leave

Me: guys uphi lamntana?

Brandon: she left bro

We locked up my parents' house then drove to my house. That's where our convoy will start. When we got to the house, the women had already left so we just parked our cars then got into the hired cars. I was driven in a matte black G63 AMG while the rest of the guys traveled in Porsches, Lamborghinis and BMWs. We arrived at the beach just a few minutes before the service was meant to start. My mom came to our cars the moment we parked

Mom: you guys are late

Me: but we are here. How's my wife? How gorgeous does she look?

Her: come come. Forget all that, we need to start already. Change the shoes

We changed into flip flops then made our way to the set up. It all looked amazing, the view, the alter and chairs...it all looked perfect

*

*

Lwa

When I got the message that they were ready for us, I took a deep breath and slowly exhaled. I had been sitting in the car with my dad the whole time and I must admit that the nerves were overshadowing the excitement

Dad: let's go princess

I nodded then he got out the car and came to open my door then helped me out the car. He kissed my forehead then looked at me for a few seconds

Him: you look beautiful sweetheart

Me: thank you daddy

He took my hand as we approached where the service was going to take place. Everyone stood up as we approached and then from a distance away I saw the love of my life, my king, my lover and my best friend looking all sorts of sexy standing at the alter waiting for me. Dad tightened his grip on my hand and it hit me that this wasn't so easy for him. I am his only daughter and now he has to give me away at such a young age so of course he had his fears and they were understandable. The time came for him to give my hand to Soso and he hesitated for a while

Dad: Smith

Soso: yes sir

Dad: this is my whole world that I'm placing in your hands and mfana wam I do hope your hands are strong and steady because if you drop her and she gets hurt, I won't mind spending the rest of my days in jail for killing you

Soso: they are steady sir

He kissed the side of my head then handed me to Soso who kissed my cheek then we approached the pastor. The service went on until we had to get to the vows, I hadn't written anything because I wanted to speak from the heart. I wanted the feelings I felt at that moment to be the ones that speak for me, not the feelings I felt yesterday or a week before. Soso took my left hand, kissed it then looked into my eyes with a slight smile which made me smile

Soso: you look beautiful sthandwa sam

I blushed and turned away but he made me look at him

Him: our journey hasn't been easy but its been beautiful. Every curve, every bump and every turn has been worth it because of the love you've shown me even when I knew I didn't deserve it. I love you Lwandile Hadebe and I will continue to show you the kind of love you deserve and proving my love to you with every waking day. I promise to protect you, provide for you and respect you and love you so our kids can learn love from us. Thank you for making me a man and a father to the world's best children. I love you

He slipped the ring into my finger then kissed it. I was trying very hard not to cry but my emotions were failing me. I took his hand with the ring slightly slipped into his hand. I stared at it for a while then lifted my head to look at him

Me: yho now how am i supposed to beat that?

Everyone laughed and Soso whispered "you can't" to me which made me laugh as well

Me: but ke baby, yabona everything you said? Same to you tatakhe

Again, everyone broke in laughter then I got serious

Me: Lwandiso Shaun Smith, you are my everything, my sunshine, my storm and sun rise. I look at you and ask myself how I got this lucky to have a man who loves me the way you do. God really hasn't forgotten about me. Myeni wam this is a new journey that we are about to take, neither of us has done this before so we will learn along the way and we will teach each other the ways of making a marriage a success, our way. I promise to love you, take care of you and our kids and to be

submissive and respectful to you and I also promise that no matter how tough it gets, I'll never leave your side. I love you so much

It suddenly felt like everyone had disappeared and the only people left were myself and this beautiful man before me. I slipped the ring deeper into his finger and just stared at him. How is it even humanly possible to love someone so much? Our little moment was disturbed by a gun shot. I froze in that moment as everyone got down to the ground. I looked up at where it had come from then I saw Atha sitting on his wheelchair looking back at me.

Soso: Lwa get down

He pulled me down and that's when I felt a slight stinging sensation on my stomach. I gently touched it and I felt that my dress was wet but I didn't understand what got me wet ngoba we were far from the beach. I lifted my hand to my face and that's when I realised that it was covered in blood.

Me: Lwandiso

Him: babe

Me: I'm bleeding

Him: what? Where?

Me: my stomach. I think I got shot

I was running out of breath but it wasn't sore, just stinging then I passed out

*

*

Soso

The moment I realized that that idiot Atha had shot my wife, I lost it. I didn't care that he had a gun or not, I walked straight to him. He had no option. He couldn't walk so he just pointed the gun at me and I didn't care, if Lwa dies, what the hell do I have to live for? I walked all the way up to him and threw my first punch which landed him on the floor. His nose was bleeding and his lip was busted. He screamed in agony and I was deaf to his screams. I kicked him a couple of times then placed my foot on his throat, took the hand that was holding the gun and aimed the gun at his head...

Season 3

Insert 35

Soso

I looked at him struggling to breath under the pressure of my knee and I didn't feel an ounce of remorse. I wanted him to die a slow painful death. I've spared his life for long enough and this is how he repays me? By shooting my wife in front of our kids, in front of our family and on a day which is supposed to be our wedding day.

Mike: Soso don't do this, be the bigger man ntwana. Lwa needs you right now

And then the reality of my wife covered in blood hit me and I released my foot from Atha's throat then looked at him while he coughed in the attempt of getting his breathing to be normal again. I fixed my suit, walked towards the alter where the paramedics were busy with Lwa but before I had even walked a sizeable distance, I heard a gun shot from behind which gave me a fright and immediately got to the ground. After that there was silence. I turned around to find Atha laying on the ground in a pool of blood and Jason standing a few meters away holding a gun.

Me: and then? Jason there are innocent people here

Jay: he was about to shoot you

Me: I don't have energy for this right now.

I rushed to Lwa's side and the paramedics were getting ready to take her away

Me: where are you taking my wife?

Param: to the hospital sir. You wife has lost a lot of blood and she needs serious medical attention

I nodded and followed right behind them but I was stopped in my tracks by Loyiso

Loy: tata funa umama

Me: ndizawbuya naye umama boy. Hamba kukuku ngok

Him: ulimele umama. Ndilbonile igazi

I picked him up then walked towards where the rest of the family was. His brother and his sister were with Lwa's parents so I gave Loyiso to my dad

Dad: qina nyana wam

I nodded then ran to my car. I was curious to know whether Atha survived but I didn't care because the one person I cared about is Lwa. I drove to the hospital like a maniac only to be told to wait in the waiting room. They wouldn't tell me anything which frustrated me more. An hour later I was joined by Mike and my friends

Marc: how is the Mrs doing?

Me: andaz. They haven't told me anything

He nodded and we all sat down and waited in silence. Everyone was busy on their phones and I was just lost in my thoughts. I can't lose Lwa. Not today. I wouldn't survive without her, what would I tell our kids? Mikaela is still so young, she needs her mother. My thoughts were interrupted by the sound of Mike's phone ringing. He excused himself and answered it a distance away from us. I checked the time and saw that almost 3hrs had passed and not a single hospital employee has come to us. I got up and punched the wall which made the gents jump up

Ntando: Soso don't do this to yourself

Me: this is frustrating and no one is telling me anything. I just want to know that she is OK

Mike returned as my temper was cooling off. He looked a bit absentminded but I wasn't going to ask. I have enough problems of my own

Luke: Mike what's up?

Mike: Jason has been arrested

Me: arrested? For what?

Mike: attempted murder

Me: attempted? So that asshole survived? Yeses that guy's ancestors work overtime

After 5 long hours the doctors came out to us and I immediately got up

Dr: Smith?

Me: yes. How is she doc?

Dr: sit down Mr Smith

Me: I'd rather stand. Just tell me how my wife is doing

Dr: I'm really going to need you to sit down.

Mike: Soso please sit

I clicked my tongue then sat down. The doctor took a few deep breathes and I knew it wasn't going to be good news

Dr: your wife lost a lot of blood and her injuries are quite critical. We were unable to remove the bullet

I felt my heart jump to my throat. I suddenly wasn't able to speak and I wasn't understanding anything the doctor was saying

Dr: the bullet is too close to her spine and removing it might result in spinal damage which could result in your wife being paralyzed

I couldn't take anymore of this. I needed to get out of here. I can't stand to listen to this doctor as he kills every bit of hope I have. I got up and walked towards my car, opened it, got in and locked myself inside. I rested my head on the steering wheel and the tears just involuntarily rolled down my cheeks. Andizokwazi anymore, I can't take this. When things start looking good for us, there is always something that will tear us down and try to break our faith. I'm tired of fighting things I don't even know. After a while I picked myself up then drove home. I opened the date then parked outside the garage. Now I have to look at my kids, Lwa's parents and family and break the news to them. I got out the car and slowly opened the door. Everyone turned to look at me as I slowly walked towards the lounge where everyone was seated except MaRose and the kids. They all waited for me to sit down before throwing their questions at me

L's mom: how's my baby? Is she awake yet?

I slowly shook my head before burying it in my hands. My own mother gently rubbed my back as I tried to stop the tears in my eyes then I told them what the doctor had said

L's dad: this is all my fault. I got my own daughter shot. I should have listened to her when she said Atha wasn't all that he made himself out to be. Now my one and only daughter is laying lifeless in the hospital because of me.

His wife held him while trying to calm him down.

L's dad: I invited him to the wedding because...

I didn't let him finish because I jumped from my seat and held him against the wall using his shirt. At that moment I didn't care that he was my elder and my wife's father, I wanted to kill him

Dad: Lwandiso nyana wam yehlisa umoya. Let go of TatuHadebe

His words fell on deaf ears as I stared into the eyes of the man who brought my enemy to my wedding. I hated him so much and I wasn't going to hide it

Me: I want you out of my house right now. I have no room for traitors and back stabbers in my life.

Mom: Soso calm down. You can't kick him out, he is family

Me: family? This good for nothing excuse of a man is no family of mine

I clicked my tongue then went upstairs to my room. The room was filled with Lwa's scent, everything about it just reminded me of what happened earlier today. I took my clothes off then got in the shower. I sat on the shower floor while the water ran on my head and onto my body. I stayed there for almost an hour then got up, washed my body and turned the tap off. I grabbed my towel and walked out to the room.

Ndathambisa then ndakhupha ijean yeguess emnyama neT-shirt emnyama ndanxiba then wore my black sneakers, sprayed my cologne, put my black leather wrist watch on, grabbed my phone and walked out. I stopped at the nursery where my boys were sleeping on the bed and my princess was sleeping in the cot. I stared at them while leaning against the door frame then suddenly I felt a squeeze on my shoulder. I turned around and saw Enzo

Enzo: uzobaright uLwa

I didn't respond, I just stared at my babies. I walked in and planted kisses on their foreheads then walked towards the door again. Enzo was still standing there

Enzo: you heading to the hospital?

I nodded then walked past him

Enzo: I'm coming with you

KK: nam

The rest of the family wanted to come as well so we drove there with my parents in my car and Lwa's family in the other cars

Mom: Lwandiso

Me: mama

Her: you should apologize to tatuHadebe

Me: asoze

Dad: hayi Lwandiso. We didn't raise you to disrespect your elders

Me: ndiyayaz but kalok tata respect is earned and utatuHadebe has lost mine. Kutheni elnviter uAtha emtshadweni wam? What for? I'm sure he wanted Atha to kill me and I blame him wholeheartedly for Lwa being in hospital

Mom tried saying something but dad told her to let me be. Ukufika kwethu esbhedlela, the doctor wasixelela ukuba we can't all go in. Only 5 people at a time so we let the Hadebes go in first since my family was larger. Kalok Enzo noLandile bakhona nabo and I wanted to go in ndodwa. After 10 minutes, they came out and mom, dad, Mike, Enzo and Landile went in.

Nami: what happened to Atha?

I shrugged my shoulders then shifted my gaze to Lwa's dad and clicked my tongue. Uyandicabukisa lotata fock mahn. Ndabashiya ndaya to the cafe just to pass time. I bought orange juice then returned when everyone was out. I took in a deep breath and walked to the room my beautiful wife was in. She was connected to breathing machines and she was no longer in her wedding dress. She looked peaceful and still ever so beautiful. I didn't know what to do or say to her so I just sat down and took her hand. The tears started flowing down my cheeks and I knew I'd get emotional which is why I wanted to be alone when I went in

Me: ndiyakuthanda MaHadebe and I can't wait for you to wake up so we can start our lives together. Ndiyakucela sthandwa sam. Ndicela uvuke

I got up, planted a kiss on her now dry lips and another on her forehead then walked out the room. I cleared my throat as I approached the family

Me: shall we?

My parents nodded and we went to the different cars and I dropped them off at their house and drove to my house. When I arrived, Lwa's family was still all over my house so I just walked up the stairs, opened the linen closet, pulled out a fleece blanket then opened the door to one of the guest rooms, walked in and threw myself on the bed. I stayed awake while thinking about the beautiful lady that laid in hospital right now who owns my heart. Lwa doesn't deserve this and as long as Atha still breaths, Lwa and I will never find peace. I tossed and turned for hours without finding any sleep. I decided to go downstairs for a glass of warm milk and muffins. I figured everyone else was asleep since ixesha bekungu 3am so I just walked out the room in just my boxers. As I walked down the stairs, I realized that someone else was up

Me: hey Lolz

Lolz: hey Soso

Me: can't sleep?

She shook her head and judging by the redness of her eyes, she had been crying. I walked into the kitchen, poured milk into two glasses then put it in the microwave, warmed it for 45secs then placed 6 muffins on a plate and waited for the milk. When the microwave made the sound, which indicated that it was done, I took the glasses out, placed them on a tray with the plate of muffins and headed to the lounge

Me: have some. they might help you sleep

Lolz: thanks, Soso

We ate in silence until after a while she broke it

Her: can I ask you something?

Me: sure

Her: what is it about me that just makes guys want to leave me after sleeping with me? first it was Chris, then your brother and now its Laa. Am I cursed or something?

Season 3

Insert 36

Soso

Weeks turned into months without Lwa waking up. The doctors had informed me that there was nothing more they could do since everything was fine and it was all in Lwa's hands now. Atha on the other hand was found dead in his hospital bed just a few days after being admitted. I still have no idea who is behind it but rumor has it that it was Lwa's brothers. The date is 23 December, 3 months 2 weeks and 4 days since Lwa was admitted in hospital. The kids and I have been coming to see her everyday and everyday the twins would ask me when their mommy was going to wake up while Mikaela was just too young to understand. She was now 8 months old and such a naughty and busy baby. I woke up early, took a shower then went downstairs where I found my mom feeding Kaela

Me: morning mom. Morning princess

I kissed their heads then headed for the kitchen but I stopped in my tracks when I heard my mom speak

Mom: your food is in the microwave

Me: I'm not hungry ma but thanks

Her: look at yourself my boy, I'm losing you with every day that passes. I don't remember the last time you ate a proper meal and you've lost so much weight because of that

I sighed loudly because my mom was being dramatic. Yes, I've lost a few pants sizes over the last couple of months but it wasn't that bad. I went to take my food out the microwave, took a streak of bacon and a cocktail cheese sausage then poured myself a glass of water and went back to the dining area

Me: Loyiso! Qhawe!

They came running in with MaRose right behind them. She greeted then helped them put their sneakers

Loy: sobona umama?

Me: ewe my boy

Q: uzovuka namuhla?

Me: andaz boy

He nodded and focused on his shoes. I hated what this whole thing was doing to my kids. Lwa is all these kids know, yes, they know and love me but she is their mom and she understands them way more than I do. After breakfast I fastened the kids' seatbelts then got in the driver's seat

Me: ready guys?

Kaela: Dada

She showed me her 8 teeth smile with her eyes half closed. My baby has small eyes so when she smiles, they close halfway. She looks so much like me but I see so much of my mom in her, my birth mother that is

Loy: masambe kalok tata

I snapped out of my little dream world and started the ignition of the car then drove to the hospital. We walked out the car and into the hospital and the way we were here all the time, the nurses knew us on a first name basis. I was holding Mikaela and Loyiso was holding his brother's hand

Nurse Aphile: the cutest boys in the world

My sons giggled as she picked Qhawe up

Me: morning nurse

I smiled and she followed with her smile that revealed her silver tooth. It didn't look ghetto on her it actually looked cute. She was the shy type but she loved my kids and they loved her too

Q: uvukile umama yanti?

She looked down and I knew that nothing had change. I flashed her another smile, this one was weaker than the one I had before

Me: masambe Qhawe

She gently put him down and we went to Lwa's room. I removed the dead flowers, threw them in the bin then put the ones I had arrived with. I removed the crust from her eyes and applied Vaseline on her dry lips then gently pecked them. The twins imitated me and placed pecks on their mom's lips

Aphile: you really love her neh

I didn't even realize that she had followed us into the room. I turned to face her then nodded

Me: she is my everything. I don't even want to begin imagining life without her

Her: wow. Any other guy would have given up by now but you come in everyday to change her flowers, apply Vaseline on her lips and talk to her. She is really lucky

I smiled to myself because this lady doesn't know that I'm the lucky one, I'm the one that has hurt her in the worst way but she has continued to love me and stayed with me regardless of that

Me: I'm the lucky one. I just wish she could just wake up already. I miss the sound of her voice more than anything else

Her: hmm let me give you some privacy

Loy: hamba nawe yanti

Me: hayi boy uAuntie uyasebenza

Aphile: I don't mind taking them. I'm sure you need time alone with your wife

Me: are you sure?

She nodded while taking Qhawe and Loyiso's hands. She left Kaela because she is daddy's princess and she doesn't go anywhere without daddy. She has been sitting on Lwa's legs the whole time and crawling all over her

Me: yiza kum bhabha

Kae: mama dada

Me: yiza kalok nana

She giggled until I took her and placed her on my lap then took Lwa's hand into mine

Me: ndiyakukhumbula maHadebe wam. Vuka kalok sthandwa sam. I can't do this thing called life without you anymore. We need you as your family. You should see how grown Yandisa is now, she can almost walk and she broke your favorite vase the other day. Lol uyaybona mos le epha ngase dining? Ifile ngok. So much has happened my love. I love you so much nanazi yam

I quickly wiped the tears that were rolling down my cheeks. After an hour, I took my princess and we went to look for the princes. We found them at reception, I thanked the nurses then Aphile offered to walk us out. She helped me buckle the kids up

Me: enkosi sisi

Aphile: pleasure. Jonga Soso, if ever you need someone to help you with the kids, feel free to give me a call

Me: uyaphangela kalok wethu, how would you help?

Her: I'm going on leave ngomso until mid Jan

She handed me a paper with her number on it, I was hesitant at first but she insisted that I take it and I did. We said our goodbyes and I drove off

Two days later it was Christmas and there was nothing merry about it. MaRose was with her family and the kids were at my parents' house so I was at my house alone. I was woken up by the sound of my phone, I searched for it under my pillow with my eyes closed and answered without checking the caller ID

Me: hello

Aphile: molo tata wamawele

I removed the phone from my ear, checked the caller ID to confirm that it indeed was Aphile

Me: unjani?

Her: I'm great. Merry Christmas Lwandiso

Me: Merry Christmas to you too.

Then there was an awkward silence. I cleared my throat which made her speak up

Her: I was calling to invite you to church. I don't know whether it's your thing but it can't hurt

I shuffled around the bed then sat up thinking of the politest way to turn down this offer. I wasn't in the mood for strangers, I just want to be alone with my miseries then go spend Christmas with my wife

Me: uhm I have plans with my family then I'm going to go visit my wife at the hospital

Her: ohhh

She sounded a little disappointed. If I didn't know better I'd think this lady has a crush on me but sadly for her, I'm not interested. She was cute and all that but I just want my Lwa to wake up

Me: askies neh but enjoy church

Her: thanks. I'll pray for you like I always do

With that said, she hung up. I placed my phone on the other pillow then ndanqenqa ebhedini just going through my thoughts. Around 10am I dragged myself out of bed and made my way downstairs. I poured coco pops into a bowl without milk then went to watch TV. I placed my feet in the coffee table then quickly removed them when I thought of Lwa telling me to get my feet of her table. I let out a chuckle then switched to cartoons. I needed a distraction just to get over this day. I watched cartoons for 2 hrs then went to shower and wore caramel chinos folded at the bottom, white boot allstars and a black T-shirt. Ndafaka iwatch yam yebrown leather, took my phone, walked out the house and drove to the hospital. Lwa was still the same, I did my usual then chilled with her for 2hrs and as always, I got emotional. I never thought I'd find myself in this situation, spending my Christmas at a hospital while umuntu wam elele looking lifeless. It hurts more than words could express, I feel so empty without her presence, its like I'm an empty shell just passing through the days. I look at my kids and feel like such a failure, I've tried to keep life as normal as possible for them but each and everyday they wake up asking for mommy. I can't take it anymore, I'm a man but I'm barely strong enough for myself, how much more for my little Kaela and the twins? After the 2hrs, I left, bought food at KFC then drove home and as I was settling with my bucket of chicken, there was a knock at the door. I ignored but

the person wouldn't give up so I went to open. I was caught by surprise when I saw who was at the door

Me: what are you doing here?

She smiled, showing me her silver tooth

Aphile: can I come in?

She had Tupperware containers with her. I moved out the way and she walked in

Me: how do you know where I live?

Her: don't be mad but I checked your wife's file. Is that the kitchen?

She made her way to the kitchen before I responded

Me: you did what? Why would you do that?

Her: where are the plates?

I pointed at the cupboard with the plates and she took them out and started dishing up for us. I'm talking seven colors and all sorts of salads. She warmed up the food while I looked at her with questioning eyes

Her: relax torho Soso, andisostalker. I promise you

Me: I didn't say you were. I have plans though

Her: hmmm

Me: I swear to you

The microwave beeped and she took the food out and went to the lounge

Me: uhm no eating in the lounge. My wife's rules

She nodded then placed the food on the dining table then sat opposite me. I really wasn't hungry but I didn't want to be rude. I dug in and the food was good

Me: hmmm this is good food

She smiled then nodded and continued eating. After the lunch, I loaded the dishwasher while she channel hopped then I joined her

Me: what's your deal Aphile? Uyayaz ukuba nditshadile fondin.

Her: yeah, I know

Me: so why are you here?

Her: just helping a friend out. You need it wethu

Me: lol sizichomi ngoku?

She smiled again, shyly this time. Ucute mahn nalomntana, ngathi mncinci phof

Me: enkosi chomam evha

She smiled again and nodded. She chose a movie then we watched it. It was a comedy and we were laughing like crazy. I'd catch her every now and then staring at me.

Season 3

Insert 37

Soso

As time went by, my friendship with Aphile grew and we became really close. She has been there for me and my kids, sometimes I'd leave the kids with her when I want to see Lwa on my own and she would cook for us since MaRose is still on leave. I woke up on the 31st, bathed my kids and then dropped them off at my parents' house and drove to the hospital. My phone rang as I was still driving. It was Aphile

Me: chomam

Aphile: hey friend, uright?

Me: ewe ndiright. Unjani wena?

Her: I'm good. I hear you are driving, I hope you are bringing my babies to me

Me: lol abantwana bakho neh. Nah I'm going to the hospital, I left them with my parents

Her: oh great. I hope you don't have plans tonight because there is a braai at home and I'd like you to come

Me: definitely I'll be there. Just text me the directions.

Her: cool

I pulled up at the hospital so I had to hang up. I grabbed the flowers and walked into the hospital, I greeted everyone at the reception area then when I opened the door to Lwa's room, the doctor was busy with her. He turned his head when he saw me and flashed me a smile

Doc: morning Mr Smith

Me: morning doc. How is she today?

He moved away from the bed and I was greeted by the most beautiful smile that I've been missing over the past couple of months. I immediately rushed to her bedside

Me: baby you are awake.

I turned to the doctor

Me: why didn't anyone call me? When did she wake up? Is she OK?

Lwa: baby calm down. I'm OK

I helped her sit up then placed a pillow behind her back so she will be comfortable then she cleared her throat. I poured her a glass of water and handed it to her

Lwa: thank you baby. I asked the doctor not to call you because I needed to familiarize myself with my surroundings

I was so happy that she is finally awake, that she is back to me, to us and I was still in disbelief. I couldn't wait for the doctor to leave so I can spend time with my wife. The doctor did all the tests and then he left. I didn't even wait for him to be out the door before I smashed my lips on to Lwa's and she smiled throughout the kiss then wanted to pull back. I placed my hand at the back of her head and brought her even closer to me and continued with the kiss until I felt my dick tingle then I broke the kiss

Me: hmmm how I've missed these juicy lips of yours

Lwa: I've missed you too. You and the kids. Where are my kids Lwandiso?

She had a bit of panic in her voice and I just smiled and kissed her forehead. Our moment was interrupted by the sound of my phone. I checked the caller ID and the moment I saw Aphile's number, I immediately switched my phone off. For some strange reason I was feeling guilty for the call, I don't even know why because nothing ever happened between Aphile and I.

Lwa: who was that?

Me: no one important. Ndiyakwethembisa baby. Shifta kalok baby, I want to get close to you

She smiled, almost blushing and then made space for me. I got on the bed then made her place her head on my chest and held her tightly

Me: undixelele xa ndikuthunika uyeva nanazi

I kissed her head then she nodded

*

*

Lwa

When I woke up, my throat was dry and everything was just dark. I didn't know where I was and I was terrified. I saw water on my bedside so I poured a glass then put a straw in the glass and took a sip. After a minute or two, I realized that I was at the hospital so I buzzed the nurse and she came rushing in, followed by the doctor

Nurse: good evening Mrs Smith

Me: Mrs Smith? Sorry but I'm Mis-

Then memory of my wedding day, getting shot and seeing Atha came back to me then I immediately panicked

Doc: I'm going to need you to calm down Mrs Smith

It felt so strange hearing that title, its going to require a whole lot of getting used to. The doctor checked my blood pressure and my temperature

Doc: your blood pressure is a little high so please try not to stress too much because you might slip into a coma again. I will get reception to call your husband and inform him that you are awake

Me: uhm no, please don't tell him yet. Let's wait for tomorrow

Him: as you wish

I nodded as tears filled my eyes. The doctor left and I was now with just the nurse

Me: sorry sister, can you please tell me what date it is?

Nurse: it's the 30th of December

Me: what?

I've been asleep for almost 4months. How is that even possible? I touched my stomach and felt a scar. I lifted my hospital dress and saw that I had I scar there. Tears rolled down my cheeks. I can't wait to face Atha and watch him and the police take him to jail, that's if he isn't in jail already. The nurses organized food for me and

I ate a bit then left it. I didn't have much of an appetite but I ate because I still had medication to take. After eating, I pushed the food tray away and just closed my eyes. I wasn't sleeping but I was just lost in my thoughts. Whatever went wrong with Atha? How could he shoot me when he claims that he loves me, why cause me so much hurt and in the presence of my family and my sons? What would have happened if one of those bullets had hit the twins? Yeses I would have killed him with my own hands. While I was resting my eyes, two nurses walked in and the moment they saw that my eyes were closed, they must have assumed that I was sleeping. I was about to open my eyes and sit up when I heard their conversation

Nurse1: ndiyakuxelela wethu, she woke up today. Shame poor Aphile

Nurse2: poor Aphile my nonexistent testicles. She knows that Smith is married and she still went after him. What did she expect? That his wife was never going to wake up?

Nurse1: I still feel bad for her. She will be so devastated

I shuffled around then yawned and sat up

Nurse2: you are up Lwandile. Ndizise izipilisi zakho

I flashed her a fake smile, took the pills and threw them in my mouth then took a gulp of water

Nurse1: well then goodnight

I smiled again as I placed the covers over my head. Who is this Aphile person and what's the deal ngaye noSoso? I swear if Soso has been cheating on me, this marriage will be over before it even starts. I tossed and turned throughout the night until the pills knocked me out and, in the morning, I was woken up by a different nurse with the doctor. They did their check up and tests then the nurse left while the doctor stayed

Me: when do you think I can go home doc?

Doc: in a week max

Me: I can't wait

Just then the door opened, I couldn't see who was at the door since the doctor was blocking my view but within seconds his scent filled the room and the sound of his voice sent chills down my spine. I'd missed him so much but his voice wasn't strange because its like I could hear it while I was in the coma and as much as I couldn't make out what he was saying but I could hear his voice. When he saw that I'm awake, he literally dropped the flowers that he was holding and rushed to my side. He looked drop dead gorgeous in his denim shorts, baby blue v-neck short sleeved tight-fitting T-shirt and white Adidas sneakers. If I had the strength, I would have jumped out the bed and straight into his arms. When his phone rang and he declined the call, I knew something was up but I didn't want to be too obvious about it. When he got in bed with me and I placed my head on his chest while his arm was snaked around my waist, I didn't care about what had happened while I was in a coma because this absolutely gorgeous and sexy man was all mine.

Soso: sthandwa sam

Me: hmmm

Him: I missed you so much. Its been such a sad and hurtful time without you. I wished everyday that it was me that was shot and not you. You are my everything mamakhe and ndicela uxolo ngokuthi azange ndakukhusela. I failed you within minutes of being your husband. Please find it in your heart to forgive me

I felt wetness drop on the top of my head and I lifted myself from his embrace to look at him and he was crying. Not just light crying but sobbing crying

Me: hey, baby its not your fault. There was nothing you could do. I don't blame you, no one does.

I lifted my head to his then gently pecked his lips but he pulled me in for a deeper kiss which left me feeling a little damp between my legs. I moaned in his mouth and broke the kiss when I felt his erection on my inner thigh

Him: I can't wait to take you home and make love to you. I have a lot of releasing to do and feeling your hot skin against me isn't helping one bit

If only he knew how much I was in heat and in need of his touch in every part of my body. We spent the rest of the day just talking and catching up. Every time the

nurses tried to kick him out, he refused. The only thing that led to him leaving was the pills taking their toll on me and I started getting drowsy

Me: baby, I'm getting sleepy

Him: its OK my love. I'll go get you food and snacks wena just rest

I nodded, he got out of bed, adjusted his shorts then kissed my forehead

Him: I love you so much Lwandile. You are my everything baby wam

I smiled, slightly blushing of course. My man is gorgeous when he is so vulnerable. Its cute and sexy at the same time

Me: I love you more babe. I'll see you tomorrow

Him: tomorrow? Why tomorrow?

Me: its New Year's Eve, I'm sure you have plans

Him: I do. With my gorgeous wife and our kids right here. No one and nothing are more important than you guys. Lala Mrs me. I'll be back later

He blew me a kiss which I caught and placed on my heart. The minute he walked out, I grabbed the pillow he was resting on and cuddled with it then drifted off to dreamworld. I love my king and our princes and princess.

Season 3

Insert 38

Lwa

5 years later

Soso: come on babe we really have to get going. Our flight is in an hour and we still have to drop off the kids at my parents' house

Me: that's easy for you to say that, you not the one that is carrying 2 babies in your stomach

He walked up to me, stopping me from packing, then he took my hands in his, got on his knees and kissed my belly and his kids kicked me

Him: and I thank you everyday for blessing me with this gift of fatherhood again. You look absolutely gorgeous my love

I was dressed in a pink maxi dress with my slippers and my weave was tied in a messy bun.

Me: stand up baby so you can help me pack

Just then there was a knock at our door. The knock was soft and I knew it was Yandisa so Soso went to open the door

Yandi: morning daddy. Morning mommy

Me: morning baby. Have you packed?

Yandi: yep but the suitcase is too small mommy. I need a big one

Me: Lwandiso please go look at what your child packed and how she packed

He picked his daughter up and left our room while I finished packing. Soso was finally taking me on the honeymoon we were supposed to go on after getting married but life got in the way. We were going to Miami for a week. I finished packing, got everything in check then went to check on the boys. I walked to their room and found them trying to close the suitcase

Me: did you guys pack or did you just throw clothes in?

Loy: we packed mommy. The suitcase is too small

Q: mom can't we go to malum Sakhile's house? Its more fun there

Me: since when don't you like uncle Mike and aunt Pali? I thought you love khulu and makhulu

Loy: we do but Avery and Lwakho are babies, they don't understand us

Avery and Lwakhlonke are Mike and Pali's sons. Avery is 4 and Lwakho is 2. Loyiso and Qhawe are close with Sakhile because he spoils them and he gives them his full attention ngoba he doesn't have kids

Me: I'll take you to malum Sakhile when we come back uyezwa boy. Finish packing so we can leave please. I left them then went to Yandisa's room and she and her dad were done so they put the bags in the car, we locked the doors then drove off. We dropped the kids off and Mike drove us to the airport

Mike: Lwa when are you due? Yeses you are huge

Me: fuck off Mike

I showed him the middle finger then pouted and folded my arms across my chest as I felt the tears threatening my eyes. I can't wait to get these babies out of me and sadly I'm only at 6months. I placed my head on Soso's shoulder and sobbed. He rubbed my back then kissed my forehead

Soso: askies nanazi. Mike is being an asshole don't listen to him. You are beautiful wena Mrs Me

Mike: lol Lwa ntwana uyakhala? Wena strong bow sami? Suba njalo my nigga

I couldn't help but laugh. The tears just rolled down my cheeks while I laughed and cried at the same time. Pregnancy ayijwayeleki yaz. It gets me everytime

After 14hrs of flying, we finally arrived at our hotel room and I just threw myself on the bed

Me: please remind me again why we didn't just go on honeymoon after the babies are born?

Soso: because you wouldn't leave your kids and I need some loving before life gets crazy

He got in bed next to me then made me rest my head on his lap while he played with my hair. I was still trying to wrap my head around having 5 kids. After these two I'm getting my womb removed. I can't just keep popping babies

Him: what's on your mind? You seem to be far away

Me: nothing my love. I just want to enjoy this week with you

Him: well in that case, how's about we go check out the beach, have a few cocktails and just relax? How about that?

I sat up and we shared a long kiss which led to me feeling tingly between my legs so I got up and straddled him with my legs on either side of his body then brought my face to his and he had his perfect smile on

Me: hey

Him: hi

Me: I want you

Him: I know

We continued kissing and one thing led to another and we had 2 rounds of slow loving making then we took a shower and hit the beach

The week flew by quite fast and I must admit that it felt amazing to just being away and spending quality time together. Having new years in Miami was quite the experience and its one I hope to repeat sometime soon. It was now Friday and we were back at our house, we just hadn't fetched the kids yet. Soso made me a fruit salad then brought it to the pool where I was sitting with my feet dipped inside

Me: ngiyabonga baby

Him: my pleasure mamakhe

Me: I can't wait for these kids to be out. Its hot and they are heavy

Him: askies nanazi

He sat next to me and ate bits of my salad with me then he took off his T-shirt, revealing his sexy abs and got in the water with his shorts on. He swam to me, made me open my legs and got between them. I wiped the water from his face then ran my thumb across his wet pink lips. I was so horny and to think we made love before leaving Miami but I still want him. His babies are turning me into a sex freak

Him: baby, are you even listening to me?

I had zoned out and the sound of his voice brought me back to reality

Me: uthini baby?

him: I'm thinking we should get a bigger house

Me: what for? Our house is perfect. 8 rooms are enough

Him: no, its not. Its 5 rooms for the kids, our room and MaRose's room and only one guest room. What if both our parents visit at the same time?

I tried getting up but he held me down. I was getting emotional because the topic of parents was a sensitive one kimi. I wasn't in talking terms with my dad since I found out that he invited Atha to the wedding to stop it. I still blame him for me getting shot and for the twins not getting a chance to meet their bio father. After I was discharged from the hospital I learned that Nami and Sakhile were behind Atha's death and even though we went weeks without talking, Soso eventually forced us to sit down and talk like adults so we get along now

Soso: uxolo baby. I didn't mean to upset you. I spoke without thinking

I nodded and wiped the tears with the back of my hand then just poked my salad around. He took a strawberry from the bowl and tried feeding me but I shook my head

Him: awuyifuni?

I shook my head again, smiling a little

Him: well I'm not feeding you, I'm feeding my son and my daughter so open wide

Me: lol please just help me up so I can get started on dinner and you need to go shower then fetch your kids

Him: let's fetch them ngomso baby. I still want you to myself

He said this while getting out the pool. His shorts were dripping wet and stuck on his body, clearly outlining his manhood. I swallowed spit while drooling at this man in front of me. He smiled while shaking his head then helped me up, placed his hands on my waist then pulled me closer. Even though our bodies were touching, he was still a bit far from me because of my stomach

Him: ndicela undihlambe baby

I didn't need a second invitation. I helped him out of his shorts then kissed him hungrily as I led him to the bathroom downstairs because walking up the stairs would have taken too long. He helped me out of the strapless dress I was wearing then kissed me while rubbing my boobs. I moaned in his mouth and I grabbed his king and started stroking it which made him groan. I was so wet and wanted him so badly and judging by how hard he was, he wanted me as well. I stroked him faster while tightening my grip which led to him placing his hand over my hand

Him: slow down baby, you are going to make me explode all over your hand. Now turn around baby

I did as he had asked while he gently and slowly started playing with my queen, pinching my clit which made me instantly jump

Me: stop playing baby and give me what's mine

Him: lol you are such a freak sthandwa sam

As I was about to respond, I felt the tip of his king at the opening of my queen and let out a loud moan instead

Him: fuck Lwa you are so wet and so hot

I backed up so he can fully enter me but he moved back. I was getting frustrated and he knew it

Me: mxm awufuni nepipi lakho Lwandiso

Him: lol ipipi? Ndinepipi mna baby? Tchin ndizakubonisa ipipi

With no warning, he slammed into me and screamed as the pleasure and pain took over my body. He fucked me from behind for 40mins while I came over and over again and screaming his name with every thrust he made

Me: I lo...ve you Soso. Shit baby I love you so much.

Him: I love you

Then he came while holding on to my waist tightly. When he pulled out, I felt his seeds dripping down my legs as I slid to the ground. The tiles felt so cool against my hot body

Him: phinde ndikuve uthi ndinepipi mna Lwa, you will see stars while I fuck you. Umthondo lo mtchanam.

Me: lol calm down. Don't be so extra over something so stupid

Him: hayi baby. Its a serious thing kum.

Me: askies ke my love. Never again

Him: good

He started playing with my boobs, pinching my nipples every now and then

Me: let's shower before you get me horny again

Him: I love you so much more when you are pregnant. You are horny all the time and your body is so much fuller in the sexiest way. If I had it my way, I'd be buried in you 24/7

After our shower, he went to fetch the kids and I started on dinner. As I was rinsing the rice, there was a buzz at the gate. I wiped my hands with the dish cloth then picked up the phone

Aphile: Lwa open please

Me: why didn't you open? You have the number nje babe

Her: ndilibele iPhone endlini

I opened the gate and within minutes she was in my kitchen, sitting on the counter. That's one of the many things that she has in common with Soso. I won't lie, I was a

bit jealous, OK, more than a bit jealous about her friendship with my husband. Especially because she is an attractive single woman but as time went by, I relaxed. The kids love her, especially Yandisa and she is an amazing person in general.

Me: how did you know we were back?

Aphile: I was just taking a chance. I'm actually coming from gym

She was dressed in yoga pants which showed off her perfectly round ass and a sports bra. She has a belly ring and perky boobs.

Me: I was about to ask why you driving around without clothes on

Season 3

Insert 39

Lwa

Soso walked in while Aphile and I were watching keeping up with the Kardashians. I was already done with the cooking so she had her glass of wine while I sipped on grape juice. The moment Yandisa saw Aphile, she ran to her

Yandi: auntie AP. You are here

Aphile picked her up and placed her on her lap while the twins walked towards me with their dad

Aphile: how are you my angel. You look gorgeous my little diva.

Then she turned to the twins who were sitting on either side of me with their heads on my lap. Soso returned from putting the bags upstairs, kissed my cheek then sat on the armrest and stared at Aphile

Soso: Aphile

Aphile turned her focus from Yandisa to Soso

Aphile: hey chomam

Soso: ugrand ngqawa?

Aphile: I'm top ntwana yam

Soso nodded then turned to the TV but I know my man, something was bothering him but I didn't press him for answers

Q: mama

Me: yah boy

Q: I'm hungry

Loy: me too

Yandi: me three

I let out a chuckle as I made my way to the kitchen where I took out plates

Me: AP are you staying for dinner?

To my surprise it was Soso that responded

Soso: uhm no baby AP is leaving now

Me: oh, OK uhambe kahle Aphile. We shall have lunch midweek

Aphile: sure, thing babe

She came into the kitchen, gave me a hug then Soso walked her out. I dished up for everyone

Me: Loyiso

He came running into the kitchen

Loy: ma

Me: set the table please. Ask your brother to help you

When the table was set, I placed the plates then called Soso and the kids to come eat.

Q: mom when can we go to uncle Sakhile's house?

Soso: next weekend

Loy: but dad, mom said we will go when you guys come back from your trip

Soso: well you can't go this week, niya kwaDlamini this week

I almost choked on my food. Soso can't just decide to take my kids to Atha's family without talking to me about it and the twins were not exactly pleased about all this

Q: bio dad's family? Yho hayi tata mna andizokwaz. I don't like that place. Those people are just weird

When the twins turned 5, Soso and I sat them down and told them about Atha. We told them the good, the bad and all about the craziness that was their father. It was after we told them that we changed their surname to Smith.

Yandi: mommy, what's bio dad?

Loy: ay sugxama mahn Yandisa. Akuthethwa nawe

Wayiphoxa uLoyiso ingane yam, kwabuhlungu kimi

Soso: hayi Loyiso kutheni waphoxa umntana ngoku?

Loy let out a sigh and continued eating. After dinner, I cleared the table, loaded the dishwasher then threw myself on the couch

Me: bath, teeth and bed guys

Q: it's holidays mama and we still want to watch home alone 2

Me: boys you have a bedtime for a reason and it remains the same even during holidays

Loy: this is so unfair. Avery has a later bedtime than us and he is a baby

They got up simultaneously, mumbling things under their breaths

Me: I'm not Avery's parents and you are not Avery so please just go bath singaze sixabane

They went upstairs while Yandisa came to her father. Soso was close with all the kids but the princess owns his heart the most because she is the youngest and the only girl

Yandi: daddy you are going to come tuck me in, right?

Soso: yes princess

Yandi: and read sleeping beauty to me until I fall asleep

Soso: Yandisa you have a whole bookshelf of books, I can't read you sleeping beauty all the time. Phof ke I don't even read it anymore, you sing it to me ngoba you know it word for word

She smiled that adorable smile of hers that leads to her golden-brown eyes half closing. She is her father's daughter in every aspect of the word

Yandi: please dad. You know I love you daddy. You are best daddy in the world

She pouted and I just laughed because Yandisa now has Soso wrapped around her little pinky

Me: go bath princess, daddy will come read you whatever story you want. Give mommy a kiss

I pouted my lips as she climbed on the couch, pecked my lips then gave my belly a kiss too. Soso picked her up and started tickling her and she squirmed and giggled

Soso: so, daddy doesn't get a kiss?

Yandi: lol daddy...stop. I'm going to pee

Me: Lwandiso if this child pees on my expensive couch, you are buying me a new one

*

*

Soso

When I walked into the house and saw Aphile half naked in my house, I got a little uncomfortable. She is my friend and all that but boundaries need to be set. When Lwa went into the kitchen, I took this moment to address this

Me: AP

AP: hmmm

Me: kutheni ufika kwam unganxibanga?

Her: ndinxibile Soso. Uyabona mos

Me: you are parading around in my house with just a bra. Uthi makathini umfaz wam?

She frowned her eyebrows then shrugged her shoulders. Our conversation was interrupted by Lwa shouting across the house and when I said Aphile was leaving, she gave me a confused look but didn't disagree. She said her goodbye to Lwa then I walked her out

Her: uyandigxotha?

Me: its because you are not dressed. Andifuni uqhele ukuza apha unganxibanga. We are good friends mna nawe but boundaries need to be drawn.

Season 3

Insert 40

Soso

Me: Nditshadile mna and its already bad enough that I go through hell every other week for befriending an attractive single woman so all I'm asking is for you to respect my house and my wife.

She let out a sigh before nodding and getting into her car. I don't know what the sigh meant but I'm just glad I got my message across loud and clear. Later after the kids had taken their baths and I had just finished reading sleeping beauty to Yandisa for the hundredth time, I dimmed her lights then went to check on her brothers who were still sulking over watching home alone 2

Me: boys

I walked into the room and sat on one of the chairs which was situated between their beds

Q: daddy

Me: what's wrong?

Loy: daddy you know what's wrong. Mommy treats us like we are babies. We are 8 and a half years old and way to old to be forced to go to bed at 8

Me: is this about the movie or wanting to go to Queenstown?

Q: ai dad you won't understand so its fine let's leave it

Loyiso looked at his brother as if he was crazy

Loy: what's wrong with you friend? That wasn't part of the plan.

Qhawe just shrugged his shoulders and I let out a chuckle as I tucked them in bed. We did our handshake then I kissed their hands and dimmed their lights

Me: I'll record the movie for you guys then you will watch it in the morning

Loy: enkosi tata you are the best

That's what makes this fatherhood thing worthwhile, hearing my kids express their love for me and them telling me I'm the best. It annoys Lwa because she is the strict one that always has to be the bad cop. When I was done with the kids, I went back downstairs to spend some alone time with my wife but to my disappointment she had fallen asleep on the couch. I decided to let her be while I turned the dishwasher on and cleaned around the kitchen. When the dishes were done, I took them out, wiped them then put them in their places. I switched the lights off in the kitchen and dining area before going to the lounge to wake Lwa up. I snuggled next to her then shook her a little bit just to wake her up

Lwa: mmmmh

Me: let's go to bed

Her: no, I'm still watching the Kardashians

I laughed because the show ended ages ago

Me: yiza kalok baby

After a few minutes of going back and forth with her, she eventually got up and we made our way up the stairs after I had switched the lights off and switched the alarm on. When I walked into our bedroom, the person who couldn't wake up from the couch not so long ago was now wide awake

Me: aren't you going to get in bed?

Her: I will but right now I want chocolate ice cream with ultramel and oreos

I huffed loudly as I sank on the bed, I've had a long day and all I wanted right now was to sleep

Me: seriously Lwa? Why didn't you say so while we were downstairs?

Her: I didn't want it then and its not me that wants this, its your kids

This is the part of the pregnancy that I hated. This and the moodiness

*

*

Lwa

Days passed and it was now a week later and Soso was picking the twins up from their great grandmother's house and bringing Alwande to visit us. I had just warmed up pies for Yandisa and I to have for lunch when Enzo called. I quickly swallowed the piece of pie I had been chowing and answered my phone

Me: hey bae

Enzo: unjani buddy? I miss you so much

Me: lol don't let your wife hear you

Him: neh? And you women are crazy when you are pregnant

Me: lol don't call my friend crazy Enzokuhle

2years ago Enzo broke up with Tumi and started dating Noma while she was still with Syanda then 5 months ago, Noma discovered that she was pregnant with Enzo's baby and they got married in court 4 months ago

Him: lol Soso would definitely agree with me. Buddy the reason why I called is because I need your help. I want to plan a surprise wedding for Noma before she gives birth

I've heard of surprise parties, surprise baby showers and surprise engagement but I've never heard of a surprise wedding

Me: a what? How would that even work?

Him: angaz bae but I want to do this for her. Every woman wants a fairytale wedding and I want to give her that

Me: ncoah kodwa buddy you are the sweetest guy ever

He chuckled shyly. Enzo can move mountains for you if he truly cares about you. He is a loving guy that isn't afraid to show it and embrace it

Me: I'll help wherever I can

Him: thank you so much bae wam. Say hey to my niece and nephews

Me: will do

I hung up then continued with my lunch then Yaya and I went for a swim. It was hot, that January type of heat. After an hour or so, I heard Mike's voice in the house then little Lwakho came running out to us. Pali and Mike's sons are too cute for words

Me: hello Lwakho

He giggled as I tried getting out the pool then wrapped my body with a towel. Mike, Pali and Avery eventually came to us as well

Me: hey guys. Hey Avery

Avery: hello auntie

Pali: hey friendship

We shared a hug then I hugged Mike. I went inside to change into dry clothes, poured Pali some wine then got Mike a beer and juice for myself and the kids.

Season 3

Insert 41

Lwa

After an hour Soso walked in with his kids and my niece and nephew. Limile looks so much like his father, you'd swear Nami had denied him. Pali and I made the kids snacks while Soso and Mike inflated the kiddies pool for them since they wanted to swim

Pali: friendship I feel like we are running a creche here. So many kids

I laughed as I took out the watermelon from the fridge and began chopping it while Pali halved the strawberries

Me: lol don't say that Pali because I'm adding 2 more kids to the creche. Soso says we should get a bigger house and another nanny but I don't know. I love this house. We have so many memories here

Her: but he has a point my f. Your family is expanding and MaRose can't handle 5 kids on her own and as for the house part, change is good babe

I took out 7 desert bowls then started on the peaches and oranges then we mixed everything together in a big salad bowl and dished up the fruit salads for the kids. Soso walked in, I smelled him before I saw him. He kissed my cheek then kissed Pali's cheek and we laughed simultaneously

Soso: uright mamakhe?

He took a strawberry from the salad bowl and fed it to me

Me: yeah ngiright babakhe. Are the kids swimming yet?

Him: not yet. I want them to eat first

He jumped on the counter and started eating from the salad bowl which led to me smacking his hand

Me: why ungathi ngikuphakele?

Him: lol ndlyakcela mamakhe. With ultramel please

Pali giggled at us before taking the fruit salads to the kids. I opened the fridge and took out the liquifruit and the ultramel. I mixed the fruit salad and ultramel for Soso

Him: we should just have a braai straight. Invite Jason and whichever chick he is currently sleeping with

Me: as long as I won't have to do anything. I'm exhausted already

I gave him his salad and he pulled me closer to him, cupped my face then pecked my lips

Him: I love you my rib

I blushed a little and then smiled

Me: I love you too my heart. Now let's not be rude, we have guests

He jumped off the counter, held my waist then we walked out to the pool area where Pali and Mike were sucking face in the pool while the kids sat on the grass eating

Me: really guys? In front of the kids?

Mike: lol they are not even looking at us. So, the braai is happening right?

Soso: sure case boy. I'll call our brother and then we can go buy meat

Limile and Avery came running to us with their empty bowls

Li: gqibile auntie. Enkosi

Avery: thank you auntie

Me: my pleasure babies. Limile tell your sister to bring the other bowls and tell Loyiso to help her

He nodded, they gave me their bowls and ran off again

Soso: these kids basically ignored me

Me: lol they don't like you

He shot me a death stare while eating his ultramel and fruit salad. I felt that my feet were swollen so I sat down on the reclining pool chairs with my feet up. Soso sat down next to me while Mike and Pali got out the pool

Mike: call Jay kalok fondin. Ndlfunu ukusela mna

Pali: even me

Me: lol I take it Avery and Lwakho are sleeping over?

Mike: ewe ninja yam. I'll make it up to you evha

He kissed my cheek and I just laughed. They got dry and the guys left while Pali and I continued with watching the kids

Me: why did you and Mike have kids when you guys still want to live the wild life?

Pali: friendship none of my kids were planned. We have them because we had sex while drunk

We broke into laughter. Pali and Mike are crazy and they are definitely perfect for each other. We talked about nonsense until Mike, my bae, Jason and some white girl that looked like she was in highschool returned

Jay: the wives of my brothers

Pali: sfebe sabrother in law warona

Me: Palesa!!! Haaa aaah mahn

She raised her hands in defeat and shifted her attention to her man and Jason wasn't even bothered by her comment

Pali: baby ekae wine yaka?

Mike: in the fridge

She got up and Jay sat next to me with the toddler he came with sitting on his lap

Me: Jason

Jay: hmmm

He had his face buried kwicleavage yengane

Me: intro maybe

He lifted his head and chuckled

Jay: askies Lwa. This is my girl Britney. Brit this is Lwa, my brother's wife and the rude girl is Mike's girlfriend

The girl smiled shyly and I was tempted to ask how old she is but ngazibamba. I wonder when Jason will grow up and date someone and just settle down. We tired of meeting all these girls.

Later everyone was drunk except for Soso and I. Luckily the kids were all watching a movie in the theatre room and I was tired shame

Me: Lwandiso

Soso: baby

Me: I'm calling it a night. I'm exhausted

Him: OK babe. I'll come check on you in a few minutes

He kissed my head then helped me up. I went in the house then upstairs to check on the kids. I opened the door and found them watching Fast and Furious 6 and it has an age restriction of 16

Me: Loyiso! Qhawe! Alwande!

Twins: ma

Lwande: aunt

I was so angry with these kids. They know better than to watch such movies

Me: are you guys allowed to watch these movies? And who unlocked them for you?

Season 3

Insert 42

Lwa

There was silence but I knew these kids heard me very well because even the little ones got a fright

Me: so now you guys can't talk? Ok since you guys are mutes now, I'm going to call your father so he can deal with you

The twins are scared of Soso because he doesn't shout at them but he disciplines them which is way more effective than my shouting. I saw their eyes widen and Qhawe's eyes were getting glassy. He looked at his brother then turned to his cousins who were all shaking their heads

Loy: don't do it friend

Q: sorry guys but I'm scared of daddy

He got off his seat and walked to the door where I was standing and looked at me. I had my arms folded across my chest, my head lowered so I could meet his gaze

Q: mommy we are sorry. We saw daddy putting in the password and then we put it in. Please don't tell him mommy.

Loy: yho hayi friend uyadika

I shot a death stare at Loyiso and it immediately shut him up

Me: uthini Loyiso?

Loy: lutho mama

Me: I thought as much. Now all of you get to your rooms now. Loyiso, Qhawe, Avery and Limile will sleep in the twins' room and Yandisa and Alwande will sleep in Yandisa's room. Yiza kum Lwakho

I was too tired to prepare a room for the kids and I had told myself that I was going to do it in the morning so I took Lwakho and went to my room. I got him dressed in Loyiso's old pajamas then pulled the covers for him and placed him in my bed. I got

in the bathroom, turned the shower tap on then got under the shower. I stayed there for a while before I heard Soso calling my name

Me: I'm in the shower babe

Soso: why is there a child in our bed?

Me: hold on I'm coming

I turned the water off, wrapped my body with the towel then walked out the bathroom into our bedroom where I found Lwakho fast asleep. Soso was laying next to him while playing with his phone. He sat up when he heard me clearing my throat

Soso: kutheni kunomtana ebhedini baby? Where am I going to sleep?

I moisturized my body then wore my pajamas and went to sit on the bed as well

Me: Lwakho will sleep between us nje babe

I kissed his cheek before getting under the covers

Him: haaa baby but mna ndiyakukhumbula and andizokhona ukukunyumbaza kukhona umntana apha

Me: askies baby. I'll make it up to you tomorrow. Are your brothers still here?

Him: ewe baby but I'm going to drive them home now. MaHadebe, can't we put lomntana on the couch? I really want to sleep with my dick buried inside you

With that said, he got up and headed for the door, wawuvula then turned to face me and blew me a kiss

Him: I'll be back and susa lomntana ebhedini

I laughed softly as he walked out the room then after a few minutes I lifted Lwakho off the bed and placed him on the couch and covered him with a fleece blanket then got back in bed. After a few hours I felt cold hands under my PJ top

Me: hmmm

I pulled him closer to me and that's when I felt his lips on my neck

Soso: I want you

His words sent shivers down my spine as he pulled down my PJ pants together with my panties and as he ran his fingers up and down my queen

Me: Lwandiso

*

*

Soso

My name sounded like a beautiful song as it escaped her lips and it definitely made my dick twitch. My fingers played in her queen before I took Smith home and made slow, lazy love to my wife and after we both climaxed, we cuddled and fell asleep.

In the morning I was woken up by the crazy loud noise happening downstairs but luckily Lwa was still asleep and Mike's son was awake on the couch. I picked him and he smiled

Me: heita

He showed me the shap sign. Trust Mike to teach a two year how to throw gang signs. When we got downstairs the kitchen was a mess, there was milk and cereal all over the kitchen floor while the kids were sitting on the high chairs having breakfast

Me: guys what's going on? Mom's going to kill you guys if she wakes up and her kitchen looks like this

I kissed everyone's heads then sat on the counter

Loy: the girls will clean up

Alwande: haa aah Loyiso. You and Avery made the mess because you were throwing food around

Q: ewe tata it was Loy and Avery

Loy: yeeer but, whose brother are you? You need to stop snitching

I laughed at how frustrated Loyiso was with his brother and this was an everyday thing

Me: guys just clean up

I made Lwakho cereal then placed him in front of the TV and switched to cartoons. Just then Lwa came down the stairs before the kids were done so I slipped into the garage but I could still hear her shouting all the way from the garage. When it was quiet in the house, I went back in the house and she was now on the couch

Me: morning sthandwa sam

She looked at me then back at the TV screen. Her eyes were red as if she was crying

Me: what's wrong?

She sniffed and totally ignored me

Lwa: did you see what your kids did to my kitchen? Its a mess Soso

I was beyond confused. The mess wasn't that bad so it can't just be the kitchen

Me: ungalili kalok baby. They are cleaning it up

I sat next to her and brought her head on my chest and tried to calm her down just then the kids walked in

Avery: sorry auntie for making a mess. It was a mistake

Yandisa: but its all cleaned up now mommy

They both gave her a kiss on the cheek and for the first time this morning, my wife smiled

Me: go bath so we can go out for proper breakfast

Them: yeeeeeeeeaaaah

Then they ran for the staircase

Lwa: no running in the house

They slowed down then walked up the stairs, I kissed my wife's cheek then pulled her in for a deeper kiss. The way I love this woman of mine though, I never want to imagine my life without her. She is my life, my heart and my rib. She caught me starring at her while I was lost in my thoughts

Lwa: ucabangani?

Me: hmmm nothing my love. I'm just admiring you and we should get him clean as well

I pointed at Lwakho who wasn't even paying attention to us then Lwa started pouting and giving me the cute face

Me: hayi baby hambo hlamba umntana wechomi yakho. I'll check on the older kids. Ndyakuthanda Mrs Me

I kissed her head then got up to check on the older kids. After an hour or so everyone was ready and we got into my GLE since there were a lot of us, we buckled everyone's seatbelts and I drove to town. We had breakfast at wimpy then we let the kids play while I chilled with Lwa then minutes later Mike and Pali arrived

Me: kutheni ni apha? Shouldn't you be resting your hangovers?

Pali: I miss my sons. Ba kae?

Lwa: they are playing

They went to the kids, leaving me with my brother

Me: ntwana when will you make an honest woman out of Pali?

Mike: hayi tchin Soso yinton le ondibuza yona?

Me: I'm just asking bro. You guys have been together for 7years and you have kids together and uyamthanda

Him: ai uyakhinya nawe yho

He got up and went to the kids as well. Haibo kanti what did I say that was so wrong? Anyway, now I'm sitting by myself while everyone is playing with the kids so I decide to call Aphile just to check on her since I haven't seen her since the time I allegedly kicked her out of my house. She answered as I was about to hang up

AP: ufuna nton Lwandiso

Me: ndikhumbule ichom yam. Undicabukele?

Her: no. I'm just disappointed in the way you acted but kalok mna andijoli nojola so I don't know how these things work

Me: I should hook you up with my brother yaz

Her: yiphi ibrother yakho? UJason?

Me: ewe

Her: uphambene tchin. Your brother is a man whore

Me: lol I missed you mahn Aphile. You and your lame jokes

Her: lol my jokes are not lame. Let's do lunch tomorrow

Me: andizokwaz chomam, my nephews and niece are visiting and they are a handful so I can't leave Lwa alone with the kids

Just then everyone returned to the table so I had to hang up

Me: sizawuphinde sincokolo AP. I have to go

I hung up before she responded then we left the mall and headed to the beach. Mike was still being offish so I called him aside

Me: what's going on?

Mike: nganton?

Me: ngawe. What was that about earlier?

He sighed loudly then kicked a few stones around and shoved his hands in his pockets. He looked up at Lwa and Pali. He stared at them for a while

Me: thetha nam boy

Him: I've been asking Palesa to marry me since she was pregnant with Avery but she keeps turning me down. She is cagey about the whole marriage thing so ngoku nam ndimyekile. Ndizawthini xa engandifuni?

Me: have you talked about it though?

He shot me that "obviously" look nam ndathula and just stared ahead

Season 3

Insert 43

Lwa

We walked around the beach with my bestie while the kids played and our significant others stared at us. I turned around and when I saw that Soso was really staring at me, I smiled and blew him a kiss which made Pali shake her head

Me: lol what's wrong chomi?

Pali: you and Soso make this marriage thing look so easy. You've been together forever but you still behave like you just met.

Me: lol its all love my friend. I love that man more than life itself, he has been an angel, a hero and so much more in the past seven years

We sat at the bank as the water touched our feet and washed back again. It was relaxing and just refreshing. I let go of everything and just got lost in the moment and that moment didn't last long because I'm a mother and aunt so my kids came running to me and sat with us. Lwakho sat between his mother's legs while Qhawe sat with his head on my lap. I brushed his long curly hair

Me: you guys need a hair cut

Loy: not me. I'll cut my hair when school opens

Me: I'd love you to see you tell that to your father

Loy: when are we going to malum Sakhile's house kanti mama? You keep saying next week

Me: haibo Loyiso your cousins are visiting nje and wena ufuna ukuhamba

Loy: they are visiting you nje mama. I want to go to malum Sakhile

Loyiso has always been a bit of a brat and that's what he got from Atha. I don't know how to deal with him when he is like this because Soso doesn't want me to hit him. He says he knows how to deal with him. I turned to Nami's son who was drowning on the sand without paying any attention to us. This child is a photocopy of my brother. He looks exactly like him and he behaves just like his father. His quietness, charm

and temper are exactly that of my older brother. I took my phone and took pictures of him then of all of the kids

Me: Alwande

Lwande: dabs

Me: do you know how to operate my phone?

Her: ewe dabs

I handed her my phone and she took pictures of the rest of us. I sent Qhawe to call his father and his uncle and we had a good time just taking crazy pictures then in the afternoon, we bought 4 boxes of pizza and a KFC bucket then we went home, just Soso, myself and the kids

*

3 weeks later it was the weekend before schools open so Onami and Phiwe's kids had to go back home. The plan was that I was going to drive them but I woke up feeling weak, I was tired and I just couldn't get out of bed. Soso walked out the bathroom after rinsing his mouth and came to me

Soso: babe, are you sure you don't need me to stay home with you?

I shook my head then took a sip of my water that was on my bedside

Me: no babe you have to take the kids home

Him: I could always call Nami and ask him to fetch them. I don't feel comfortable with leaving you here alone while you are like this

Me: I'll be OK babe. MaRose is here

Him: she will have her hands full with the twins and Yandisa

Me: babe I'll be fine.

He looked really worried and I know he won't stop worrying unless I give in. If I let him leave, he will be calling me every 5mins. I sighed

Me: pass me my phone

He reached for it from the dressing table and gave it to me and I dialed my brother's number. Soso had his eyes on me the whole time and Nami was taking his time with answering the phone

Nami: baby sis

Me: lol I'm not a baby Nami

Him: You'll always be my baby. Uright? How's my niece and nephew?

Me: the ones invading my body or the ones driving me crazy?

He laughed then spoke to Phiwe at a distance then spoke to me again

Him: I was talking about the ones in your stomach. Is Loyiso still a problem?

Me: he is getting worse everyday. I don't know what to do with him. Ever since ebuye kubo nje uyadelela

Him: hmmm maybe they did something to him sis. You should look into it

I nodded as if he can see me. He might be on to something and yaz ngangingafuni iyngane zam ziye kuloyamuzi but Lwandiso forced the issue and I gave in

Me: the reason I called bro is because I'm not feeling well and Lwandiso doesn't feel comfortable with leaving me alone so please come fetch Alwande and Limile

Him: I'll come this evening. Don't worry about it. Get well soon. I love you

Me: thanks bro. I love you

We hung up and Soso crawled into bed with me and held me tightly. I looked up to him and our eyes met and he smiled faintly

Soso: I wish I could stay in here with you the whole day

Me: but we have a house full of kids and they need to be fed and entertained

Him: yep but I'll come check on you and I'm going to make you a sandwich so that you nap on a full stomach

Me: ngiyabonga tatakhe

He kissed my forehead then pecked my lips before getting out of bed

*

*

Soso

We waited until around 8pm for Nami to come but nothing. Lwa was panicking because his phone was off and so was Phiwe's phone and when Lwa is stressed, my kids are stressed which makes me stressed

Me: he will come. I'm sure they are fine where ever they are. They just got delayed somewhere

Lwa: then why are their phones off? It doesn't make sense Lwandiso.

Me: but just calm down Lwa. You are going to get the kids all freaked out

I had taken the kids to the game room to play PlayStation and other games earlier because if they see Lwa like this, they will freak out. After an hour or so, there was a hoot at the gate. I checked the screen and it was two police cars, luckily Lwa was asleep on the couch so I gently opened the front door and approached the gate. I opened it slightly and walked towards the police van. The driver lowered his window

Cop1: molo mhlekazi

Me: molo tata

Him: we are looking for the Smith residence, andaz noba yikho apha na

Me: ewe tata. NdinguLwandiso Smith

Cop2: sikhangelala uLwandile Smith. Can you open the gate for us so we can talk to her?

Me: ingxaki tata ukuba umithi uLwandile and if its bad news you are bringing, I can't let you talk to her

They both looked at me then they got out the car. The first cop signaled for the other cops in the other car to get out and now 4 cops stood before me. I swallowed the lump that was growing in my throat but a bigger one formed

Cop2: Mr Smith there was an accident a few kilometers out of town

Me: an accident?

Cop1: ewe mhlekazi. Your brother in law and his wife were in that accident. Their car collided with a petrol truck

He took a pause and I said a silent prayer that he must not confirm my fears. My wife and those kids won't survive this.

Cop1: I'm sorry Mr Smith but there were no survivors from the car

Just then I heard the front door opened and Lwa walked out the house, clutching her gown tightly around her stomach. She approached the gate and she stood on the other side. She looked confused and distorted

Lwa: Soso what's going on? What are the police doing here?

I shifted my gaze between Lwa and the police. I didn't want to open the gate because I didn't want her to hear any part of this conversation. I'm not going to be able watch her break from this. I'm going to lose her and our kids.

Season 3

Insert 44

Lwa

When I woke up from the couch I was alone in the living room. I gently rubbed my eyes and stretched my body and that was when I saw the red and blue lights shining through the curtains. There was no mistake in my mind that those lights belong to police cars so I got up, fixed my gown then headed to the door. The moment I opened the door, I was greeted by a chilly breeze which caused me to instantly close my gown tightly around my chubby body and hold it for dear life. At the gate I saw 2 police cars and 4 gentlemen standing with Soso but my first instinct was to think that maybe they are lost and are looking for directions. That's the only explainable reason for them not to drive into the yard and for Soso to talk to them outside the gate. I approached them and as soon as Soso saw me, his eyes never left my face. I got to the gate but he didn't open it, he just kept his gaze from me

Me: Soso what's going on? Why are the cops here?

Only then did his gaze shift between me and the policemen and eventually his head bowed as he released a soft and sad sigh

Me: ngicela uvule igate. If they are here to see us, the least you can do is let them in

He was hesitant about opening the gate kanti ke nami I was persistent ngoba ngangigodola from ukuma phandle. He opened the gate and the 4 gentlemen walked in, led by Soso and we all went into the house. The police settled in the lounge

Me: can I get you gentlemen anything to drink?

Cop1: no thank you nontombi. Asihlalanga

Me: oh

I also sat down next to Soso and anticipated why the police were visiting us this late, worse ke nalento kaOnami of not being here to fetch his kids was stressing me enough. I don't understand why both him and his wife had to switch off their phones and if he didn't want to fetch his kids ngabe he should have said so and Soso would have taken them to him. I know we broke our agreement in asking him to fetch them

but we had no other choice. Anyway, silenced filled my living room as no one spoke of this late visit from the police so I decided to break the silence

Me: so, to what do we owe this visit?

Cop1: I assume ukuba nguwe uLwandile Smith

I nodded

Me: yebo baba

I was getting restless and couldn't keep still which must have woken up abantwana bakaSoso ngoba they started kicking me. I placed my hand on my belly and gently rubbed it and that's when I felt Soso's hand on my shoulder. I lifted my head to meet his gaze and he had this sad look of worry on his face which didn't put me at ease

Soso: uright?

I nodded for the second time in a space of less than 5mins then shifted my focus back to the police officer I was engaging with

Cop: what is your relation to Onami and Simphiwe Hadebe?

Immediately my heart started racing and a lump the size of a frog rose to my throat. I absentmindedly squeezed Soso's hand tightly and my eyes shot wide open

Me: he is...they are

I couldn't seem to form my sentences properly. My throat was dry and this lump wasn't making it any easier

Cop2: mhlekazi awugalele umkakho amanzi

Soso looked at me, I nodded then he walked to the kitchen, leaving me alone with these strange men that have suddenly filled my home with tension and discomfort. After what felt like a life time, my husband returned with a glass of water which I took from him with my shaking hand, again he gave me that look that has been sending chills down my spine since I found him outside with these police officers. I took a sip of the water then cleared my throat

Me: Onami is my older brother and Simphiwe is my sister in law

Suddenly now Soso was the one holding my hand as again silence filled the room. I shifted in my seat and adjusted my seating position so that I was now facing Soso. He knew why the police were in our house, he knew why this conversation was so tense and why these officers are taking so long to get to the point. I'd rather hear from him than some strangers that are just doing their job

Me: Lwandiso what's going on?

He cleared his throat twice before lowering his head which rose again within a minute and his eyes filled with tears that looked like they were going to roll down his face almost immediately

Me: Soso

Soso: uhm baby there was an accident. Nami's car crashed into a petrol truck...

I didn't catch the rest of that conversation until the cop said "we are sorry for your loss". The voices sounded so far away as I felt the tears roll down my cheeks, I felt my chest tightening up and my heart breaking. I instantly sank to the floor and crawled into a fetal position and cried loudly. I didn't care about the strange men in my living room or that the kids upstairs could hear me but I screamed loudly. My cries were deafening and my tears weren't stopping. How could God do this to me? Out of all the people in this world; the criminals, the drunkards and low life's, how could he take my brother? How could he take my first friend, my protector, my advisor and shoulder to cry on? How could he rob these kids of their parents at such an age when they need a mother's love and a father's guidance the most? What kind of a God destroys so many lives within a split second. I was broken, I was incomplete, I was angry and I was in the worst kind of pain. This was the kind of pain I wouldn't even wish on worst enemy. I cried and screamed until my voice burnt out and no more tears came out. When I eventually opened my eyes, Lwandiso was holding me from behind, rubbing my back and it was only him and I in the room. I don't recall when the police left or when he had gotten up from the couch to come hold me. We were under a fleece blanket with our heads resting on scatter cushions. When he heard my cries turn silent, he cleared his throat. I wanted to turn around but I felt weak, I didn't have the strength or the energy to move my already heavy body

Soso: Lwa please turn around

Me: I can't

My voice was gone so what I just uttered was barely audible

Him: I'll help you

He gently turned me around by tucking his left arm under my arm, securing it then gave me a gentle push and I moved, turned around and laid my head on his chest. He rubbed my back, kissed my forehead then went back to silent mode. I felt numb, both emotionally and physically and what scared me the most at that moment was that I couldn't feel my babies. Last time I felt them was when they were kicking me like crazy but now I felt nothing. I slowly drifted my hands between my legs to feel for any sign of wetness just in case I had lost my babies and didn't feel it or notice but my hand came back dry which was a relief

Soso: I'm so sorry sthandwa sam.

He kissed my forehead and fresh tears rolled down my cheeks as the pain resurfaced. How could 5 simple words just bring it all back? The words of the officer when he said "I'm sorry for your lose" kept replaying in my mind over and over again as I sobbed silently. I was even getting hiccups from all the crying. Again, Lwandiso was there, holding me tightly.

Him: let's go to bed sthandwa sam. You are going to hurt your back. We've been laying here all night.

I didn't have it in me to disagree with him so I just nodded then lifted myself from his body. I sat up, balancing my body with my arms and my stretched legs. He got up, offered me his hands which I took without a second thought and he pulled me up. I groaned as I felt my muscles stretch but before I had a chance to say anything, he wrapped his arms around my body and gave me a comforting hug. I didn't want him to ever let me go. I don't have Nami anymore so if I lose him, I'd lose my life. He pulled out of the hug, wiped the fresh tears then pecked my lips. He then took my hand and we made our way to our bedroom where I just dropped myself on the bed and just stared into space. I don't know where Soso had disappeared to but a few minutes later I felt the belt of my gown getting untied. He took it off me, followed by my pajama top. He then took my hand and made me stand then took off my pajama

pants together with my underwear. I stepped out of the clothes then he led me to the bathroom.

Him: yizohlamba baby

When we got to the bathroom, the tub was filled with water which smelt heavenly because of the bubble bath and bath salts, I assume. He helped me get in then he took off his clothes and got in with me. He sat behind me with his legs on either side of my body. He bathed me in silence and that's what I appreciated about my husband. He knows when to speak and when to let the silence take over and play its role. After he was done bathing me, I laid on my side, between his legs with my head on his chest and his arms around me. I was careful not to press against his manhood. When the water started getting cold, we got out, I was wrapped in a towel then went to our room while he cleaned the bathtub and mopped the floor. I wore my underwear without moisturizing then wore Soso's T-shirt and got in bed. He joined me soon after, making me rest my body on his.

Me: thank you

He kissed my forehead for the umpteenth time since we heard the news

Him: I've got you baby. Forever and always. I'll always be here to hold your hand and walk through anything and everything with you

I sighed softly and before I knew it, I was fast asleep.

*

Days passed and the news of Nami and Phiwe's passing spread like wildfire to their friends and family. Limile didn't understand what was going on because he kept asking Alwande where their mommy and daddy are. As much as he was young, he could see that the whole family was gathered but their parents weren't there. Alwande on the other hand was angry and hurting because she understood what was happening. It was now the day of the funeral. My family and I were staying with my parents for the duration of the funeral preparations and the funeral so I woke up around 5ish, took a shower then wore Soso's sweatpants and his T-shirt. I left him asleep on the bed as I went to wake the kids up. They were all sleeping in the same room, some on beds and others on mattresses.

Season 3

Insert 45

Lwa

By the time everyone was bathed and fed, it was time to go to church. KK and Sakhile walked into the kitchen while I was helping Limile with his tie. KK roughed up his nephew's hair which made him chuckle a little.

KK: morning sis

He kissed my cheek then poured himself a glass of water while Sakhile sat on the high chair next to Limile

Sakhi: he looks just like him

I smiled faintly as I stared at my little nephew who is a spitting image of his father. I kissed his forehead then wiped my lipstick from it

Me: Li baby go check if Q and Loy are ready

Li: OK dabs

He jumped off the chair and walked towards the staircase while I sat between the only brothers I have left

KK: I still can't believe ubhuti is gone. I'm expecting him to walk through the kitchen door holding Phiwe's hand with his goofy laugh

I laughed softly as I turned to look at the kitchen door and pictured him walking in

Me: I wonder why he never liked the front door. Phela we knew that every time the kitchen door opened, it was Nami walking in

Sakhi: lol but we'd hear him before he even entered the door because of that laugh and his whistling

My siblings and I shared a laugh before heading to church to say our final goodbye to our brother and sister. The twins came down the stairs with Limile and we walked out the house, ensuring that we locked it. We were the only ones left since everyone else had gone to the church. The twins drove with Sakhile in his Ford Ranger Wildtrak while KK and I drove in my Evoque. The service was very sombre and

dignified. I tried my best not to cry but how does one not shed a tear for someone who has been there for her since day one? KK read out Nami's obituary and Phiwe's older sister read out hers. We were having a joint funeral for them since they were married and died together. The time for me to say my speech came and it wasn't prepared because I wanted to speak from the heart. I walked up to the podium, greeted everyone then took in a deep breath and slowly exhaled

Me: it is said that it is the lord that gives and it is the lord that takes but I am very angry with the lord for taking my brother and my sister. For as long as I've lived, I've never had to worry about people or things which could harm me because I knew that in every hour of need, my brother would be there to protect me. My brother was my first friend and my second love after my father because the love he showed me was pure and unconditional and no matter how much we fought, and trust me we fought quite a lot when we were younger, he never ever made me feel unloved or unsafe. I am deeply hurt by his passing because of how sudden it was and because I never got a chance to say goodbye. This is the guy that gave me a chance to experience a sisterly bond when he brought Phiwe into our lives. I've never had a sister before Phiwe but the kind of bond I shared with her was natural and true. I will forever love you Phiwe sis wam and my dear brother Nami. Death be not proud. Ngiyabonga

I slowly walked off the podium to my seat just in time for the tears to flood down my cheeks. I sat down and rested my head on KK who, without any hesitation, wrapped his arm around me and rubbed my shoulder gently. After the service, we went to the cemetery and that's when reality hit me. I'll never see my brother again. I'll never hear his voice or his goofy laugh. I'll never see him and his wife together ever again. I felt myself getting dizzy which led me to hold on to KK for dear life

KK: sis, are you OK?

I nodded slowly and then my legs failed me but Sakhile got there in time to help KK to hold me up. Now everyone was staring at me and I hated every moment of it

Me: I need to sit down and I need water so please take me to my car

Sakhi: I'll take her to the car ntwana wena just get the water

KK agreed and Sakhile and I slowly made our way to my car. I don't even know where Soso. I haven't seen since he left for church with his daughter in the morning

but he was the least of my worries right now. We got to the car, Sakhile opened the passenger seat for me, he got in the driver's seat as I switch the air con on.

Sakhi: are you sure you are OK?

I kept looking around to see if Kwandokuhle was coming with my water

Him: Lwandile!

I got a sudden fright then turned to face him

Me: hmmm

Him: are you sure you are OK?

Just then I saw KK running towards my car with a bottle of water. The sun was on 100 °C and this air con was barely helping so I was fanning myself with a paper. I gulped the water in one go and then it hit me that in all the madness of getting the kids fed and ready, I forgot to eat. No wonder I was feeling light headed. I felt nauseous and the water coming up so I quickly opened the door and threw up on the grass

KK: should I call ta LDS?

I shook my head before throwing up again. The vomit left a bitter taste in my mouth so I rinsed with the little bit of water I had left then reclined my seat and closed my eyes. After a while I heard the driver's door open but I didn't open my eyes until the car started moving. I turned to my right and I was met by the side of Soso's head. He looked so sexy with his neatly cut hair and trimmed beard and the way he was just so focused on the road with his eyebrows frowned and chewing the insides of his cheek. This meant that he was upset

Me: siyaphi?

He turned to look at me then shook his head and focused on the road. Hayi ke I wasn't going to beg him ke nam. I was so hungry but my pride wouldn't let me tell him that. I'll just eat back at my parents' house. I took my phone and dialed Enzo's number which he answered after the second ring

Enzo: buddy

Me: bae wam engimthandayo

Soso immediately looked at me with questioning eyes and I mouthed "Enzo"

Enzo: uright kodwa? I saw what happened earlier and when Soso gave me his keys and asked me to leave with Yandisa when we leave the cemetery I knew something was up

Me: when he gave you his car keys, uti who must drive your car?

Soso must have known that I'm talking about him because again he looked at me but didn't say anything. He just shook his head

Enzo: angaz nam but ngizocela noma uKK to drive my car

Me: OK ke bae. I wanted to ask you to just keep an eye on your kids lapho especially uLoyiso and also keep an eye on my nephew and niece

Him: OK buddy. Get well ke nawe

Me: I will

I hung up then placed my phone in one of the cup holders. Soso drove to McDonald's and ordered a chicken fold over meal then parked at the parkings zakhona eMcDs. He gave me the food

Soso: eat

I took the paper bag, opened in and took two fries and put them on my mouth

Me: iwaste yonke le yaz ngoba I was going to eat at home

Him: did you eat breakfast?

Me: no. I forgot

That came out almost as a whisper and worse ke my voice was still husky from all the crying I've been doing over the past couple of days

Him: you forgot?! How do you forget to eat Lwandile? Khawundixelele fondin because andiyi Understandi tu lento oyitshoyo

I don't understand why he was shouting at me ngoba he saw how crazy the house was this morning. I didn't exactly forget, I just didn't find time to do it. I didn't even

respond to his little rage and just ate in silence. I had half of everything then put it back in the paper bag

Him: ukugqibile oko kutya?

This time his voice was soft but that didn't make up for the fact that he shouted at me for no reason nje.

Me: please just take me home

He didn't respond nor did he start the engine of the car which irritated me because the last thing I want to be doing on my brother's funeral is to be sitting at a parking lot yaseMcDs. He turned to look at me but I was just looking straight ahead, waiting for this car to start so we can leave

Him: mkami

I turned to face him and he smiled faintly but I didn't smile back.

Him: I'm sorry I raised my voice to you. I'm just worried about you and I guess I lost my temper a little

I arched my eyebrows at him then folded my arms on my chest

Me: you guess? A little?

Him: lol OK I lost my temper and yes it was a little. You can't forget to eat kalok nawe nanaz. These 2 rely on you to feed them

He now had his hand on my stomach and it was as if his kids could hear him ngoba they started kicking me and his smile broadened when he felt them. Every time he feels them kicking, he reacts the same way, with a beaming smile and this time around I smiled as well then placed my hand next to his. He kissed the tip of my nose then pecked my lips

Me: I love you Smith

Him: I know and I love you too Mrs me

I blushed, well that was reaction every time he called me "Mrs me". He drove us back to my parents' house, where there was a tent and everyone was receiving their food. I went up to my room after I received mine, I ate then slept. We stayed with my

parents until Monday because that's when the Will be read out. Landile, who is Nami's lawyer, or rather was his lawyer said we all had to be there. Monday morning around 10am Laa walked in and we all gathered in the lounge. Nami and Phiwe were married in community of property and they had a joined will

Laa: This is the last will and testimony of Onami and Simphiwe Hadebe...

He went on and Nami left the house, cars and 50% of all the money they had to his kids and 25% was to be split between KK, Sakhile and myself and the other 25% went to my parents. Money from Phiwe's insurance policies went to her family to be split accordingly and Nami's insurance money went towards a trust for his kids.

Laa: and to our sister Lwandile Smith, we leave our two children Alwande and Limile Hadebe.

Say what now? Soso and I immediately looked at each other, I had a panicked look on my face and he had the opposite. My man was relaxed and calm. He held my hand and smiled. Don't get me wrong, I love my niece and nephew to death but how on earth am I going to raise 7 children?

P's mom: that won't happen. I'm taking my grandchildren

Laa: if Nami and Phiwe wanted you to raise their kids then it would be written in here but it's not

Season 3

Insert 46

Soso

a month later

Lwa and I finally came to the agreement that we needed a bigger house and by bigger house we meant a mansion so a week after the funeral we were house hunting with the help of our estate agent. When she called that she had found a house that would be perfect for us, we both got excited and couldn't wait to see it. During my lunch break I drove to the house and picked her up. She was dressed in a maternity maxi dress and slippers.

Me: you look beautiful my rib

Lwa: lol mxm you just saying that

The passing of her brother and her sister in-law had taken its toll on Lwa, physically and emotionally. She had lost a lot of weight, the areas surrounding her eyes were now dark and she wasn't sleeping much but I never mentioned it to her that she was changing. I just stood by her and allowed her to lean on me whenever she didn't feel strong enough to stand on her own. Anyway, I drove us to the house

Her: aibo is this the house? Phela ngiyayaz lendlu

It was a gorgeous triple storey house with a beautiful garden and amazing architecture. I loved it from the moment I saw it in the pictures but seeing it in person proved that the pictures didn't do it any justice

Me: you do? How so?

Her: lol heeeeh baby you wouldn't believe me if I told you

I parked outside the house. Susan, our estate agent was already waiting for us. I got out the car then went to open Lwa's door. She was now 7months pregnant and it is through the grace of God that our kids were not too affected by the emotional rollercoaster that Lwa has been through. I helped her out the car, carried her handbag then closed and locked the car

Me: so ndixelele kalok baby ukuba uyazelaphi lendlu?

Her: lol well this house belongs to Atha's parents

Me: nyan?

She nodded as we walked hand in hand to meet Susan, who already had a Colgate smile before we got to her. We exchange greetings then walked into the house. She gave us a tour and despite who the previous owners were, it was perfect.

Me: how many bedrooms on each floor?

Susan: 4 on the ground floor, 6 on the first floor and 5 on the top floor

I turned to look at my wife and she was still looking around

Me: so, babe what do you think?

Lwa: I think its perfect. I'm just going to need one of those moving chairs to be attached to each staircase because I'm not climbing up and down these stairs with this stomach

Susan and I both laughed. I agreed then placed my arm on her shoulder and pulled her closer to me?

Susan: how big is your family?

Lwa: 7 kids, including these two

She placed her hand on her belly

Me: plus, my two nephews that will most probably be here every weekend

We really did have a big family and I loved every part of it. We were shown the outside rooms then the tour was over

Me: so uthini na baby? Siyaythatha?

Lwa: yeah definitely

Susan and I agreed that we will sort out the paperwork the following day then we bid her farewell. I drove to steers, bought us food then drove back to our house. The kids were still with Lwa's family so it was just us and MaRose in the house.

Me: should I dish up for you?

Lwa: yes, please and bring it to the room

I gave her a smug look thinking back to her rules that meals should be eaten in dining area at all times

Me: lol no babe. You know the rules

Her: my rules so I am allowed to bend them

Me: its unfair kodwa MaHadebe

*

*

Lwa

It was now a month after the passing of my brother and his wife and trust me when I say time heals nothing. I miss my brother and my sister more with each day that passes. We were moving into our new house today since we had come back from the cleansing yesterday and I was still dog tired.

Me: should I trust you guys to sort out the rooms or should I allocate the rooms myself?

Loy: do I still have to share with Qhawe?

Me: yeah boy. Only after your 10th birthday will you guys separate

Lwande: we will do it ourselves dabs

Me: alright but if I hear any fighting going on, i will allocate the rooms for you guys

Yandi: OK mommy

Me: oh, and you can only choose from the rooms on the first floor only

They all ran up the stairs to go sort themselves out while I just threw myself on the couch. After resting for just a few minutes, bae walked in with a pregnant Nomz

Enzo: hey bae

I was excited to see them since I haven't seen them since the funeral

Me: I would get up to hug you guys but I'm too tired

Nomz: chomi you should have warned me that this is what being pregnant is like. The way I'm so tired I wish I could just take this stomach off and leave it at home

Enzo and I broke into laughter as they settled on the couches

Me: can I offer you guys something to drink?

Enzo: beer would be amazing bae

Nomz: wine would be amazing too chomi but I'll settle for juice. I don't want a weird looking child like ingane kaAwiwe

That caught me by surprise, I don't know why ke ngoba i haven't spoken to that girl in years. She hates me even more now that Atha is dead but Mina I don't give a rat's ass about her

Me: Qhawe!

I heard him esabela from upstairs, yes, my voice was that loud. When he saw Enzo, he ran to him

Q: molweni malume noAuntie

Enzo lifted him up and placed him on his lap and they talked about nonsense but I soon interrupted their conversation

Me: boy hambo biza uAuntie eback.

He hopped off Enzo's lap and headed for the door

Me: so, guys I had to hire a new nanny and when you see her, please don't judge me

Noma looked at me with her creased eyebrows as if asking me who I hired but I wasn't going to say anything until they see her. After a few minutes Qhawe returned with the young lady I had hired to assist MaRose

Sno: yebo sisi

Me: please get Enzo a beer and bring us a jug of juice and amaglass

Sno: OK sisi

With that she disappeared into the kitchen and the moment she was out of sight Noma came at me

Nomz: are you fucken crazy

Enzo: language baby. There is a child here

Me: boy phindela phezulu. Ask ugogo to help you with folding your clothes

Q: ngsafuna ukuhlala nomalum Enzo nje mama

Enzo: let me go up with him so I can see the rest of the kids

They followed each up the stairs still engaging in their nonsensical conversation. My kids have such a close bond with all my friends and their uncles. They get spoiled so much that even i find it ridiculous at times

Nomz: don't act like you didn't hear me. What the hell were you thinking hiring Atha's ex? Have you forgotten what that girl and Atha's mother put you through?

I quickly signalled for her to lower voice when Sno returned with our juice and Enzo's beer

Me: syabonga

She smiled before leaving the room and Nomz just shook her head

Me: she needed a job and I needed another helper. I wasn't going to hold her past against her because judging from her living conditions, life hasn't been nice to her.

She shook her head just staring at me blankly. I know it might look like a stupid decision but one thing life had taught me is that things can change within a split second, one minute you are up and the next moment you are down. Life owes us nothing so the least we can do is help each other up in every way we can

Nomz: just don't come crying to me when you walk in on her in bed with your husband or when one of your kids is admitted in hospital for poisoning

I gave that "seriously" look and leaned forward to pour us the juice then I decided to lighten up the mood

Me: I'm thinking of having a house warming braai/ baby launch when the babies arrive. I don't have the energy for a baby shower. Ngikhathele chomi

She took a sip of her juice then placed the glass back on the tray and leaned back on the couch

Her: well I definitely want a baby shower and baby launch. This is my first baby and she will be a spoiled princess

I sat up and my eyes widen while my smile broadened. This was the first time I hear the sex of the baby. Baby girls are just too adorable. I had the best time with Yandisa when she was still a baby. She was such a diva and a daddy's princess, well she still is a daddy's princess

Me: aaaah my friend I'm so excited for you. Baby girls are the best

Her: lol don't let the twins hear you say that

Me: lol bazoba strong shame

We spent the rest of the afternoon catching up and bonding. Soso was locked up in his study all day catching up with the work he had missed since he was on leave for the past month. He did come out to greet Nomz and Enzo at some point then went back to work. After Nomz and Enzo left, I started thinking about what we were going to eat and honestly, I was too tired to cook. I got up from the couch then went to knock at the study

Soso: come in

I slowly opened the door then peaked in but he didn't lift his head up. I tried to whistle at him but failed dismally which led to us laughing. He closed his laptop and looked up at me

Soso: umuncu kodwa sthandwa sam. Yizapha kalok

I smiled while walking towards him and we sat on the office couch. Before I could say anything, he cupped my face and kissed me deeply and I accidentally moaned. I was too caught up in the kiss then he broke it

Him: lol hayi mamakhe uyaythanda into yam

Me: you made me love it nje. What do you feel like eating tonight?

He now had a smug look on his face and I instantly knew that he wasn't going to take me seriously anytime soon

Him: I want to eat you and this sexy body of yours.

See what I mean? No seriousness whatsoever from ubhut' bae. I folded my arms across my chest indicating that I was not here to play games with him

Him: lol don't look so serious Lwa wam. I'll eat whatever you guys are eating. Just no burgers and no pizza please

Me: grilled chicken and ribs?

Him: yep and a steak with French fries not salad

Me: OK ke tatakhe

I attempted getting up and he pulled me down making me giggle like a teenager. I don't remember the last time I laughed like that

Him: usuycingile lewei?

Me: therapy? For Alwande noLimile?

Him: nawe kalok mamakhe. I know you say you don't need it but do it just to support the kids and maybe it might just help you as well

Season 3

Insert 47

Pali

I'm not a fan of Monday mornings more especially because of the craziness that it involves and the hangovers that I wake up with. After I had showered and gotten ready I went downstairs where I found Mike, our sons and his parents having breakfast. I don't know why Mike still insists on us living with his parents. We have our own family now and we need our own space but he still refuses to move into a house that will belong to just us. I greeted everyone then sat down and dished up for myself

Mike: are you going to drop the kids off at daycare or should I?

Me: I have an early meeting so you can do it

My voice was low because Mike knows I don't like having these conversations while we are around his parents. Its bad enough that he always makes a big deal about me working since he has enough money to take care of me and the kids but depending on a man is the last thing I'll ever do. Its not how I was raised. I finished eating, took my plate to the kitchen then went upstairs to rinse my mouth. Mike walked in as I was getting ready to leave. He sat on the bed, without taking his eyes off me

Mike: can we talk for a sec?

Me: I told you that I have an early meeting, I don't want to be stuck in traffic the whole morning

Him: I promise it won't take too long. Just 5 mins

Me: 5 mins I don't have Mike. I really have to go.

He let out a sigh as I kissed his cheek and walked out our bedroom. Things have been so awkward between us since we came back from the funeral which was over a month ago. When news of the passing of Lwa's brother fell on his ears, he told me that life is too short and neither of us has any idea what tomorrow has in store for us so he wants me to marry him. This was the 6th time he has asked me in 4years

and my answer was still no. I love Mike, no one understands me the way he does. Him and I have this amazing connection and he has blessed me with our sons but I just can't marry him and truly speaking I'm afraid of telling him the reason behind me not being able to marry him. I'm afraid that he will look at me differently or worse, that he will leave me. When I walked into the office, I found Soso having a chat with Liz, I greeted then went to my office. My morning meetings went pretty well and around lunch time, I didn't feel like going out so I ordered food from the deli across the road and waited for my delivery. I took this time to browse through houses on the internet that were for sale. I was so caught up in what I was doing that I didn't hear the door opening until I heard his voice

Mike: hey

I looked up and my eyes met those of the man who owns my heart. He was dressed in beige chinos, black formal shirt with the sleeves rolled up and black formal shoes. He had a spur takeaway bag with him. I stared at him as he made his way towards my desk and sat down in front of me

Mike: I brought you lunch

Me: thank you

Him: well I was hoping we could have lunch together and talk

My heart started pounding against my chest because I knew what this talk was about and honestly, I couldn't do it. I couldn't talk about this marriage thing anymore

Me: uhm do we really have to do it now? I don't want to discuss personal things at work. Its unprofessional

He looked at me with his eyebrow cocked then leaned back on the chair with his arms folded. He looked at me for a while then shook his head

Me: what?

Him: Palesa what's really going on with you? With us? Why don't you want me?

Now it was my turn to sit back on the chair and stare at him. He had this worried look on his face and I hated it when he was like this.

Me: Mike I love you and of course I want you but I just don't need a piece of paper to validate my love for you. We have each other and our kids, is that not enough?

Him: it is not enough. I want to marry you, I want you to carry my surname and for the whole world to know that you are mine. I want us to be one

I sighed but didn't respond. I unpacked our lunch then my office phone rang

Me: Palesa hello

Liz: Pali your lunch is here. Should I bring it

Me: have you had lunch?

Her: not yet

Me: please have that meal. Mike surprised me with lunch

I said that as I looked at my man and smiled. He didn't see me smile since he had his focus on his phone.

Her: thanks, you saved me

I hung up and focused on this person before me.

Me: which one is mine?

He didn't respond since he still had his head lowered and focusing on his phone.

Me: baby

Him: hmmm

He still didn't lift up his head

Me: Mike

Him: yes, baby what's going on?

Me: which is mine?

Him: the one with the salad. Jonga mahn baby neh, you want us to move out of the parents' house, right?

Me: yes, that's what I want

Him: marry me and then we will move out. Its that simple.

I opened my takeaway and started eating. He did the same and we ate in silence. I could feel him staring at me every now and then but I said nothing about it

*

*

Lwa

I woke up to a completely quiet house which was a first since we moved into this house then it hit me that it was Monday and the kids were at school. I got up, made the bed then took a long relaxing bath, just lost in my thoughts. I was still in awe about how I'm going to raise 7 kids, Loyiso was a handful enough but I couldn't let my brother down. Him and Phiwe must have seen something in me for them to trust me with raising their kids. After 40 mins or so I got out the bathtub, rinsed it then moisturized my body and wore leggings and a tight-fitting vest. Having a gym in the house meant that I didn't have an excuse of not exercising and Soso went as far as hiring a personal trainer that would be coming in twice a week to train with me. I walked downstairs to find Sno and MaRose having breakfast

Me: good morning

Them: morning

Sno: can I get you anything sisi?

I sat down in the dining area just to catch my breath

Me: just muesli with plain yogurt and a berry smoothie. MaRose will show you how I like it

She immediately got up but shame the poor girl wasn't done eating yet

Me: you can finish your breakfast first then go get me mine

Sno: are you sure sisi? I really don't mind

Me: I'm sure

I busied myself with my phone, checking my social networks then I received a WhatsApp text from Pali

Pali: friendship can I come to your house after work? I just need us to talk

Me: yeah sure. Are you OK?

Her: I don't know but we will talk after work. I have a meeting to get to

I sent her a heart emoji then exited Whatsapp. I wonder what's going on with her but knowing my friend, I'm going to need a tub of ice cream and a chick flick or two

Me: Sno do you have a driver's license?

Sno: yebo sisi

Me: OK good. We need groceries so I'll write a list for you so you can get them and I'm going to need you to take the kids to school from tomorrow onwards

Sno: alright it's not a problem. Do I fetch them as well?

Me: no don't worry about that. I'll fetch them

She nodded then headed to the kitchen, leaving me with MaRose. I adore this woman because she treats Soso and I like her own children and treats the kids like her grandchildren. She disciplines them where necessary and spoils them when they deserve it

MaRose: Lwandile

Me: yebo ma

Her: ugqibele nini uthetha nabazali bakho?

This question touched a nerve ngoba even though we were together at the funeral and at the cleansing ceremony, things were still tense between my parents and I. More especially between my dad and I. Its been 5years but my dad and I haven't spoken about his actions on my wedding day

Me: ngeweekend kodwa ke besingakhulumi into etheni

Her: hmmm uyayaz andithi ukuba your parents are not getting any younger and I'm sure ayibaphathi kakuhle lento yokungathethi nawe

I let out a sigh. Just then Sno placed my food before me, without the smoothie

Sno: ma ngcela ungbonisa ukuthi senziwanjani ismoothie sikaSis Lwa

MaRose: ucinge ngalento endiyithethileyo sana lwam

I nodded as I dug my spoon into the muesli then into my mouth. When I was half way with the cereal my smoothie arrived. Before I knew it, my trainer arrived too. MaRose let him in since Sno was doing the groceries. The guy's body had me drooling for a bit. He was tall, light in complexion with short hair and a few tattoos on his arm. He was buff and fit for days

Paul: morning Mrs Smith

Me: please call me Lwa

Him: alright. Shall we get to it.

We approached the staircase and as I was about to sit on my moving chair, he stopped me which caused me to give him a questioning look

Him: no no no we are walking to the gym

Me: what? You do realize that its on the top floor, right?

Him: yep. Just 2 flights of stairs. I'm sure you can do it

It was his first day and already I wasn't liking this guy. We made our way to the 3rd storey of the house and I just threw myself on the mat. I was huffing and puffing like a crazy person

Him: now that wasn't so bad now was it?

I didn't even bother responding. We began our training session after I had caught my breath

*

*

Soso

Around half past 1, I received a text from Lwa telling me that she was too tired so I should fetch the kids today. I called her back because I know my wife when she is being dramatic. She answered on the 4th ring

Lwa: baby

Me: what's going on?

Her: I'm tired baby. This personal trainer idea was a horrible one. I don't want that guy back here

Me: lol why? He couldn't have been that bad and it was just your first day baby

Her: he made me walk up and down all those stairs. Yho ngikhathela mina Lwandiso I laughed because I told her that stupid chair was unnecessary but she insisted on it now she is walking up and down the stairs anyway.

Me: lol so ndithini ke mna ngoku? Ndilande abantwana then take wena noAlwande noLimile to therapy? Or nizozihambela ngokwenu?

Her: yho konje there is still therapy? I'll drop them off at therapy vele the session is at 3

Me: baby we agreed that nawe you will go nje.

Her: I'm tired Lwandiso. I'll go to the next one. I promise you

I didn't like lento kaLwa of postponing the therapy sessions ngoba I know that she needs them.

Season 3

Insert 48

Soso

After my phone call with my crazy wife that I adore like crazy, I got back to work. I was busy until 2pm when I had to go fetch the kids. Alwande, Loyiso and Qhawe go to one school and Mikaela and Limile go to another school so I started with picking up the little kids. My princess was so excited that I was the one picking them up and the moment she saw me in her class, signing them out, she ran to me and I picked her up

Yandi: daddy its you.

Me: lol who did you think was picking you up?

Yandi: in the morning you said mommy was going to fetch us

Me: well I wanted to surprise you. Where is your cousin?

Just then Limile walked up to me and I picked him up too. He is such a quiet child that it worries me sometimes. He is a bit active when he is around Avery and Lwakho since they are around the same age

Me: hey champ how was school?

Li: it was nice

Me: made any friends?

He nodded then rested his head on my shoulder. I kissed his forehead then walked to the car with them. Yandisa was talking nonstop about how much she loves her school and her teachers. I drove to the twins' school and we had to wait since baphuma at half two

Yandi: daddy can we get ice cream before we go home?

Me: what does mommy say about ice cream?

She sighed before throwing herself against the seat which made me chuckle a bit

Her: but daddy we won't tell her

Me: haaa Yaya you want us to lie to mommy? I'm scared of mommy

Li: me too. Auntie shouts a lot when we don't listen to her

Me: lol you see. So, we can't lie to her

Within a few minutes Loyiso and Qhawe walked out. They stood at the gate confused until I hooted then they came to the car

Me: bags in the boot please

After throwing the bags in the boot, Qhawe got in the front seat and his brother got in next to his sister

Me: bulisani

Loy: eish uxolo tata. Molweni

Q: molo tata

Me: hey boys. Uphi uAlwande?

Q: I don't know. She is in grade 3 and we are in grade 2

We waited a few more minutes then she came out and I drove them home. I let them talk amongst themselves and within minutes Loyiso and Yandisa were arguing

Me: kutheni ngok?

Yandi: daddy Loyiso is annoying me

I adjusted my mirror so I could see Loyiso and he wasn't trying to entertain me at all

Me: umenzani umntana Loyiso?

Loy: andimenzanganto. Yandisa just likes acting like a baby

Yandi: I am a baby so just buzz off

I decided to stay out of it because these two always fight like cat and mouse. When we got to the house, I decided to go in as well before going back to work. Loyiso dropped his bag on the lounge floor and ran upstairs screaming for his mother and as Sno was about to pick it up, I stopped her

Me: don't take it. I'll tell him to come pick it up himself. Uphi uMaRose?

Sno: she is doing the laundry

Me: oh, in that case please make the kids snacks. Nothing heavy, just sandwiches and also give them fruits

Her: OK bhut' Soso

I smiled faintly before heading upstairs to check on my wife. The other kids were in their rooms changing while the "king" was in my room with my wife. I stood at the door listening in on their conversation

Loy: mom its just unfair. Dad always takes Yandisa or Qhawe's side even when they are wrong and Yandisa just likes annoying me. In the car she kept touching my iPod

Lwa: maybe she wanted to listen to what you were listening to

Loy: I'm not her friend so she must stop touching my things and going into my room

That's when I walked in and Loy looked at me then at his mother. I kissed Lwa's cheek then sat on the couch looking at them

Me: boy go change so you can go to the office with me. Make sure to take your homework with you

Loy: is Yandisa coming as well?

Me: nope just the two of us

He nodded then jumped off the bed.

Me: yizapha kwedin

He came to me and we did our handshake then I pulled him towards me and kissed his head

Me: I love you boy

Loy: love you too dad

Me: your bag is still where you left it so go fetch it

He nodded again and walked out the door. I got up from the couch and got on the bed with Lwa. I pecked her lips then brought her head to my lap

Me: uright?

Lwa: apart from being exhausted, I'm good. I promise you Lwandiso, your son will be the death of me.

Me: lol he isn't that bad. Its understandable that him and Yandi fight, they are siblings after all

Lwa sighed as I rubbed her back. I know there is something deeper behind Loyiso's behavior and I plan on getting to the bottom of it. That's why I'm taking him to work with me so we can get a chance to talk alone.

*

*

Lwa

When the kids finished eating and Soso and Loy had left, I changed into a flowing white dress with touches of gold then wore my slippers. I don't remember the last time I wore shoes instead of slippers ngoba my feet are always swollen these days. I walked out my room then stood in the passage

Me: Alwande! Limile!

They came rushing out of their rooms and walked towards me

Them: aunt

Me: put shoes on so we can go.

I don't know where and how but the moment Soso's daughter heard the words "let's go" she rushed out of her room as well

Yandi: I'm coming too right, mommy?

Me: uhm nope you are not?

She frowned and pouted and I just laughed ngoba that little act only works on her father and I was immune to it

Me: wenzani na MaSmith?

Yandi: haw mama you can't leave me

Me: have you done your homework?

Yandi: I'm in preschool mom we don't get homework.

Just then Sno came out of Limile's room after helping him put his sneakers on

Me: sis Sno wants you to help her bake cupcakes

Yandisa turned to look at Sno with questioning eyes

Sno: yes, bhabha I need your help. You can help me decorate them anyway you like

I mouthed thank you to Sno then left with my niece and nephew. Alwande sat in the front while Limile sat at the back. I played music via the radio and drove off

Lwande: siyaphi dabs?

Me: we are going to see the doctor?

Li: doctor? Auntie is Limile sick?

I chuckled softly. That's one of the cute things that my nephew does. He likes talking about himself in the third person

Me: haa aah baby Limile isn't sick. We are just going to talk to the doctor. She is going to ask us questions then we will talk

Li: ohh like Oprah?

Lwande: don't be silly Li... Oprah isn't a doctor

These kids though. I was in stitches from their conversation until we arrived at the therapist. We registered our information and we went in. I wasn't going to trust just anybody with my kids so I took them to Lolo because she was someone I knew and trusted plus she was recommended as one of the best child psychologists in town

Me: Dr Dlomo

Lolz: lol you are late Mrs Smith

Me: I know but being pregnant isn't easy

Her: which is why I appreciate that I don't have kids. So, who are these little angels

Me: this is Alwande and her brother Limile. Guys this is my friend Dr Dlomo. She is going to talk to you guys OK?

Li: you are leaving?

Me: I'll be just outside baby. I'm not leaving you

I could tell that they were not comfortable with being left alone with Lolo

Me: can I stay? I'll sit there by your desk and plug in my earphones

Lolz: OK just for today. Next time you will have to leave

I nodded and made my way to her desk. Plugged in my earphones and watched a movie on my iPad.

*

*

Pali

At knock off time, I switched the computer off, switched my lights off and walked out. I was a little surprised when I saw Loyiso doing his homework at his father's office so I went towards the door and knocked

Loy: come in

I walked in and smiled

Me: good afternoon Mr Smith

Loy laughed and covered his eyes. Lwa's sons are so cute and its like they get cuter as they grow older

Me: come give me a hug

He came to me and I lowered down to his level, hugged him then kissed his cheek. Leaving lipstick on it

Me: how are you?

Loy: I'm fine

Me: where is your dad?

Him: he went to make a call

Me: OK tell him I said hi

Him: OK auntie Pali

I left the office and drove straight to Lwa's house. I hadn't been to this new house since they moved in so she had to send me directions. When I saw it I was lost for words. It was exquisite in every way. I pressed the intercom at the gate and a lady responded but the voice didn't belong to Lwa or MaRose

Me: uhm hi. Is this the Smith residence?

Lady: yes, it is

Her: ohk I'm here to see Lwa so please open the gate for me

Her: OK

Within seconds the gate opened and I drove into the yard and parked behind Lwa's Range Rover Evoque. When I eventually walked into the house it was as if I had walked into a castle. Lwa walked into the room while my eyes were still wandering

Lwa: hey friendship

We shared a hug as she led me to one of her 3 lounges. Yep I said 3 lounges. We settled down

Me: this house is just wow. Totally gorgeous my friend

Her: thank you friendship. What would you like to drink?

Me: lol you know my poison

Her: luckily, I had it chilled for you. Yandisa!

After a few minutes Yandisa rushed into the lounge

Yandi: hello auntie Pali

Me: hello princess. You look so beautiful

Yandi: lol thank you auntie

Lwa: ask sis Sno to bring the drink I asked her to put in the freezer

Yandi: OK. Mom can I watch TV in your room?

Lwa: yes, just don't climb on my bed with your dirty feet

She left the room and now Lwa's attention was on me. I shuffled around because I didn't want to start talking without my wine in my hand. Her maid brought my wine and I got comfortable

Lwa: talk to me

I took a sip then reclined on the couch

Me: Mike proposed

Her: again

I nodded while taking another sip. It was more like a gulp then a sip

Her: did you say yes?

I shook my head

Me: I can't marry him

Her: why not? You love him, right?

Me: more than anyone and anything

Her: so, what's the problem?

Me: its complicated

I was now on my second glass because after every sentence, I took I sip or a gulp. I wanted to tell Lwa but where do I even start? This whole thing is one big mess and the more I avoid it, the bigger it gets

Lwa: it can't be that bad that you guys can't talk it out. Mike loves you and I'm sure he is as understanding as he seems.

I needed to tell someone before I lose my mind. I've kept this secret for almost 10year but now its just going to explode inside while dragging my relationship down with it. I let out a long sigh before pouring myself another glass

me: I can't marry Mike. I can't marry anyone

her: what do you mean you can marry anyone? of course you can

I shook my head as tears rolled down my cheeks. just thinking out it is enough to bring back all those horrific memories. I've tried to forget but its impossible

Season 3

Insert 49

Soso

Upon our arrival at my office, Loyiso started on his homework and I got back to work. Within 30mins he was by my desk with his notebook

Loy: dad, how do you say this word?

He was pointing at the list of words they were given to read at home. I took the notebook and put it on my desk then picked him up to sit on my lap

Me: show me the word again

He pointed at the word, making an invisible circle around it with his finger

Me: that's teacher

Him: teacher? OK dad

He tried jumping off my lap but I didn't let him

Me: you know I love you andithi? I love you just as much as I love your brother and your sister

He nodded. He was playing with his pencil and facing the floor

Me: so ndixelele ukuba kwenzeka nton ngawe noYandisa

Him: uYandisa is always in my room playing with my stuff. She doesn't touch Qhawe's things but she touches mine

Me: she is your little sister Loy and you never give her any attention but you play with Avery and Limile

Him: I'm not going to play with Yandisa dad. She is a girl. Girls play with girls and boys play with boys.

I let out a sigh when I realized that this was deeper than I thought it was

Me: what does Yandisa like watching on TV

Him: Sophia

Me: and do you like Sophia

He shook his head and said yuck

Me: lol why not?

Him: because it's girly. I'm a man daddy. Men don't watch Sophia.

Me: you and your brother used to love Sophia when you were younger. Your sister loves you and she wants to spend time with you, that's why she is always on your case. Play with her every now and then and she won't bug you as much

He nodded then I let him off my lap so he can continue with his homework and I got back to work.

*

*

Lwa

This thing with Pali was getting to me. It sounded so serious and I could tell that talking about it was hurting her more than it was helping and honestly, I didn't know what to do. I got up from my seat to sit next to her. I hugged her and she just cried in my arms. I rubbed her back as a way to calm her down

Me: you don't have to talk about it, friendship. I hate seeing you like this

She couldn't construct sentences and her breathing was heavy. I tried to calm her until she could speak

Pali: he broke me Lwa. He took my innocence, he made me an object for his disgusting fantasies and my mother. That useless excuse of a bitch just let him and when I said no, she would beat me so hard.

Confused doesn't even begin to describe how I felt but I didn't want to ask questions, I just wanted to be there for her and let her tell me what she wants me to know

Her: for 5 years he satisfied himself with my body and when I turned 16 my mother agreed for me to forcibly marry him. He was her fucken boyfriend but I ended up doing everything for him. He would shove his dick in my mouth, vagina and my asshole at anytime that he wanted and the person that gave birth to me, that was

supposed to protect me just watched as the devil she had brought into our lives destroyed me.

Without even realizing it, tears started streaming down my cheeks. My heart was in pieces. I've known Palesa for 7 years and I didn't know any of this. She is one of my closest friends and she has kept such a deep dark secret from me. I held her until she fell asleep; I gently got up from the couch, grabbed a throw and covered her then I went upstairs to my room. I took all my clothes off and remained in my underwear then got under the covers. Thinking about what my friend had to go through while she was growing up brought fresh tears to my eyes. A mother's instinct is to always protect her children so, how could Pali's mother fail at something so simple. I would kill anyone that would even attempt hurting my kids. All 7 of them. I must have fallen asleep because when my eyes opened, it was dark outside and Yandisa was watching cartoons on my TV. I sat up and she turned around to look at me

Yandi: mommy you are awake

Me: yes baby. Woza kim

She crawled to me and I wrapped my arms around her then kissed her head

Her: daddy said I shouldn't wake you up so i was extra quiet

Me: yes, you were baby. Where is daddy?

Her: downstairs with auntie Pali and uncle Mike

This came as a shocker. I wonder what Mike was doing here and when he got here. I got off the bed, washed my face and rinsed my mouth then wore my gown. I went downstairs where my eyes immediately met those of Mike's which were bloodshot red. I sat next to Lwandiso who kissed my cheek the moment I sat down.

Me: Hey Mike

Mike: hey Lwa

Pali was also now awake. The tension was thick in the room and everyone was silent. I cleared my throat, trying to get the attention of the people in the room but everyone was in their own little world. I looked up at Soso who shook his head softly

and I knew exactly what that meant. We sat in silence for what felt like forever and I was even getting annoyed by all of this. This silence and tension weren't helping any of us

Mike: I'm going to hunt him down and fucken kill him. I swear to God I'm going to kill him

Soso: Mike come on bruh. That won't change anything

Mike: it will change a lot. He hurt her Soso so I'm going to hurt him as well. I will not fail at protecting my girl. That's not the kind of man I am.

I didn't even feel like saying anything because I know how Mike is when he is angry, no one can get through to him but this time around I understood where his anger was coming from

Pali: we should get going. I want to get home before the kids go to bed

Her voice was hoarse and barely came out

Me: friendship, are you sure? At least stay for dinner.

Pali: I'm sure my f. I'll be fine and thank you so much for listening and being my shoulder to cry on. You are an amazing friend Lwa and I really appreciate having you in my life

She was smiling faintly and I got up from my seat and she did the same. We shared a long hug then Soso and I walked them out.

After dinner, we tucked the kids in. I stopped at Alwande's room. She was reading a book under the covers of her bed

Me: lights out Lwande

She peaked from under the covers and flashed me a smile. I walked in and sat on her bed next to her

Me: uright baby?

She nodded but she didn't look OK. Her eyes were glassy and she was a bit shaky

Me: are you sure? How was therapy?

Her: you really didn't hear anything?

Me: no baby. I was giving you guys privacy and freedom to talk about anything

Her: I don't like therapy dabs. The doctor makes us talk about mom and dad and I miss them so much. I cry every time I think about them.

I brought her closer to my chest and held her tightly as my own tears started building up. I've been trying so hard not to think about my brother and his wife but seeing my niece like this just reopened my wounds

Her: dabs why did mom and dad leave us? Didn't they love us anymore

I sniffed as my tears rolled down my cheeks. Alwande is too smart for her age

Me: it was an accident baby. If it was up to them they would still be here with us. Your parents love you and your brother and me and uncle Soso also love you guys

Her: love you too dabs

I squeezed her then tickled her just so I could hear her sweet laugh. I kissed her forehead then got up from the bed

Me: goodnight ke baby. Sleep and stop reading

Her: goodnight dabs. I love you

Me: love you more baby

I sighed as I walked out of her room. Maybe I am being a bit stubborn. Maybe the therapy wouldn't be such a bad idea. I made my way to my room and I just threw myself on the bed

*

*

Pali

I was woken up from the couch by the sound of a very familiar voice. He was shouting and screaming all over the place

Mike: ai sundidika mahn Lwandiso ndifuna ukubona uPali. Where is she? Pali! Uphibaby?

Soso: dude calm down. There are kids in the house

They walked into the lounge as I sat up on the couch. Mike looked relieved to see until he got closer and his face changed. He looked at Soso with anger written on his face

Mike: what did you do to her? Why was she crying? I swear to you Soso if you hurt her, I will kill you

I cleared my throat and they both turned to face me

Me: uhm Soso please give us a moment

He nodded and walked out the room as Mike sat next to me. He had this look of worry on his face and I knew this man cares for me more than I deserve. I was damaged and he had no idea

Mike: baby what's wrong? Did I do something wrong?

I shook my head and started playing with my fingers. I had to tell him. He has a right to know. I took in a deep breath then told him everything I had told Lwa. He listened attentively without saying a word but I knew he was hurting from every word I uttered. He was chewing the insides of his cheeks with his head bursting with veins. Worst part was that he didn't even let me finish

Him: please stop. Just don't say another word

His eyes were now red and I was getting scared. He pulled me closer to his chest and held me tightly, squeezing me and hurting me just a little

Me: I'm sorry

Him: you should have told me Palesa. We've been together for years, we have children together for goodness sake. How could you keep something so important from me?

He was now shouting which made Soso to come running into the room

Soso: sungxola fondin. Uzawvusa uLwa

Then silence filled the room. I didn't feel comfortable talking about this in front of Soso and Mike just kept shooting daggers at me so I kept my head down the whole

time. Talking about my past didn't make me feel any better, it actually made me angry to recall what that excuse of a mother and her monster boyfriend put me through. I hated them ten times more than I was already hating them. After we left Lwa's house, we drove in silence. Mike was driving my car since he decided to leave his at Lwa's house. Just as we were approaching the house, he stopped at the top of the street. We sat in silence for a minute or two

Mike: I meant what I said. I will kill them

I didn't respond and I don't think he was expecting me to. I played with my fingers as I waited for him to start the car but he didn't seem like he was going to anytime soon

Season 3

Insert 50

Lwa

A couple of months passed by and it was now early March. I felt like I was the size of a train station and the stupid workout sessions didn't look like they were helping but I still continued with them. I woke up the Thursday morning but didn't feel like getting out of bed so I fiddled my hand around the side table fishing for my phone. The moment I unlocked it, a reminder message popped onto the screen, "you are beautiful and I love you so much. Enjoy the rest of your day. Love Soso". I smiled like a teenager as I read the message over and over again then I dialed his number.

Soso: morning baby

Even those two simple words had me smiling nonstop to the point that I let out a giggle

Me: unjani tatakhe?

Him: I'm good babe, how are you?

Me: ngiright. Just saw your message. Thank you

Him: lol my pleasure Mrs Me. Jonga kalok sthandwa sam, I have to rush to a meeting. I'm taking you out for lunch so I'll see you later

A flashback of what happened the last time Soso took me out for lunch and I was this heavily pregnant crossed my mind. I'm definitely not up for going into labor in public. You can miss me with that nonsense

Me: can't do lunch babe. Just come home during lunch time and cuddle with me

Him: lol hmmm OK. I love you my rib

Me: I love you my heart

We made kissing sounds then I hung up. I don't know whether it was these kids I'm carrying or something else but I wasn't feeling well emotionally. I texted Paul canceling our gym session then switched my phone off and laid in bed. I started missing my brother, Phiwe and Atha. In a space of 5 years I've lost 3 of the most

important people in my life. Yes, Atha wasn't my favorite person when he died but the love I shared with that guy was extraordinary, its the kind of love that would move mountains. Without even realizing it, tears rolled down my cheeks on to my pillow. I wiped them with the back of my hand then tried to sleep again. I tossed and turned for almost an hour and it didn't help much ukuthi I was hungry. My stomach was growling and the twins were kicking me like crazy. I gently rubbed my belly

Me: OK OK I get it babies; you guys are hungry. Mommy will eat now now.

I smiled to myself then forced myself to get out of bed. I opened the blinds and windows then opened the sliding door a little for the fresh air. I stepped into the shower, took a long hot steamy shower then dried myself, moisturized my body and just wore my underwear, sports bra and my gown and slippers. I went downstairs where I found MaRose and Sno watching the repeat of The Queen.

Me: morning

MaRose: afternoon

Me: lol haw ma, the repeat of The Queen plays at 10:00 nje

MaRose: this is the second repeat. You've been sleeping for a long time

Me: and I'm hungry. Ngcela ifruit salad with plain yogurt ma

MaRose: that's all you are going to eat? Are you sure?

I put my feet up on the couch then placed a cushion behind my back

Me: I'm not really hungry, I'm just doing it for them

MaRose just looked at me with worry felt eyes and I smiled weakly. I turned to Sno who had her full focus on what was playing on TV

Me: uYandisa noLoyiso were not problematic today?

Sno: chabo sisi. They don't fight anymore

Me: that's a relief. They were giving me grey hair at such a young age.

Her: lol all siblings are like that. Even my kids argue and fight all the time

This was news to me. I know about her one child that she was with when I came across her selling bananas in the streets. I didn't know she had more but then again, we haven't really talked about our personal lives to each other. I saw no need to especially considering our history

Me: how many kids do you have?

Her: two. A girl and a boy. My daughter is 7 and my son is 4.

Me: where is your daughter?

Her: ukubo. She lives with her grandparents, they took her when she was still a month old. They didn't take my son because they don't believe ukuthi owakhona and there was no way to prove it ngoba his father died before he was born

I felt sorry for her but I also felt happy because I'm helping her provide for herself and her kids. As much as I didn't know her story when I hired her, I'm still glad I did

Her: I really appreciate this job sis Lwa. With the money in earning here, I now can afford to take my son to creche. Its so painful to watch him waste his intelligence by sitting at home and when my daughter comes to visit and she has all the toys you can think of and my son has nothing but they had the same father. Its really painful

She flashed me a faint smile and I smiled back. MaRose brought my salad and I ate while we watched TV. A few minutes later Soso budged in through the door which startled me ngoba uwuvule rough umnyango

Me: you scared me there for a second

Soso: not as much as you've had me scared the whole day

He walked in the lounge, kissed my head then sat next to me

Soso: molweni

MaRose: molo sana lwam

Sno: sawbona bhut' Soso

He turned to me, peaked at what I was eating then took my spoon and ate a bit

Him: why is your phone off?

Me: I don't know. I just didn't feel like talking to people

Him: where is it?

Me: upstairs

Him: let's go get it

I looked at him hoping he was joking but it didn't look like he was. I just got annoyed and didn't even wanna finish eating so I got up and headed for the kitchen. Of course, he followed me

Soso: gqiba ukutya baby then we will go upstairs

Me: sengisuthi

He frowned his eyebrows then made me sit on the high-rise chair and he sat on the counter with his legs on either side of mine. He started feeding me. Ever since we found out I was pregnant with the twins, this is what he does when I don't want to eat. He fed me the whole salad then we made it up the stairs. I was complaining with every step I took

Him: I don't know why you are complaining because you canceled your workout session for today

By the time we reached our bedroom, I was exhausted and I just threw myself on the unmade bed

Him: why isn't the bed made? Baby don't tell me you were in bed the whole day again

I got under the covers then pulled them over my head and faced the opposite direction

Him: Lwa ndithetha nawe

Me: OK fine I won't tell you that I was in bed the whole day

I heard his shoes drop on the carpeted floor and his belt buckle making noises but I didn't bother to turn around. Before I knew it, he peeled open the bedcovers and slid into bed.

Him: hey Liz...yeah, its me...please reschedule all my meetings for today and tomorrow... Yes, I'll be back on Monday...thanks Liz... Goodbye

He shuffled again then snaked his arms around me and pulled me closer to him. His scent filled the whole bed and for some reason it got me feeling so emotional. I sniffed the tears away and that rang the alarming bells which led to him turning me around to face him. I turned around but I didn't open my eyes. He wiped my tears with his thumbs then kissed my forehead

Him: talk to me Lwa. Please

I sighed loudly then held on to him tighter

Me: I miss them Lwandiso. It doesn't get better. It hurts so much that I'll never see them or hear their voices again

Him: baby you need to talk to someone. A professional because this depression isn't good for you or the babies

This is why I didn't like talking to Soso, all he cares about are his stupid babies, it's like I don't matter to him anymore or I'm of less importance now that I'm pregnant

Me: this isn't about your stupid babies. I'm the one that is hurting and all you care about are your babies

He went silent for a while then got up from the bed, leaving me yearning for his hold

Me: uyaphi?

Cwaka. No response whatsoever

Me: Lwandiso Smith ngikhuluma nawe!

He turned to face me, his head tilted and his eyebrows raised

Him: don't raise your voice at me Lwandile, I'm still your husband

His voice was firm with a little bit of irritation

Me: OK I'm sorry but we are still talking so why are you leaving?

Him: this isn't talking. You just accused me of not caring about you. I love you so how can I not care about you? I'm trying to help you here, if anything bad happens to

these kids, that's two more people you would have lost in this year alone and I know you won't be able to come back from that. I care about you but my main concern right now isn't to pity you and encourage you to stay in bed the whole day and cry but I'm trying to save you from yourself. You need to grieve baby, you need to make up with your parents and you need to see a professional. This bottling stuff up technique of yours is failing. You've tried it your way and failed so let's try it my way now. OK?

I had a huge lump on my throat so I couldn't exactly respond verbally so I nodded which was enough to make him come back to bed. Eventually I swallowed the lump and lifted my head to look at him. He was laying on his back, his arms resting behind his head and his eyes closed with his eyebrows slightly frowned. I stared at him for a while then smiled to myself. This gorgeous man belongs to me, he loves me even when I don't love myself. He protects me, even from myself.

Me: baby

Him: hmmm

Me: make love to me

He slowly opened his eyes and turned his head to look at me. His expression was unreadable

Him: what was that?

Me: make love to me. I miss you

I took off my gown while he sat up on the bed then I took off my panties and bra and got back on the bed in my birthday suit. His hand immediately went for my queen while his mouth sucked on my nipples which made me moan. He slipped his finger in my already wet queen and fingered me slowly. The feeling on my queen was all sorts of amazing, I opened my legs wider as my hand reached for his king which was already leaking precum. He moaned as I stroked his king slowly. He quickened his pace as he continued to penetrate me deeply with his fingers

Me: hmmm aaaah Lwandiso

As I was about to cum, he took his fingers out, turned me on my side and placed his king at the entrance of my already dripping wet queen. He didn't go in but just put the tip in. I wanted more, I needed more

Season 3

Insert 51

Soso

Watching the woman I love sink into a dark whole each and everyday was not easy for me. It broke my heart how Lwa expected an orgasm to heal the emotional scares that she has. Every time she broke down, she'd demand sex and I'd give into her demands knowing very well that it wasn't helping her. The Friday afternoon after an intense fucking session, I won't lie and call it love making because the way she was riding my dick so hard, I swear I thought it was going to fall off. We laid in bed, catching our breaths and that's when I turned on my side, lifted my head up securing it with my hands and stared at her. I was losing her and that brought so much fear to me. I can't lose her, especially when I have the power to do something about it

Lwa: you are starring

I smiled faintly

Me: so?

She also turned on her side mirroring what I was doing. I love her, every single imperfection and flaw about her is loved by me.

Me: we should get cleaned up. I want to take you somewhere

She frowned her eyebrows and that's when I leaned forward and kissed the space between her eyes.

Me: go shower and I'm going to get us breakfast

Her: where are we going?

Me: you'll find out soon enough

I got up from the bed, opened the blinds and the sliding door then I wore my long PJ pants

Her: aren't you going to wear a T-shirt?

Me: what for? I'm just going downstairs

She sat up on the bed and gave me a look I didn't understand, I don't know whether to say she was jealous, insecure or doubtful

Me: baby

Her: hmmm

Me: thetha

Her: just wear a T-shirt Soso. We are not alone

I was now even more confused but past experience has taught me never to argue or disagree with a pregnant woman. I grabbed my mint green T-shirt from the floor, put it on then headed for the door.

After eating, I showered then wore a checked shirt that I folded until the elbows, caramel chinos and navy sneakers. Lwa was in a navy maternity dress and a white cardigan that she left unbuttoned. Her hair was in a ponytail and as she applied her make up, she turned to look at me

Her: are you leaving with your hair looking like that?

I roughly ran my fingers through my roughed-up fade then returned the look to her

Me: what's wrong with my hair?

Her: aren't you going to comb it?

Me: hayi I like it like this. Masambe

She sighed, shook her head then applied the finishing touches to her face and we left. The drive to town was a silent one apart from the sound of Nathi's voice through the speakers of the car and occasional humming from Lwa. 20mins later I parked outside the doctor's quarters. I had booked a therapy session for us but I hadn't told Lwa

Me: we are here

She lifted her eyes from her phone and checked her surroundings then looked at me with one eyebrow raised

Lwa: sizothini lana?

Me: let's just go in. Ndiyakucela

She clicked her tongue and unlocked her seatbelt and I did the same before rushing to open her door. She stepped out the car, gave me an unimpressed look which was a clear indication that I was in trouble. I took her hand into mine and we walked towards the door

Me: still love me?

She turned to look at me then continued walking

I don't mind her being mad at me because I believe I am doing the right thing. We were right on time for our appointment so we went straight in. The intros were done and we sat on the red velvet couch and the Indian lady dressed in her white coat sat on her chair opposite us

Dr: what may I assist you with today?

Lwa: does he have to be here?

She was talking about me but she wasn't looking at me

Me: it's up to you sweetheart. I can leave if you are more comfortable with that

Dr: I think it would be better if you left Lwandiso

I nodded then got up. I pecked my wife's cheek

Me: call me when you are done

She nodded as I approached the door

*

*

Lwa

I don't know why people say talking about things helps because I don't see it that way. What it does is leave me feeling like crap, my make up messed up and my heart in pain. After the session, I booked another and then called Soso who then told me that he will be here in 10mins. I sat in the waiting area, grabbed one of those magazines they leave there for us to read. The ones that make you question the

decor in your house after paging through it. Soso called as I was reading about this toilet with a remote control and seat warmers. Aibo umuntu usele yaz. I got up from the chair and headed for the door

Soso: you hungry?

Me: I want to buy a new toilet

Him: what?

I turned to look at him as he started the car. He had a confused look on his face but then again when does my husband ever not look confused. I stared at him for a few seconds, more especially his hair. I don't know why but le fade yakhe was annoying me for some reason. It was all scruffy and untidy, made him look like such a fuck boy

Me: did you know that there are toilets with seat warmers now? I want that toilet

Him: ooohk. What do you want to eat?

Me: fish and chips. Let's go to the one closer to your Barber.

Season 3

Insert 52

Lwa

The plan was to convince Soso to get rid of the fade. I know its a long shot but I was hoping to at least get as far as him agreeing to neaten it up. We parked outside the Fish and chips restaurant and as always, he came over to my side to open the door. I'm not a fan of Soso's cars ngoba they are small, for example the one we are using today, the Jaguar XF...its just not my kind of car. He placed our order then came to sit at the table

Me: you are fixing your hair after we are done eating right?

Soso: whats with you and my hair today? You are obsessed with it

Me: baby you look like you are trying to recruit varsity first years. All you need now is a vrrrr pha and you'll have the fuck boy starter pack.

He laughed as I said this and honestly, I didn't understand what was so funny about what I just said. He paid no mind to what I had said, instead he took out his phone and browsed through it so nam I did the same. I went through my social networks then texted Aphile on WhatsApp but she called me back instead.

Me: babe

It was like someone had poured hot water on Soso's back because his eyes shot open and I just smiled. He gets so insecure at times

Aphile: its been a while. How are you?

Me: I'm still very much pregnant and dreading it by the second.

Her: lol I can imagine. So, your text...you want a home birth?

Me: yebo sthandwa sam. With a midwife and everything. Can you hook it up for me?

Her: its short notice but I'll see what I can do. I'll let you know tonight

Me: actually, come for dinner. The kids miss you, especially that diva of yours

Throughout the entire call, Soso had his eyes on me with his head tilted to the left. I hung up just in time for our order to be brought to us.

Me: let's eat and stop staring

Soso: who was that?

I took a chip from my plate then sprinkled salt and chips spice on them. Again, my husband had his eyes glued on me

Me: would you relax? It was AP

"Oh" was all that came out of his mouth as he dug into his food.

Him: so how was therapy?

I was still a bit mad at him for taking me to therapy secretly because had he asked me, I would have agreed. I had taken the decision to give it a try already, it was just a matter of time

Me: you tricked me

Him: I had no other choice. I've been asking you to go for weeks now but all you ever do is give me excuses for not going

Me: thank you

I know those words caught him by surprise but I truly was thankful for his love and patience. After lunch, he got his fade trimmed then we bought a few things for the babies then drove home. It was just after 1pm and the weather just switched up and became cloudy and drizzly. Niyayaz mos leweather that demands you get in bed and get up to no good, iBMW (baby making weather). That's the weather we were currently experiencing. I grabbed a throw and sat on the couch with it covering my body and switched to vuzu amp to watch the repeat of For Better or Worse. Angela just does it for me, she is the type of woman we all should aspire to be like, just minus the crazy. Soso walked in and got under my throw as well

Soso: you and this show of yours

Me: imnandi nje baby

Him: I beg to differ. Yaz baby I was talking to my dad on the phone just now

I sat up to give him my full attention

Me: uthini uTatuSmith?

Him: he was asking if we are still planning on having the traditional wedding

I've always wanted a traditional wedding but having it so many years after the white wedding doesn't make sense worse ke manje since I'm not in talking terms with my parents and my family is still grieving. The time is just off but ke luckily when I explained it to him, Soso was understanding, despite still pushing me to reconcile with my parents. An hour later he fetched the kids, helped them with their homework while I watched TV. Later we watched movies together as a family

*

*

Soso

Time went by and everything was good endlini, the kids were good, Alwande and Limile were making progress with therapy and so was Lwa which meant our marriage was good as well. It was now the 6th of April and Lwa still hasn't given birth which means she was more agitated than usual and cranky all the time. To make matters worse its the day before Yandisa's birthday and she is being a diva about wanting a big party. I come home from work after having the longest day ever to find my princess crying in her room. I literally dropped everything and rushed to her side. Yandisa is my little girl so I always want her to be happy, I never want to see a single tear on her face which is most probably why she is so spoiled and such a daddy's girl. I picked her up from the bed and placed her on my lap as I sat down on the chair

Me: what's wrong baby? Talk to daddy

She sniffed a few times then placed her head on my shoulder and wrapped her arms around my neck

Yandi: mommy doesn't want me to have a party tomorrow. My friends are going to think I'm lame if I don't have a party. I'm turning 6 daddy I have to have a party

Me: bhabha yischool day kalok ngomso so soba njani neparty on a school day?

Her: hayi tata yibirthday yam njena. Every princess has a party, am I not a princess ngok mna tata?

Me: you are a princess bhabha but soyenza Saturday iparty yakho. Ngomso udaddy uzakuthengela icake ne presents andithi?

She quickly removed her head from my shoulder and looked at me. Her small eyes widened as the sparkle filled them. I wiped her tears, kissed her cheeks then she pecked my lips and wrapped her arms around my neck again

Her: you are the best daddy in the whole wide world. I love you

Me: lol how much?

Her: as much as everything

I laughed before placing her back on the bed. She was happy again which means my job was done.

Me: I love you too bhabha wam

Her smile grew wider as I headed for the door and made my way to my bedroom and I was surprised to find Aphile and Lwa doing some weird exercises

Me: you guys do know there is a very spacious gym upstairs, right?

I pecked Lwa's lips then dropped my bag on the bed

Lwa: the gym is too far

Me: so, AP yintoni le oyenzisa umfazi wam?

AP: exercises to help induce the labor

This time around at least Aphile was dressed decently in loose top and sweatpants. I changed in the bathroom then went upstairs to the gym. Later that night after dinner, Lwa started experiencing cramps but they were mild at first but around 10pm they got intense

Me: should we go to the hospital?

She shook her head and continued with the pacing around the living room and breathing heavily. I was in a bit of a panic state because I had no idea what was going on. Her water hadn't broken yet.

Me: do you need anything?

She again shook her head. I called AP

AP: you have an inflatable pool, right?

Me: ewe

Her: get it ready and fill it up 3quarters with luke warm water. We are on our way

She hung up before I could ask any further questions. I passed my instructions to Sno and she inflated the pool while MaRose dealt with whatever Lwa was going through. I don't know what was taking AP so long but around half 11 Lwa's water broke then the contractions started. If I wasn't the father, I would have left them because all the screaming Lwa was doing was unbearable. You'd swear she has never given birth before.

Me: can you stop being so stubborn and go to the hospital?

Lwa: no! I'm having these babies here. Just call Aphile and find out where she is

I took out my phone and dialed AP's number

AP: Soso hey

Me: uphi fondin? This person's water broke and uyagxola apha

Lwa: voetsek Soso

She flicked the middle finger at me and I just chuckled

AP: the midwife is busy with delivering another baby right now and I can't come there alone. How far is her dilation?

Me: her what?

Her: dilation? Check it by inserting your fingers in her vagina.

Me: hayi AP andzokwenza lonto mna. Just get here fondin

Her: Soso you finger fuck your wife all the time, just pretend you are doing that and tell me how many fingers can you fit in. Simple

I sighed as I approached Lwa who was now doing squats in the middle of the room

Me: baby uthi uAP mandichecke idilation yakho

Her eyes shot open and she shook her head

Lwa: wena? Hell no. You might just poke my babies in the eye. I'll wait

Me: sugeza mahn Lwa. AP says it can't wait

She looked at me doubtfully as she laid on the carpet with her legs open. I swallowed hard as I thought about what I'm about to do. I inserted the first finger then a second and a third. That's all I could fit in then I took them out and placed the phone back on my ear

Me: 3. I managed to get 3 in

AP: OK 3cm is still fine. She has to get to 10cm. We should be there after midnight. Just try to keep her calm.

Just then Lwa let out her 5th scream since I started this phone call

Me: I'll try but uyazivela mos nawe ukuba uyagxola lomuntu

I hung up then went to pour myself a glass of whiskey. Andiqondi ukuba kutheni angafuni ukuya esbhedlela uLwa. AP and the midwife arrived at 1:30am and they got Lwa in the pool that was in my living room. As much as I was curious, no amount of curiosity would make me want to be anywhere near that screaming. I was just glad the kids were sleeping in our bedroom which is sound proof. It was around 4am when I heard the midwife instructing Lwa to start pushing and only then I moved closer to the action. I held her hand and she yanked it away from me but brought it back soon after and squeezed it for dear life

MidW: I can see the head. Give me one big push

Lwa shook her head. Her face was covered in sweat and tears

Lwa: I can't do it. It hurts too much. I can't push anymore

Me: come on baby. You can do it sthandwa sam. One more push

She looked at me before nodding and screaming her lungs out. Her scream was followed by a loud cry. Fear and excitement took over my body. My babies were finally here. AP took the baby from the midwife to get him/her cleaned up

AP: congrats daddy, its a girl

I smiled weakly as tears rolled down my cheeks. A few minutes later the room was filled by the sound of another cry.

MidW: its a boy

Season 3

Insert 53

Lwa

Yaybona lento yokuthanda izinto will be the death of us black people. I wanted the birth of the twins to be different from the birth of my other kids since this was the last time I'm having babies. That's why I wanted the home water birth but yeses these babies showed me flames. The cramps and contractions were on another level of painful, my back was on fire, my vagina was throbbing and I swear the way giving birth to them was so painful, it was as if this was the first time I have kids. Bringing Yandisa to the world wasn't this painful, she was an easy birth but her brother and sister were something else. It was 6am when we got admitted at the hospital, the kids were taken away for check ups and I was checked as well. When the doctor was done, all I wanted to do was sleep but Soso and his kids had something else planned. He walked in through the door with AP pushing the twins' beds with them

Soso: say hey mommy

I wasn't in the mood, I was tired and all I wanted to do was sleep. I didn't even sit up when they walked in, that should have hinted to them that ngikhathele. For some reason nganyingenayo leyo excitement I've had before with my kids, I didn't feel the connection with these babies or maybe I was just tired. Soso kissed my head then pecked my lips.

AP: your babies are healthy and super cute. Congrats again guys

Me: hmmm thanks

Soso and AP played with them while I slowly drifted off to sleep. As I was falling deeper into my sleep I was interrupted but a loud cry but I kept my eyes closed. Soso shook me and I opened one eye and gave me the death stare

Me: what?

Soso: they need to be fed and you haven't held them

Me: yho I'm tired Lwandiso. I'll do it later

He cocked his eyebrow at me and I knew exactly what that meant so I sat up and he handed my son to me. I looked at him and he was adorable but it didn't feel like he was my child. I tried giving him my breast to suck on but he just cried louder

Me: he doesn't want to eat so what must I do? This child doesn't like me so ngcela umthathe please. I need to sleep

AP moved closer to me wathatha uboy and he immediately kept quiet. Mcim see what I mean mangithi he doesn't like me? I laid down and covered my head with the comforter and tears streamed down my face onto the pillow. I don't know when they left but when I woke up they were gone but my kids were at my bedside fast asleep. I looked at my daughter and she looked so much like me, back during my baby days and she wasn't as light skinned as her brother who was now sucking his thumb. I got up from the bed and limped to the bathroom and filled the tub. I stayed in the water until the water got cold. I felt rejected by my own kids, I felt as if I had failed as a mother, they don't like me. They don't want me and they won't love me. After getting out the tub, I wore my gown and went into the room where I found Soso bonding with his kids. Uboy was on the bed and ugirl was in his arms. I cleared my throat and he looked up at me but when I smiled, my smile wasn't returned

Soso: have you fed them?

I shook my head and the look I saw on his face was something I've never seen. He was angry and disappointed but I ignored him and moisturized my body and got dressed in sweatpants and a sweater then got back in bed. I had to hold uboy since he was on the bed and he started crying. I lifted my head and stared at Soso with tears in my eyes. He looked at me with no emotion in his eyes

Him: he is hungry so feed him

I shook my head and tears rolled down my cheeks. I feared he would reject me again

Him: come on mahn Lwa feeda umntana

Me: he won't take the breast nje

I tried again but this time he did take it and started sucking. I stared at him for a long time, until he was full then I burped him walala. I fed his sister as well and she wasn't

much of a crier and when I had put her down for her to sleep, Soso got on the bed and looked at me

Him: what's going on with you?

Me: I'm not connecting with them. They don't want me. They don't like me

He shifted and turned to face me. He has his confused look on as usual and I didn't have the strength and energy to explain this to him

Him: baby they are not even a day old. Give them time. They love you and you love them

I didn't respond but instead I buried my head in his chest. After some time, he let me go then we shared a kiss

Him: I love you and you are a great mother. I know that, our kids at home know that and these two will know it soon enough

Just then it hit me that its the diva's birthday today and I haven't said happy birthday to her and her father has been here the whole day

Me: when are we getting discharged?

Him: this evening

Me: ohk good. Please get that doll house at Toys R Us for that diva child of yours and don't forget to collect her cake. Last thing I need is Yandisa throwing a tantrum when I get home

Before Soso left the lady from home affairs walked in with forms for us to fill in regarding the birth registration of the twins

Me: we haven't had time to decide on names so we will leave the forms at reception when I get discharged.

When evening came, I bathed the twins with the help of a nurse and dressed them warmly then placed them on the bed. They looked so adorable. When daddy arrived, we discussed possible names for them

Me: how about Kwando and Kwandile?

Him: kwandile for uBoy?

Me: yeah

Him: ok. Kwando Macy and Kwandile Marcel

Me: perfect.

When we got home the kids were still doing their homework and MaRose and Sno were setting up for Yandisa's birthday dinner but the moment they saw us walking in with the babies, they rushed to us

Sno: they are so cute sis Lwa

I smiled as I handed Kwando to her and dropped myself on the couch. I was still exhausted because honestly, I haven't rested

Me: is the nursery ready?

Sno: yebo sisi. I'm going to put them down

I made my way upstairs then got in bed to sleep. I put my phone on silent and passed out the moment my head hit the pillow. When I woke up, all my kids were in my room surrounding my bed. I sat up and passed my gaze from each face then they all got on the bed

Me: what's going on?

Yandi: you didn't say happy birthday mommy

Me: but I got you the best gift ever

Her: a pony?

Li: where's your stomach auntie?

He had a confused look on his face but I just smiled and pulled him closer

Me: its small because I'm hungry. Yandi, I bought you a little brother and a little sister

Her face lit up like a Christmas tree, all their faces did

Q: nyan mama

I nodded and smiled then put on my gown and we went downstairs to the nursery where the twins were still fast asleep

Me: they are sleeping so guys you have to be quiet

Them: ok

We walked in and they looked so happy to see the babies

Loy: what are their names?

Me: that's your brother Kwandile and that's your sister Kwanda

Q: lol Yandisa is no longer the baby of the family

Yandi: yes, I'm a big sister now. Thank you, mommy this is the best birthday present ever,

Alwande: my cousins are so cute dabs

Me: let's let them sleep while we have dinner.

Mike, Jay, Pali, Brit, Lwakho and Avery joined us. They were here for the twins and the birthday dinner. By the time everyone left, I was exhausted and worst part is that the twins were up so we took them to our room and used the side cots. I pumped milk for them and their father fed Kwandi while I fed Kwando

Soso: I forgot to say thank you. You've blessed me beyond what I've ever imagined. Enkosi mamakhe

I smiled and focused on my daughter. A true mini me.

Him: she looks like you. Even the complexion. A true beauty. I'm going to have a hard time fighting the boys off her and Yandisa

Me: lol good luck. She's asleep. Is Kwandi asleep?

Him: not yet but you can sleep babe. I'll stay up with him. I love you

Me: and I love you

We shared a short kiss then I kissed my babies and turned on my side to sleep. I'm just glad the birthday dinner kaYandisa went well and that the twins were finally here and as much as we still haven't connected, Soso's support is all I need to get through this but I just wish Nami and Phiwe could have been here to meet my kids. I know Nami would have been so happy to see them. I can already imagine him

saying "Lwa that's enough kids now. We get it, you and Soso have a lot of sex but please no more babies". I miss his sense of humour the most because he always knew how to make me laugh no matter what I could be going through. He just never got around to teaching me how to go through life without him because truth be told, I'm struggling with that part the most.

Season 3

Insert 54

Soso

I had to take time off work again since Lwa was just struggling with the twins. She had fallen into a deep depression because she claimed the twins don't like her so when the kids cry or need her attention, she either leaves the room or leaves the house. Le behaviour yakhe was taking its toll on our marriage, to the extent that we are not even sleeping in the same room anymore. I woke up on a Wednesday morning, the twins were a month old so I was taking them for their vaccines. I took a shower, wrapped my lower body with a towel and went into the room I used to share with my wife. She was under the covers but she was awake. I took out my navy chinos, a white vest and a powder blue T-shirt but it was wrinkled and I was already running late. I stretched it on front of me, just to see if I can sacrifice kancinci and wear it but it was way too wrinkled

Lwa: do you need me to iron that for you?

I shifted my focus from my T-shirt to her, she was now sitting on her legs on the bed. She was a mess, her hair needed to be done, she had bags under her eyes and I could be imagining it but she was losing weight with every moment that she stayed in this state

Me: you sure you are up for it?

She nodded as she got out of bed, she was wearing one of my t-shirts which reached just under her ass. She came up to me and tried taking the T-shirt I was holding but I pulled her closer to me, kissed her forehead then hugged her tightly.

Me: I miss you so much babe.

She tried escaping my embrace but I didn't allow her. I desperately needed for her to go back to therapy since it was helping her so much but she stopped after the twins arrived

Her: let me go and iron your T-shirt so you won't be late

Me: you not curious to know where I'm off too?

I loosened my grip and she stepped back a bit and looked at me with a cocked eyebrow

Her: aren't you going to work?

I let out a sigh

Me: Lwa I haven't been to work in a month

She looked surprised, shocked in fact. That's what happens when a person never comes out the bedroom, akayaz ukuba kwenzeka nton emzini wakhe.

Her: but why?

Me: heee fondin I had to do your job. I had to take care of our kids.

I made sure to emphasize the "our" part so she gets it through her head that she is a mother as well and these kids need her. Her eyes soon filled up with tears and that was my cue to leave.

Me: you shall find me in the nursery when you are done with my T-shirt

The twins have been around for a month but Lwa has never been inside the nursery. I left the room and made my way downstairs, it was still early so the older kids were having breakfast

Me: morning guys

I kissed everyone's forehead then took my food from the oven and sat next to Alwande

Q: daddy are you and mommy going to come to my soccer game?

Me: when is it ndoda?

Q: this afternoon

Me: I'll try be there but mommy isn't feeling well so I doubt she will be there

Yaya: what's wrong with mommy? She has been sick for a long time. You should take her to the doctor daddy

Me: I will princess. Eat up guys, usis Sno unimele

In no time they were done, just in time to say goodbye to the twins because MaRose walked in with them. I took Kwando and gave her her bottle

Me: hmmm someone was hungry. Morning daddy's princess. How are you?

She smiled a little then went back to sucking her bottle. Her brother was being fed by MaRose. I don't know where I'd be without her since she has been so helpful with the kids

MaRose: how's Lwa?

Me: andaz ma. Andaz nyan

Her: ndicinga ukuba kunyanzekile ukuba uxelele umama wakhe ngok. Its been a month now

I sighed again. She had a point; my kids need their mother and I guess Lwa needs hers but the last thing I need is Lwa being mad at me. When I was done feeding my daughter, I took their baby bags then MaRose helped me buckle them in their car seats. I put pacifiers in their mouths then drove off to the paediatrician

*

*

Lwa

I was woken up by the sound of one of the twins' crying and I immediately covered my head with the comforter. I hated the sounds of their cries, it was annoying and irritating. I didn't hate my kids but I just didn't want to be around them, we were not connecting and they irritated me. When I got downstairs to give him his T-shirt, he was feeding his daughter while MaRose was feeding his son. Silence filled the room as I walked in and instantly knew that they were talking about me

Me: morning ma

MaRose: molo ntombi. Awubaweli ukubamba unyana wakho?

I felt my chest tightening as she asked this question. I wanted to but I couldn't bring myself to actually taking him. What if he starts crying? I'd probably drop him

Me: another time ma. Soso

He lifted his head from looking at his daughter and looked at me

Soso: hmm

Me: I'm done

Him: nganton?

He knew what I was talking about but he insisted on ukungenza islima and I just played along because I don't want to argue with my husband in front of MaRose

Me: your T-shirt

I handed it to him but he didn't take it

Season 3

Insert 55

Lwa

We stared at each other, with me holding out his T-shirt to him and him refusing to take it

Soso: ndizawunxiba njani esoskiba ngiphethe umntana?

I placed it on the kitchen counter and turned to walk away before he asks me to hold the baby. I heard him click his tongue from a distance away but I had no intention of turning around. I went upstairs, ran myself a bath and as I was getting naked, I heard his car drive off. I took my bath and when I was done, I saw food on a tray on my bedside table. I moisturised my body, put on sweatpants and a long sleeve T-shirt then got back in bed. The bed was also now made but I pulled back the covers and got in. I took 5 spoonfuls of the oats, took a few sips of my juice then pushed the tray away. I covered my head with the comforter and scrolled through all the pictures I have of my brother on my phone. My chest tightened and tears rolled down my cheeks. It hurt so much and no amount of time will heal my pain. Just then my phone rang and I checked the caller ID then answered

Me: little one

My nose was blocked and my voice was a little hoarse, quite evident that I had been crying

KK: I'm at the airport, please come pick me up

Me: airport? What you doing there?

Him: just come get me Lwa.

With that said, he hung up. Why would KK be here? It didn't make sense but I knew better than to keep him waiting. He might be younger than me but KK will complain until you regret being in his presence. I put on my slippers and a beanie then went downstairs. I found the twins in the lounge in their car seats but there was no one in the house. I called about for MaRose but there was no response, I called out for Sno and Soso but there was no response as well so I dialed their numbers but they were

all off. Now I was panicking and to make matters worse, one of the twins started crying. I haven't held these babies since the night we brought them home. Wakhala uboy and I straight up ignored him and went to the kitchen. I texted KK to take a cab while I chopped fruits to make a smoothie, now both the kids were crying so I connected my earphones to my phone and listened to music. I blended the fruits, added vanilla ice cream and ultramel then blended again. KK walked in as I poured my smoothie into a milkshake glass then sat on the high chairs but before I could take my first sip, I felt my earphones being yanked from my ears which caused me to scream and turn around

KK: what the fuck Lwa? You have earphones on while your kids have been crying since lord knows when ngoba sebebomvu nje

Me: mxm

I put my earphones back in my ears and continued with my smoothie. When I was done, I rinsed the glass then went to the lounge but it was empty, no sigh of KK or the twins. Oh well. I switched the TV on, changed to the music channel then put my phone in the charger. An hour later, KK walked in with Kwando on one hand and diapers on the other. She wasn't crying anymore but her whole face was red

KK: hold her, I want to throw these away

Me: put her on the couch

He frowned at me but gently placed her on the seat next to mine. I stared at her, she was dressed in a pink warm fluffy onesie and had her pink pacifier in her mouth. She is so beautiful with her big eyes. It was like I was looking in the mirror. KK returned and sat on the couch at the far end

Him: please lend me your car

Me: uyaphi?

Him: out

I cocked my eyebrows at him because you can't want to borrow my car and not tell me ukuthi uyaphi. Phela my cars are my babies

Him: I'm going to Jason's house for a chill session

Me: hmm take the keys in the keyholder

Him: The G wagon angithi

I burst out laughing. KK is dreaming, not even my kids and Soso are allowed in my beast. That's my boss lady car

Me: lol fuck no. Take the keys to the Golf R but you can't leave before Soso or Sno comes back

Just then my phone rang, I got up from the couch then went to to disconnect it from the charger and answered. It was a landline number

Me: Lwandile hello

Her: good day, is this Mrs Smith?

Me: yes

Her: I'm calling from Limile and Mikaela's school. Its already half two and you are not here. Your husband said you will be fetching them

OK, this is new information to me but I'll get to the bottom of what the hell Soso is playing at

Me: I wasn't unaware. I'll send my brother to fetch them. His name is Kwandokuhle Hadebe

Her: he will have to produce proof of identification

Me: ok. Thank you

I hung up and before I could say anything to KK he was already refusing to go to the school

KK: no can't do sis. I have to go or they will leave me.

I dialed Soso's number but it rang unanswered then he sent me a text that sent shivers down my spine. I dialed Sno's number and she answered

Me: Ukuphi?

Sno: I'm at home sisi. Ubhut' Soso said we should come back on the 19th

Me: askies? So MaRose is also at home?

Her: yebo sisi

I hung up and paced around the house.

KK: I'm off sis. See you next weekend

I was miles away, he kissed my forehead and left.

Season 3

Insert 56

Lwa

So here I am standing in the middle of the lounge slowly losing my mind. I reread iText ka Soso

From: My Heart>

Its time to step up and be a mother. I'm going away with my brothers for a week and I sent Sno and MaRose home. You better not harm my kids while I'm gone because I swear to God Lwandile, you will see flames. I love you

Heeeh he even has the audacity to add the I love you. Soso threw me in the deep end on purpose so it's either I sink or swim. I chose to swim. I put Kwando in her car seat then went to get her brother. He woke up the moment I placed him in the car seat so I had to pick him up and hush him but my hands were shaking.

Me: you can do this Lwa. You've got this.

I sat down on the couch, lifted my son up and placed him in my arms then rocked him but nothing worked. I put the pacifier in his mouth and he'd suck it for 5 secs and spit it out and scream his lungs out.

Me: thula phela boy kaMama. Nyakcela Smith

After almost an hour, mind you its almost 4pm now and I still haven't fetched the older kids, my phone has been ringing nonstop and Kwando was also now crying. I placed them both in their car seats then took them to the kitchen and placed them on the kitchen counter, I warmed up their milk then fed them. Only then did they keep quiet. When they were full, I burped them then took the keys to Soso's GLE and fastened them then drove to pick up the older kids. Ngaqala ngoLimile because their teacher was on my case about how everyone has left and she is watching my kids and what not. I got to the school, apologized then took my kids to the car

Yaya: you are late mama

Me: I know Yaya. I'm sorry

Yaya: where is daddy anyway? He is never late. He knows what time school comes out

Me: Yandisa please! I know I'm late and I already said I'm sorry manje usufunani kimi?

She didn't respond which was a good thing because the last thing I'm in the mood for is Yandisa and her bratty behaviour. I drove to the primary school where I found Loyiso and Alwande already waiting. They were also in a foul mood to the extent that Loyiso even slammed the door

Me: hey guys

Lwande: hey dabs. I didn't know you were going to fetch us. We've been calling uncle Soso since school came out

Me: askies Nana, he couldn't come pick you guys up so I'm here. Loyiso where is your brother?

There was no response from him which irritated me. I called his name 3 more times before Yaya told me that he has earphones on

Me: Yandisa yank those earphones out of his ears

She must have done as I had told her because I soon heard Loyiso shouting at her

Loy: what the hell Yandisa? Ndzakubetha. Nxa

Me: ukhuluma nobani kanjalo Loyiso? And when you plug earphones in your ears, how are you going to hear me?

He didn't respond but instead he put the earphones back in his ears. This child is going to drive me crazy

Lwande: Dabs uQ unesoccer match ngoku

Me: until when?

She shrugged her shoulders and right now I didn't have a choice but to wait for him so I switched off the engine of the car then sighed loudly

Li: asihambi?

Me: silinde uQhawe boy. We can't leave him angithi?

He nodded. I didn't even know Qhawe had a soccer game today, this day is just draining all the energy out of my body.

Li: uyeza ngok uCoo auntie?

Me: hayi manje boy

Him: OK. Lambile mna

I figured they must all be hungry so I drove to McDonald's and bought them happy meals then drove back to the school

Me: please don't make a mess in daddy's car. Ngyancela

While they ate, I checked on my babies and they were fast asleep, bebesuthi vele. Soso was still not taking my calls which took me by surprise when my phone rang and his name popped up

Me: hello

Soso: did you get my text?

Me: I'm good and how are you Lwandiso?

Him: sundigezela Lwa. Uyifumena okanye awuyifumananga itext yam?

Me: I got it

Him: so kutheni ugxolela umntanam?

Me: so now every time I shout at our child, I must submit a report to you? And what do you call this nonsense you are doing? Leaving me alone with 7 kids for two weeks?

Next thing I heard beeps coming from the other end of the phone. He hung up on me. I turned around, my eyes searching for Yaya but she had her head bowed down while she picked chips from her takeaway

Me: Yandisa

My voice was firm and authoritative which caught everyone's attention. She looked up at me and I'm sure she saw the anger on my face

Me: we need to talk when we get home

Loy: lol for once the princess is in trouble

I shifted my focus from my daughter to my son

Me: don't start with me Loyiso Smith. Ngizokushaya Mina

We had been parked at the school for 30mins when Qhawe approached the car, he got in the front seat

Q: hey mom

Me: hey boy. How was your game?

Q: we lost.

I handed him his food then started the engine and drove home. The kids talked amongst themselves until we got home. I took my babies out then placed them in their cots. For the first time, I took a chance to admire the decor in the nursery and I must admit Soso did a great job. It was perfect.

Season 3

Insert 57

Lwa

After putting the twins to bed, I summoned Yandisa to my bedroom. She walked in with her head hanging low, she often does that when she knows that she is in trouble and her father isn't here to bail her out. I sat on my bed and she sat on the stool in front of the dressing table which was quite a distance from where I was seated

Me: so ufuna ngimemeze lento engfuna ukuykhuluma nawe?

She shook her head then pulled the stool closer to the bed. I was upset with her, that's no lie. This friendship yakhe with her father needs to come to a stop ngoba uSoso doesn't seem to understand that he should always be a parent first and a friend last

Me: uthen kuTatakho?

She didn't respond until I called out her name

Yaya: ma

Me: must I repeat my question?

She shook her head, enye ke into engidinayo ngoYandisa, these nonverbal responses zakhe

Me: Yandisa angithi you have a mouth and you know how to use it so start using it before ngikhiphe ibhande Mina ngikshaye. Utheni kuTatakho

Her: ngimxelele ukuba you were late and that ude wandishouta

All this time ukhuluma nami ebheke phansi which goes to show ukuthi uyaz lento ayenzile ibiwrong

Me: ngfuna unglalele kahle mntanam, I am your mother and uTatakho is your father, akungathi uma ngikukhuza mina bese wena uyongreporter. I have a right to shout at you ngoba I gave you life and trust me baby girl, I'm even allowed to hit you. So, if ngikuthethisa, accept it ngoba uyingane, uxolise if need be. Syezwana

She nodded then a few seconds I heard sniffing. I hate how much Soso spoils this child, she is slowly turning into a brat and lord knows how much ngingazwani nengane engezwa

Me: woza la

She was reluctant at first then wasukuma weza kimi and I hugged her then kissed her forehead

Me: I love you baby uyezwa

She nodded again, she couldn't really speak ngoba ebekhala. I wiped her tears then pecked her lips

Her: I'm...sorry... mama

Me: I forgive you princess. Now go call your brother

Her: which one?

Me: lol that one

She chuckled and walked out of my room then 10mins later, Loyiso barged into my room as if he is the man of the house then dropped himself on my bed. Walala wabheka phezulu resting his head on his hands. I stared at him for a while ngezwa kodwa khona ukuthi I'm slowly getting pissed off. Loyiso isn't even a teenager, he is still a good 4years away from his teenage years and already he is being a headache. I don't know where I got the courage but I slapped him on his cheek and he jumped up and stood a distance away from the bed with his hand on the cheek that was now turning red. He was in disbelief

Me: wozohlala la and conduct yourself like a child khona ngizokhuluma nawe

He stood at the same spot, shifting his eyes between me and the door and I laughed sarcastically

Me: don't even think about it mfana wam. Woza

I pointed at the stool his sister was sitting on while I disciplined her. He moved towards my direction then dropped himself on the stool

Me: what is your problem kahle kahle? Angaz noma awusaziboni ukuthi ungakanani laykhaya and what role you play or rather what role I play in your life. Awungboni Loyiso and I've had it up to here with your attitude

I was making hand gestures all over the place and he just looked at me with no intention to respond to what I was saying

Me: you don't want to talk? Alright ke boy, you are going to sit here until you decide to speak.

I got up from the bed and headed for the door, walked out and went to check on the other kids which were doing their homework in the mini library inside the house. I walked in, rather stood at the door

Me: what would you like to eat?

Q: you cooking mama?

Me: yebo baby

Q: I want to eat lasagna

Lwande: oh, hell no, I've eaten enough lasagna this month. Please make chicken dabs

Yaya: the one that comes out of the oven mama. The one daddy likes

My babies though, they can never agree with each other

Li: uphi uLoy auntie?

Me: he is being disciplined

He looked at me puzzled then shifted his gaze to his sister

Li: yintoni idipline Lane?

I chuckled then walked in and picked him up then took Yaya's hand and led them to the lounge. I switched the TV on then switched the channel to Disney junior and I left them and headed to the kitchen. Keeping busy was helping, I hadn't thought much about Nami since I went to fetch the kids from school. I took out the chicken, defrosted it then got started on boiling potatoes. I was going to make grilled chicken with mashed potatoes, gravy and green salad. As I was chopping tomatoes for the

gravy, Loyiso walked in and sat on the high chairs. I had left him in my room 2hrs ago and honestly besengimkhohliwe

Me: are you ready to start talking

He nodded. Gosh what is wrong with these kids and not using their words

Me: use your words boy

Loy: ewe ndizothetha nawe

I moved to the other side of the counter and sat next to him

Him: wena noTata nabhubhisa ubio dad. uTamnci wandixelela ukuba wena noTata are the reason mna noQhawe singamaziyo ubio dad. You took him away

Season 3

Insert 58

Lwa

I never want my sons to hate their biological father especially ngoba he isn't here to defend himself but at the same time I won't let the Dlamini family paint my husband and I as monsters.

Me: ngubani yena loTamnci that told you yonke lento

Loy: Luba

Wow, that came as a shock to me ngoba that's one guy in that family I don't even talk to. He isn't even on my raider because he is a child kimi so I don't understand what business he has with my son

Me: you know what, we will continue this conversation when your father comes back.
Siyezwana

He nodded but I could tell that he wasn't satisfied, his eyes were still questioning everything

Me: we have nothing to do with your bio dad's death. I promise you my boy. Okay?

Him: okay mama

I kissed his forehead then got up from the chair to continue with my cooking.

Me: go do your homework Loyiso. I'm checking it after dinner

He flashed me a smile, revealing his one dimple then jumped off the chair. I let out a deep sigh, when will Atha and his family let me have peace in my life? After dinner, I checked the kids' homework then took my babies upstairs to my room, placed them on their portable cots then ran myself a bath. When I got out my phone was ringing, I checked the caller ID and it was my heart. As much as I was mad at him, I couldn't help the smile that crept on my face

Me: babe

Soso: mamakhe

Me: uright?

Him: yes, I'm fine, wena? How are the kids?

I let out a sigh as the conversation I had with Loyiso replayed in my head.

Him: is everything OK mamakhe? Should I come home?

Me: no no babe, we are fine. Nothing I can't handle. Ukuphi vele?

Him: siseMonti my love. My brothers, my friends and your brothers. All 8 of us.

Me: oh, have fun ke Tatakhe

Silence filled the air, I hated that he wasn't here, that he was in another town with the guys while I'm alone in the house, mind you its midweek but I wasn't going to point out the obvious to him. Yes, I agree ukuthi I had a lesson to learn but a week and a half with no assistance was just taking it too far.

Him: babe are we good?

Me: yes, Lwandiso siRight. Kwandile just woke up so I have to attend to him

Him: OK I'll check on you guys in the morning. Ndyakthanda Lwandile.

Me: love you too

I hung up, checked on my sleeping babies then went to tuck in the older kids. Ngaqala eroomini kaLimile who was already fast asleep, I covered him kahle then kissed his head, switched off the light. I did the same for all the other kids then went back to my room ngalala

The rest of the week was a struggle, between making breakfast and ensuring everyone gets to school on time and juggling the twins, I was losing my mind. I found myself crying if the twins cry nonstop at the same time. Friday afternoon after putting the twins down for a nap, I got out the shower to find my handsome husband playing with his sleeping son. I paid no attention to him, moisturised my body then got dressed in high waist white jeans and a loose black top

Soso: nisale njani?

Me: sisale kahle. As you can see everyone is still alive

I took out warm onesies for the babies and booties then change them. They looked so cute bakithi nje

Him: going somewhere?

Me: why are you back?

Him: I missed my wife and my kids

Me: hmmm

I took Kwando and he followed me with Kwandile and we put them in their car seats. He wanted to come with us so I let him. My Golf R was with KK so I had to take the Evoque but Soso refused to drive

Him: I'm not gonna drive a women car. I'd rather sit here at the back with my squad

Me: suit yourself.

I drove to the mall because I needed things for Alwande's school project. I took a trolley, put my son in the baby seat while Soso did the same with his daughter. We decided to do groceries as well so we went by aisle by aisle. When we approached the snacks aisle we bumped into Ziya. I don't even remember the last time I saw her

Ziya: Lwandiso

Soso hadn't seen her until she called out his name, she was with a little boy. He looked about Yaya's age and so cute

Soso: Miss Phakathi, unjani?

They shared a brief hug while I threw snacks in the trolley

Ziya: hey Lwa

Me: hey Ziya

I flashed her a fake smile and pushed the trolley past her, leaving Soso behind

*

*

Soso

I hadn't seen or spoken to Ziya since the morning after we slept together, she just disappeared off the face of the earth and it's not like I had a chance to care about her whereabouts since everything went sideways after Lwa and I got married

Ziya: is this your daughter?

Me: yeah. My little princess Kwando. How have you been?

That was a bit of a rhetorical question because she looked bad, it was obvious ukuba she was sick. My eyes shifted from her to the little man she was with. There was something about him that just drew me to him.

Her: don't pretend like you can't see that I'm sick.

Me: uhm who's this guy?

She looked at the boy and smiled faintly. He had a big curly afro, golden brown eyes and long lashes. He looked like a girl, that's how cute he was and by the looks of things, he was a shy boy.

Ziya: this is my son Shaun

Wow that caught me by surprise because that's my second name.

Me: oh, he is cute. Jonga fondin, funeka ndihambile.

Her: it was good to see you

Me: likewise. Let's go princess

I pushed the trolley to catch up with Lwa who was already two aisles away from where she had left me. She was throwing in toiletries for the kids and I was throwing in my trolley all the baby things. We eventually paid and pushed the trolleys to the parking lot. I felt even more tension between Lwa and I but I don't like public confrontations so ndathula until we were in the car

Lwa: do you still need anything?

Me: nah, we can go home. I'll drive this time

I opened the passenger door for her, buckled her up then leaned in for a kiss. I kissed her slowly, pulling her bottom lip and gently biting it then pecked her lips. She involuntarily smiled which made me smile as well ngoba her smile was genuine

Her: lol please just take us home

I laughed then got in the car and drove home. By the time we got home, the kids were asleep so I placed them in the nursery then helped Lwa unpack the groceries. When we were done, I sat her down and we talked

Him: I'm not going to apologize for leaving you alone with the kids. You are their mother and you've been absent for way too long so I had to do something

Her: OK

Me: come on babe. Thetha nam please

Her: Lwandiso I hate the way you spoil our daughter, she is turning into a brat that doesn't know where the line is drawn. She is your princess, I understand that but you are her parent first then her king. I'm her mother and when I discipline her, your job is to have my back. We are a team

I'm not going to say I was surprised to hear this ngoba she has voiced out her concern over how I treat our daughter but she has to understand that Yandisa is my first biological child, my first daughter so naturally I have to be protective over her. I know how much I've hurt girls before, how my brothers treat women and its so much easier to take advantage of girls who lack a father's love in their lives. I never want someone to ever break my little girl's heart. The way I treat Yandisa will be the same way I'll treat Kwando and Alwande. I explained all this to Lwa and it felt like I was getting through to her but she still stressed the issue of having her back when it comes to discipline and nam ndavuma ke

Her: and then there is the issue kaLoyiso

I frowned my eyebrows then leaned back on the couch I was sitting on

Me: utheni ngoku uLoyiso?

Her: one of Atha's cousins told him that we killed Atha.

Ndake ndayibona iworry ebsweni bakhe because uLwa akafuni aba abantwana bencinga into embi ngaloAtha but enough is enough

Me: so uzawuthini ke ngoku?

Her: angaz Soso. I told Loyiso that we will talk to him together

Me: mamakhe I just think we should sit the boys down and tell them everything

She closed her eyes and threw her head back then released a sigh. She stayed in that position for a while then I pulled her towards me and she rested her head on my shoulder. I listened to her breathing then traced my finger on her shoulders

Her: they are turning 9years old in 3months. They are too young for all this Soso. These are my babies. My little boys. I don't want to hurt them.

Season 3

Insert 59

Lwa

I had my head rested on his chest, listening to his heart beating. I was at a crossroad and I had no idea which way to go, which way would be the right way, the way that won't cause pain to my sons

Soso: can I suggest something?

Me: hmmm

I knew whatever he was going to suggest was going to be hard to swallow but the least I can do is hear him out angithi?

Him: let's invite your parents over, they will get to meet the twins and maybe they will be able to guide us on a way forward.

This topic always causes a bitter taste in my mouth. Family is important to Lwandiso and I guess that's why he is always pushing the issue of me making up with my parents but I'm not ready. I'm in this whole mess with Loyiso because my father couldn't mind his own business now I'm expected to bring in the instigator of this whole mess to help me solve it. Ai ngeke shame, I will handle my house and its matters alongside my husband

Me: I can't. Soso I can't do that, he has to apologize. I am done accepting apologies I don't get

He sighed and judging from the silence that followed, I knew his silence meant uyayiyeka yonke lento. After some time, he got up, grabbed the car keys eGLE then kneeled phambi kwam

Him: I'm going to fetch the kids from school, please make them something to eat. We will talk to Loyiso and Qhawe xa ndibuya nabo.

Me: alright. Just drop Alwande and Limile at therapy. They haven't gone there since Tuesday

He looked at me with his eyebrow cocked and a slight smile to the side. Muhle mahn umyeni wam. I'm glad he never got rid of the fade, it makes him even more sexy. I know I hated it while I was pregnant

Him: I'll see you later ke baby

He pecked my lips then left. I watched a few episodes of the Awkward marathon on MTV then headed for the kitchen, made ham and cheese sandwiches, orange slices and set everything for them including juice and danone yogurts. My phone rang while I waited for them

Me: buddy bae

Enzo: buddy you have to come to the hospital. Its time, buddy

He was in panic mode level 100 and I instantly knew that Noma was in labor

Me: OK buddy I'm on my way. Stay calm yezwa

Him: OK just come buddy. She is making so much noise

Me: lol OK ngyeza

I laughed as I hung up. Knowing how labor is, I know I have no reason to rush. An hour later Soso walked in with his squad. His brothers' kids were also with him so imagine all that chaos. He walked into the kitchen, held me from the back and nibbled on my neck

Me: ai mahn Soso

Soso: Avery and Lonke are here.

Me: why?

Him: Mike is still in EL and Pali has a meeting so she asked me to fetched them as well

I made extra sandwiches then placed the food on the dining table and they ate there while Soso followed me upstairs, I changed into sneakers, fixed my makeup then puffed my perfume. All this time he is staring at me from the comfort of our bed

Him: uyaphi na baby

Me: the hospital. Noma is in labor

Him: finally. Wasn't she supposed to give birth last month already?

Me: yeah but the baby was bridged. You and your soccer team better not break anything in my house. Take them upstairs to the courts and have them play there since its cold outside.

I opened my walk-in closet, pulled out a knee length caramel coat and wore it then kissed my husband goodbye. I made my way to the nursery, kissed my babies then headed for the door but I was stopped by Qhawe's voice

Q: you look beautiful mama

Me: thank you my prince. Bye guys and please be good for daddy. All of you

I blew them a kiss then walked out the door and got in my car and drove to the hospital. After being at the hospital the whole night, Noma finally gave birth to a healthy baby girl.

Me: she looks like Asemahle yaz

Enzo: you are crazy buddy, she looks like me.

Me: lol oho. How are you feeling chomi?

Nomz: exhausted. Totally exhausted

Me: lol I thought as much. So, what's her name?

Enzo: Thandoluhle Liyana

Me: lol Liyana kaNomalanga. Lol poor child

Nomz: lol the sun gives birth to the rain

Our little moment was interrupted by a call reminding me that I am a mom to a nation of kids

Me: my lovies I will check on you guys tomorrow. My squad needs me

I hugged Enzo and Nomz then kissed baby Oluhle

Enzo: thanks for coming buddy

Me: aibo this is my first Godchild so I had to be here. Noma, my love welcome to motherhood. You will love it

She flashed me a smile and I left.

Two weeks later, Pali, Sedi, Lolz and I put together a baby launch for Nomz and Pali's new house. Her and Mike finally moved out of KwaSmith. We had the decor set up and a presents table. Everything was pink and white and looked totally adorable. Enzo walked in with Noma and their daughter and my poor friend was in tears when she saw what we had put together for her

*

*

Soso

Us men were also invited to the baby launch and honestly, I thought it was a waste of money but we all know how much women like spending money, in the name of celebrating. So, I was sitting with the guys, my brothers, Lwa's brothers and Enzo and his brother when itopic kaZiya somehow came up.

Jay: I saw her at the hospital a few days back. She looked really bad yaz

Mike: hospital? Must be iZ3. Definitely phela we know how she was rolling a few years back

I kept to myself and took a huge gulp of my beer and scrolled through my phone

Jay: nah bruh she was coming from chemotherapy. I didn't talk to her though, just greeted and passed. Soso have you spoken to her lately?

I pretended not to hear him and just continued with my phone

Mike: hey, kwedin subamuncu ngoku

I lifted my head and looked at Mike since he was basically shaking my shoulder

Me: yinton?

Jay: ndithetha nawe. Wamgqibela nini uZiya?

Me: yho andaz bruh. Why?

Mike: uyasicker ntwana

Me: oh

I got up to go check on my wife who was getting pedicures with the rest of her friends. I kissed her cheek then pulled a chair closer to her

Me: uright mamakhe?

Her: yebo yes baby. You should check on the kids

Me: I will but I'm stepping out for an hour.

She gave me a questioning look but I silenced it with a peck on the lips

Me: we will talk when I come back

Her: OK tatakhe. Ngyakthanda

Me: uthandwa ndim my rib

I got up and headed for the gate. When I got in my car, I sat there for a while, contemplating the decision I was about to take but I have to see her. While I sat in the car, I dialed Aphile's number and she answered on the third ring

AP: my long-lost friend

Me: hey AP. Kunjani?

My voice was low and I didn't have any energy to beat around the bush

Her: ok, who died?

Me: no one. Listen, are you at work?

Her: yeah why?

Me: I need a favor

I trust Aphile, I'd rather do things this way then to lie to Lwa and have it come back to bite me

Me: there is a patient I need you to track down for me, please find her file and make copies for me

Her: what? Soso I could lose my job

Me: that's if you get caught. Ndyakcela chomam, I really need this

She sighed then silence followed but I soon broke it

Me: Aphile please

Her: OK, what's her name?

Me: Ziyamthanda Phakathi. She is at oncology

She agreed then we hung up. I stayed in the car for a while just thinking about her son. Who will he be left with if anything happened to his mother? Khona uphi utatakhe? Men who don't take responsibility for their kids piss me off because women are forced to play their role and its not easy when it comes to male kids. After 30mins, AP texted me that she had the file and that I must come pick it up at the hospital. I drove there as fast as I could then parked outside and texted her. Waphuma after a little while then gave me an envelope

Me: thanks a lot, my friend. I owe you

Her: yeah yeah, leave before you get me fired

I put the envelope in the cabin holder then drove back to the baby launch. Ukufika kwethu endlini, my mood was already off nje and I'm sure Lwa noticed but didn't say anything

Me: babe I'm gonna be in the study. I have a lot of work to catch up on

Her: hmmm

Me: yiza ndiphuze

I pulled her to me and kissed then stared at her. She looked away shyly but I brought her face back to face me with my fingers

Me: don't sleep until I come up.

Her: OK

I went to the car, grabbed work things together with the envelope I got from AP then went to my study. I caught up on half the work I was behind on then reached for the envelope with ifile kaZiya. I slowly opened it then laid out all the pages on my desk then thoroughly read through all of them. Ziya has stage 4 liver cancer. The cancer

was hereditary so they had to check her son as well so his file was there as well. Shaun Khanya Phakathi, born May 10 5years ago. The father's information wasn't filled in. I continued reading and that's where I came across a statement that left me shocked and defeated. She basically has 2 weeks to live.

Season 3

Insert 60

Ziya

I was disturbed from my sleep by the nurses having a conversation that was a little too loud for my comfort. It was lunch time so they were bringing my lunch and my pills. I sat up, supported my back using 2 pillows

Nurse1: how are you feeling today?

She placed the not so appetizing food before me and honestly, I wasn't hungry but I couldn't take my medication without eating and its not like I even liked the so-called medication. It made me feel sicker and weaker and the chemo was making my hair fall off, not to mention the hole I have on the side of my stomach that the chemo tube went in. I was a mess and I was done being in denial about it. I ate slowly but I couldn't finish my food then I took my many pills

Nurse2: should we bring you your son?

Me: yes please

My eyes beamed with happiness, that's one person that can turn any gloomy day into a ray of sunshine. My son is my reason for holding on and fighting this cancer each and every day. The day I found out I was pregnant with him was one of the scariest days of my life because firstly, I was on the pill, secondly, I am not mother material and I knew I was going to have to raise him on my own because I knew his father would never accept him. He'd accuse me of trying to trap him or say I fell pregnant on purpose. When Shaun was born, there were a few unexplainable complications which led to my whole body shutting down, it was then that the doctor discovered my cancer. I was told that I wouldn't live long enough to see my son's second birthday but I fought to prove that statistic wrong and I succeeded because a week ago I was with my son when he turned 5years old, even though we celebrated in the hospital, I was still grateful. My son came rushing in through the door and jumped on the bed. He is a mirror image of his father, the golden-brown eyes, the pink pouted lips and the way he acts. He is a shy yet playful child.

Me: hey baby. Give mommy a kiss

He pecked my lips then wrapped his arms around my neck to give me a little hug which ended with him resting his head on my shoulder. I wrapped my one arm around his little body and gave him a squeeze

Shaun: mommy

Me: yes baby

Him: when are we going home? I miss my room

I am all Shaun has so when I got admitted to hospital, he came with me and he sleeps in the doctor's rooms and eats at the cafeteria. I pay for his meals but the bed is charged to the medical aid

Me: soon baby. When mommy gets better, we will go home. I promise

Him: what if you don't get better mommy? Will I go home alone?

I didn't respond but instead I kissed his forehead then pulled him closer. We spent the rest of the afternoon just bonding and talking nonsense until he fell asleep. It broke my heart just to think about what would happen to him when I'm gone because reality is that I'm losing this fight. Truth be told is that I'm terrified, I'm scared of dying and leaving my son to live in the system with the hope that someone good will adopt him. I kissed my little boy before the nurse took him away. I took out my phone from the cupboard next to my bed and dialed a number that I had promised myself I'd never call again. The phone rang twice before I dropped it and switched my phone off. This is a mistake, we don't need him, we've been fine on our own for 5 years. There is no space in his life for my son and the way his wife hates me, she would definitely take it out on my son and I can never allow that. During the evening visiting hours, I was visited by a social worker and honestly this visit was long overdue. She walked in dressed in what looked like her regular work outfit, it was evident that she wished she could be anywhere apart from this hospital, or rather this particular room. She flashed me a weak, tired smile as she moved closer to the chair that was next to my bed

Her: evening Ziyamthanda

I gave her a fake smile as I slowly reached for the remote to turn down the volume of the TV that I was watching before she graced me with her presence. After quite a

few seconds, almost a minute, I reached the remote and turned down the volume until it was barely audible then I sat up

Me: please call me Ziya

Again, she flashed me that tired smile of hers as she pulled out a file from her bag. She roughly paged through it, probably searching for the reason that has brought her here. She found her page and sighed, making sure not to be too loud

Her: I'm Thoko, the social worker that has been assigned to your case

I chuckled lightly because I didn't even know I had a case or even a file

Her: it says here that you have a four-year-old son

Me: five

She looked up from her file giving me a puzzled look, as if seeking an answer to a question she hasn't asked yet and I wasn't going to answer something I haven't been asked

Her: askies?

Me: five. My son is 5years old

Her: oh, my apologies, it must be an error on our part

Me: clearly

Her: uhm OK so where is your son now? Who is he staying with while you are here

Me: he is staying with me

That wasn't a lie, Shaun was currently staying with me here at the hospital. This lady wasn't liking my attitude one bit but it wasn't like I cared. I know social workers only show up to take our kids from us because we supposedly don't know how to take care of them all of a sudden

Her: jonga ntombazane, andizile apha for ukuqhelwa kakubi. Ndizonceda wena apha so please co-operate so we can get through this quickly

Me: tshin andilufuni uncedo lwakho. Mna nomntanam sikahle. I provide food and shelter for him and he gets to see me everyday so when and if I'll need your help, I will call you. Undishiyele inumber yakho ausi Thoko

Her: ndizawube ndi apho ngomso so you better have the answers I require while ndisakucela kakuhle

She then roughly shoved her file into her fake LV bag then took it waphuma. I clicked my tongue as she walked out. Undiqhela kakubi lomama. Ufuna ukuthatha umntanam agqibe athi unceda mna, uve besithi ndifuna uncedwa nguye mna. Mxm.

Anyway, days went by and I felt so defeated when the doctor alerted me that I had 2weeks to live, that the cancer had spread to my spleen and large intestines. When he gave me those news, I didn't even want to see Shaun that day, what could I do for my son when I can't even do anything for myself? I avoided Shaun for 3 days and the nurses kept reporting to me that he was crying for me all the time, asking them if I've gone to heaven and left him. I was getting worse and I didn't want him seeing me like this. I was basically left with just my bones; the cancer was eating me from the inside out.

That evening I got a visit from someone I had least expected to visit me. He walked in through the door but chose to just stand against the door with his hands in his pockets, looking ever so sexy in black skinny fit pants, a navy shirt that had the first button undone, his scruffy fade complimented his look so much. Looking at him right now, no one could blame me for craving him so much back in the day. Everything about him screamed "I can rock your world". We locked eyes for quite sometime, not saying anything but just looking into each other's eyes. I suddenly felt embarrassed of how I looked compared to how he looked which led to me moving my eyes away from him. All my hair was gone, my bones were sticking out and my eyes had dark marks around them. My heart beat quickened and it was as if the air was getting thinner because I suddenly found it so hard to breathe. His cologne had filled my room instantly from the moment he walked in.

Me: what are you doing here? How did you even find me?

He ran his hand roughly through his hair then started chewing the inside of his cheek as he slowly walked towards me. He pulled the chair back then dropped on it and again our eyes locked

Soso: how are you feeling?

Me: I've been better. What are you doing here Lwandiso?

Before he had a chance to respond, the nurse walked in with Shaun who immediately let go of her hand the moment he saw me and ran towards my bed. I shot the nurse an evil look

Nurse: he has been crying all day, I had to bring him. I'm sorry

Shaun climbed on my bed and sat next to me. His eyes were red and puffy and he had dried tears on his cheeks.

Shaun: I missed you mommy. They wouldn't let me see you.

Me: I missed you too baby

Shaun: kiss mommy?

I pouted my dry cracky my lips and he moved closer to peck them. He didn't care how I looked, he loved me regardless and during this whole time Soso just stared at us without uttering a single word. At that very moment I wish I could read his mind because the look on his face told a thousand stories. Shaun leaned closer to my ear and whispered to me

Shaun: who's this mommy?

Me: my friend

Shaun: your friend? I don't know him

I kissed his cheek and tickled him a little

Me: Lwandiso please get my iPad from the cupboard

He looked like his mind was miles away so I had to call out his name to get his attention

Soso: hmmm

Me: please take out my iPad from the cupboard

He got up, took it out then gave it to me and I switched it on, opened a game then gave it to Shaun

Me: go sit over there, baby and play

He nodded then got off the bed

Me: Soso, why are you here?

Soso: Shaun

I frowned my eyebrows and gave him an intense look. Why would my son be the reason behind his visit?

Me: Shaun?

Shaun: yes mommy?

I called out his name just a little too loud so he thought I was calling him. I blew him a kiss and he caught it then placed his hand over his heart just like how I had taught him

Soso: I've been doing a couple of calculations. Shaun was born in May and you and I fucked in August the previous year. He is mine, isn't he?

Season 3

Insert 61

Soso

Ever since I saw Shaun's date of birth, I knew he was mine but how was that even possible? Yes, Ziya and I did have sex 9months before Shaun was born but I never came inside her. I remember that the round ended with a blowjob and I came in her mouth so that can't be my kid, right? I mean I doubt I'm the only guy Ziya slept with that month but there was just something about that little boy that said his mine, he could easily have been Yaya's twin because they look exactly alike. I sat on the chair next to her bed waiting for her to give me the answers I require and a shit load of explanations

Ziya: you are not his father. He doesn't have a father and he doesn't need one

She sounded a bit defensive and protective over her son and being a parent myself, I understood her need to protect her child.

Me: I don't believe you

She gave me that "are you being serious right now" look but I didn't believe her. The connection I felt towards this little boy was on a father and son level. He reminded me of myself when I was young

Me: I want a paternity test. That's the only way I'll be sure that you are telling the truth

She frowned at me and tears started forming in her eyes, I hated that I was bring her pain during this hard time in her life but the last thing I'd ever want is for my son to grow up with strangers and having resentment towards me for not raising him

Ziya: yinton ingxaki yakho Lwandiso? Umfuna nton umntanam? You have your own kids with your wife, leave my son alone

Tears rolled down her cheeks, she was getting upset and I felt bad for her but I wanted answers.

Me: jonga fondin, I'll be back on Friday. I need to know if he is my son or not. You better have my answers

She turned the opposite direction and covered her head with the bed covers. I got up from the chair and went to kneel in front of Shaun. He lifted his head and stared at me with his big golden-brown eyes

Me: hey boy

Shaun: hello

Me: unjani?

Him: huh

He looked at me with a confused look. Lomntan akasthethi ixhosa

Me: weZiya umntanam akasthethi isxhosa?

Those words slipped out of my mouth before I had a chance to think about it

Ziya: goodbye Lwandiso. Take Shaun with you please and leave him with Nurse Aphile. She will take him to bed

Me: Ziyamthanda you are cruel, ulalilsa umntana apha? Yeses uyadika mahn. How can you be so selfish? He is just a little boy, he doesn't deserve this.

I was pissed beyond words; how could she do this to a child? Who does that?

Me: let's go boy. Mommy needs to rest and so do you

Shaun: will you tuck me in? And read me a story. Please mommy's friend

I smiled at him as he bats his eyelashes, he really is a cute little man. If I didn't have a wife at home waiting for me, I'd spend the night with him or even take him home but I can't. I picked him up then took him to his mother, he kissed her cheek then pecked her lips

Shaun: night mommy

Ziya: goodnight baby. Lwandiso ungandebeli umntana. Please

I cocked my eyebrows then walked out with Shaun in my arms. I found AP and she showed me where Shaun sleeps.

AP: dude this kid is your photocopy, are you related?

I looked at her then chuckled softly.

Me: I don't know. I need another favor my friend

AP helped Shaun into his pyjamas then helped him get in bed, totally ignoring me

Me: Aphile

She looked at me then shook her head

AP: how could you do this to Lwa? Lwa is a good woman, she loves you and this is what you do? Does she know about him?

Me: I don't even know about him, that's the favor I want from you. I need you to do a paternity test. Please AP, you can't tell Lwa. Her and I are still trying to get back on track.

AP is a feminist through and through so when it comes to these cheating things, she goes crazy because according to her, no woman deserves to be cheated on.

AP: and if he is yours? What will you do? His mother is all he has and the social worker wants to put him in the system so he has a great chance of being adopted

Me: chomam I will cross that bridge if and when I get to it. So, the test? Uzondenzela andithi?

She nodded then walked out to get the kit, I think. Ndathatha i'iPad kuShaun and found an app with storybooks. I let him pick the story he wanted and I read it to him. AP returned as I was getting halfway

AP: sit up Shaun

Shaun sat up and she inserted the ear bud looking thing in his mouth then swapped it around his cheek then took another one and did the same process kum. When she was done, she left us and I continued reading until the little man fell asleep. I stared at him for a while then walked out and drove home. I checked the time and it was already half 9 and I immediately knew I would be in trouble when I got home because I didn't tell Lwa I'd be home late. I parked my car in the garage then walked into the house where I found Lwa watching TV while feeding Kwando, I placed my bag on the couch then walked towards her, kissed her cheek then planted a kiss on my baby girl

Me: hey babe

Lwa: hey tatakhe. How was your day?

Me: way too long. I'm sorry I'm late

Her: its OK. Should I dish up for you?

Me: yes please. Where are the other kids? Uphi uboy boy kaTatakhe?

Lwa hated the boy boy name but I use it just as a way yokumngena and make her smile. She looked at me with an unimpressed look but ended up smiling. This woman is everything I could ever want and need in a wife, she is strong; has a good heart, humble, respectful and absolutely gorgeous

Her: don't call my son that. He is in the nursery sleeping. Uyamaz umntanakho and sleeping ke. Mina, hold her so I can dish up for you

I took my baby girl, burped her and then placed her on my chest. She always falls asleep xa ndimbeke apha. After eating, I took a long shower just thinking about the night I've had, I couldn't get Shaun out of my mind. I felt like such a shitty person for leaving him at the hospital but what else could I do? My thoughts were interrupted by the door opening

Lwa: you've been in there for way too long, come to bed

Me: I'll be there in a minute sthandwa sam

She walked out and soon after I joined her in bed, she had her head on my chest and I had my arm around her, we were both quiet, just in our own little world

Her: my love

Me: yes baby

Her: are we OK?

I didn't answer, I wanted to tell her about Shaun but what do I say? I don't even know if he is mine for sure and if he is mine, will she ever forgive me?

Me: babe you remember the day we got married? Remember what you said as your vows?

Her: yes. I said no matter how tough it gets, I'll never leave your side. Is everything OK?

Me: nah baby everything is fine. I'm just thinking nje. That's all

Her: OK tatakhe. Aslale

I kissed her forehead and closed my eyes. I wasn't about to fall asleep anytime soon so ndanqenqa and just got lost in my thoughts. I've never been this terrified in my life, I'm nothing without my wife and my children. Lwa is my rib, my heart and my soul. I'm empty without her. I don't know when and how but eventually I fell asleep. Two days later, I received a call from AP telling me that I need to rush to the hospital, mind you it was 23:00. I got up from the bed, instantly waking Lwa up

Lwa: uyaphi?

Me: go back to sleep babe, I'll be back later

She sat up on the bed, rubbed her eyes and pulled my arm. I turned around and looked at her

Me: baby I have to go.

Her: well I'm coming with you

Me: Lwa awuzokwaz. I'll explain everything when I get back, just please let me go. I wouldn't leave if it wasn't an emergency

She nodded slowly then let go of me. I put on my sweatpants and sweater then wore my sneakers, grabbed my car keys and my phone

Her: Lwandiso

I was almost at the door when she called out my name so I stopped in my tracks and turned around, she was genuinely concerned which broke my heart because it already felt like I was hurting her

Me: mamakhe

Her: come give me a kiss

Me: babe I'm rushing here

Her: please

I literally ran to her side, kissed her slowly then pulled out and pecked her lips.

Me: I love you and please go back to sleep. Okay?

Her: I can't sleep without you by my side

Me: I'll be back

I left, drove as fast as I could to the hospital, AP was already at the reception

Me: what's going on?

AP: uZiya is asking for you. It doesn't look good chomam

Me: uphi uShaun?

Her: ulele

Me: OK

I left AP ndaya pha eroomini kaZiya, she looked so weak, 10times weaker than the last time I saw her. I stood by her bedside, wavula amehlo and smiled kancinci when she saw me

Ziya: tha...thanks fo...for co... coming

Me: it sounded urgent. What's going on?

Her: I do...don't thi...think I'll still be here ngomso so I have to tell you the truth

She was breathing heavily, talking sounded painful to her and it looked like it was taking up a lot of her energy. She then took out three letters from under her bed covers and gave them to me. One was addressed to me, one addressed to Lwa and another addressed to Shaun. As I looked at the three envelopes, asking myself what could be written in them, I heard a loud gasp which made me lift my eyes from the envelopes to the other person I was with in the room but ebesethule, her eyes closed and her lips slighted parted. The machine flatlined. She was gone

Season 3

Insert 62

Soso

I didn't know what to do, I've never had a person die in front of my eyes, it was a painful thing to experience which left me dumbstruck. I stood in the same position until AP walked in with a doctor, I don't know how they knew Ziya was gone but I was told to leave the room. I sat in the waiting area with my head in my hands, I wanted to cry but I just couldn't bring myself to it. As much as we weren't close anymore, she was a friend once upon a time so I felt some sort of pain due to her passing. A while later, Aphile joined me

AP: Soso

I lifted my head from my hands and looked at her, she looked sad as well, that's the kind of person Ziya was. She'd crawl in your heart without you even realizing it

AP: you dropped these and these are the results of the tests I took the other day

She was handing me the letters Ziya had given me, I must have dropped them as I walked out of her room, she also had an A4 white envelope

Me: what are the results? Is he mine?

Her: I don't know, you have to open them yourself

Me: fondin vula lonto undixelele ukuba ithini

I wasn't even looking at her, I had my eyes fixed on the tiles on the floor, on just one specific square, I didn't want to let my eyes wonder around too much. I heard the shuffling of paper as she opened the envelope and took out the piece of paper. What worried me is the silence that followed

Me: and?

Her: it says Shaun Khanya Phakathi is a 99.999% match to Lwandiso Shaun Smith. He is yours. Without a doubt

I quickly lifted my head and leaned back on the chair and let out a loud sigh, I was screwed. Totally screwed

Me: but how? I mean I never came inside her. AP explain please. There must be a mistake

Her: so wawunxibe icondom?

I shook my head

Me: let's just say I pulled out, I don't want to bore you with the details

Her: it must have been the precum. Sometimes there are sperms in the precum

Fuck it. So, what's the point of pulling out? I had to think fast, I can't let my son spend another night sleeping in a hospital.

Me: AP ndicela umntanam. I'm taking him home

She looked at me with a surprised look, what did she expect me to do? Ndimshiye apha umntanam?

Me: what?

Her: and Lwa? Uzawuthini kuye?

Me: fondin zisa umntanam

She got up and disappeared in to the hallways of the hospital, I used that moment to call Lwa. I dialed her number and she picked up instantly. I was expecting her to be fast asleep

Lwa: baby

Me: awulalanga?

Her: I told you I can't sleep without you by my side

Me: I'm going to drive home soon, we need to talk when I get home. Please prepare a room for me

Her: a room? What's going on?

Me: we will talk xa ndifika apho

Her: alright

Me: maHadebe

Her: tatakhe

Me: ndyakthanda sthandwa sam and I'm sorry

I didn't wait for a response, I just hung up when I saw AP carrying my son and his bag. He was fast asleep so I took him and we went to the car, ndamfaka ebackseat, took his bag ndayfaka nayo then closed the door

AP: you OK?

Me: I'll be fine. Thanks for everything Aphile. You are a true friend

AP: anytime chomam

We shared a long hug then I let go of her and held her hands with my head hanging low

Her: I'm sorry for your loss

I nodded then let go of her and got in the car and drove home. The moment I unlocked the front door, Lwa run towards me but immediately stopped when she saw Shaun in my arms and a bag hanging from my shoulder. She looked at me with questioning eyes but she knew better than to start shouting in front of umntana

Me: did you prepare the room?

She cleared her throat, attempted speaking but it was like the words refused to come out so instead she nodded. She was confused more than anything else and she was trying her best not to look hurt but I'm one person she can't hide her feelings from

Lwa: mlethe, I'll put him to bed and you can follow with the bag

I frowned my eyebrows, now I was confused. What's happening?

Me: are you sure?

Her: yeah. Woza

She had prepared the room closest to ours, I opened the covers then she gently placed him on the bed then covered him while I placed his bag on the floor. She headed for the door and when she saw ukuba I'm not walking out with her, she stopped

Her: you not coming?

Me: he will be confused and scared when he wakes up in a new place, I'm gonna sleep with him

Her: OK but we still have to talk so can we do that and then you'll come here?

It was almost 2am, I was tired, drained and sleepy but I owed her an explanation, I came home with a kid I didn't tell her about. I followed her to our room and closed the door behind us

She sat on the couch in our room and I sat on the bed. My heart was racing and I had a lump in my throat. I kept my head hanging low until she spoke up

Her: uphamaphi Lwandiso?

Me: uhm bendipha esbhedlela baby. Ndi ke ndafounelwa nguAphile asking me to rush to the hospital.

Her: and the child? What's he doing here and who is he?

That's the one question I didn't want to answer, especially not right now. It's the middle of the night and knowing my wife, she was going to kick me out

Her: Lwandiso I asked you a question. Who is that child?

Me: uhm igama lakhe nguShaun. Shaun Khanya Phakathi

Her eyes widened. She knew whose child he is just by hearing the surname

Her: ingane kaZiya? Lwandiso I don't understand. You were called to the hospital by uAphile then you come home nengane kaZiya. I'm confused

Me: thing is baby, uZiya was in hospital. She had liver cancer

Her: had?

Me: ewe uswelekile a few minutes after I got to the hospital

She covered her mouth with her hand and gasped loudly. Immediately sorrow and pity took over her emotions and face.

Her: aw shame. May she rest in peace. Poor boy. I understand then sthandwa sam why you brought the boy home. So how long is he staying?

Me: uhm mamakhe can I answer the rest of your questions ksasa? I'm exhausted and I still have work in the morning

Her: OK my love. Please stay with me until I fall asleep then uhambe uye kuye uboy

Me: alright. Yiza apha kalok baby

We got in bed, she laid on her side and I held her from the back with my hand resting on her stomach and hers over mine

Her: wow I can't believe Ziya is really gone. Life is too short and she was so young. She was barely even 30years old

Me: shhh baby lala kalok. Sizawthetha ksasa

When I heard her breathing changing, I knew she was asleep so I quietly left the bed and went to the room Shaun was sleeping in and I fell asleep the moment my head hit the pillow.

In the morning Shaun woke up as I got out the shower, he looked scared and confused. He was looking around, surveying the room

Me: morning big boy

Shaun: good morning

He was rubbing his eyes and scratching his afro. I don't even understand why Ziya kept the child's hair so long, he is a boy after all

Me: how did you sleep? Did you sleep OK?

He nodded. I wanted to tell him that his mother is no more but how would I phrase it in such a way that he would understand?

Me: come, I want to introduce you to someone

I took his hand and we walked to my bedroom where I found my wife laying out my clothes on the bed.

Me: morning babe

I pecked her lips and Shaun just looked at us. He was hiding behind my leg, occasionally peaking his head on the side of my leg

Lwa: good morning Shaun

Shaun: hello

Me: boy this is my wife. The other kids call her mama so if you are comfortable with that, you can also call her that. Would you like that?

He nodded then Lwa picked him up

Lwa: I'm going to get him breakfast and introduce him to the kids, wena get dressed

Me: OK my love and baby?

Lwa: yeah

Me: enkosi.

Her: we still not done talking, I know you are hiding something

I smiled and reached for my navy chinos that were neatly laid out on the bed

Season 3

Insert 63

Lwa

The kind of connection Lwandiso and I have is one of a kind, I can sense it when he is stressed, sad or angry and even though my husband is good at hiding his emotions to the rest of the world, he fails miserably at doing it kimi. Something happened at the hospital last night, something with regards to Ziya and this little boy. As much as ngangingamthandi uZiya, she was a bitch that slept with my husband but her son isn't her. I would never let a child pay for izono zomzali wakhe. I liked ingane kaZiya, he wasn't fussy or maybe it was because wayengakajwayeli ukuhlala lana. I carried him downstairs where the kids were having breakfast and making a noise as usual.

Me: I wonder imuphi umlomo odlaya ngoba nikhuluma kangaka nje

Yaya: mama

She smiled when I saw her while her brothers acted like they didn't see me. These kids kodwa

Me: morning guys

Them: morning

Me: I want to introduce you to someone. This is Shaun. He is going to be staying with us for a while. Shaun this is Loyiso, Qhawe, Alwande, Limile and Yandisa

I was pointing at the individual person as I called out their names. My kids are welcoming people so I knew Shaun wouldn't be an outcast. I poured him cereal then sat him in front of the TV

Me: if you need anything else, just come to me OK?

Shaun: OK mama

The way he said mama sounded strange, it was clear that it's not a word he is used to saying. I went back to the kitchen to dish up for Lwandiso. Sno and MaRose were most probably in the nursery with the twins

Yaya: mama

Me: yes baby

Yaya: doesn't Shaun go to school?

Me: I don't know baby. You are going to have to ask daddy

Soso: the answer is yes, my princess, whatever you want that mommy says you must ask from daddy, the answer is yes.

He walked into the kitchen looking handsome in his navy chinos and checked navy and white shirt. There wasn't space for him by the counter because there were only 5 chairs so he just stood between Qhawe and Alwande

Soso: morning guys

Yaya: morning daddy. Daddy doesn't Shaun go to school?

Soso: he will go next week. To your school

So, this child will still be here next week, I wanted to say something but I chose to bite my tongue. I dished up his breakfast, poured him a glass of orange juice then placed everything on a tray and took it to the dining area and he followed after me

Soso: MaHadebe

Me: Smith

Him: I'll come check on you guys at lunch time, sizawuyigqibela ngoko leyancoko

Me: alright

I left him and went to dish up for myself then Sno came out of the nursery carrying Kwandile. These kids were growing too fast, they were almost two months old since we were now at the end of May. I took my son and smothered him with kisses

Me: hello big boy kaMama. Hello papa

Sno: I bathed him already but he hasn't eaten yet

Me: its fine, I'll feed him. Yenziwe vele incence angithi?

Sno: yebo sisi

She took the car keys eEvoque while the kids went to get their school bags and rushed back into the kitchen. They kissed me one by one then said their goodbyes

Yaya: bye Shaun

I saw Shaun waving goodbye to her then continued eating. I took Kwandile's bottle and went to sit in the lounge, I switched the TV on then switched to Disney because ngangihleli nengane but also because I love cartoons in the morning as well, they just have a way of relaxing the mind and getting me in touch with my inner child.

Soso walked into the lounge, took his bag then wahambisa ibowl ekade idlela uShaun to the kitchen waphinde wabuya

Soso: I'm leaving babe. See you at lunch time

We shared a short kiss then he kissed his son and said bye to Shaun who was more focused on the TV than anything else

Shaun: mama who is this?

He was pointing at Kwandile who was now on my shoulder because I was burping him

Me: this is my baby. His name Kwandi

Him: OK. Are you going to take me to see my mommy today? Are we going to go when mommy's friend comes back?

It took me a while to piece together that this "mommy's friend" is my husband which means Shaun and Soso know each other, it wasn't a coincidence that Aphile called him when Ziya was to die and it was definitely not a coincidence that Soso came home with this child. Maybe him and Ziya made an agreement that Soso was going to raise Shaun for her when she is gone but why would she pick Soso out of all people and why would she give her child my husband's second name? This whole thing was just one big mess with more question than answers.

Me: we will see boy

After my son fell asleep, I took him to the nursery where I found MaRose cleaning while Kwando slept in her cot

Me: morning ma

MaRose: morning sana lwam. Uselele ubhabha?

Me: yebo. Ubesedlile usisters lo olele

I placed Kwandi in his cot as well and covered him with a blanket. It was quite cold since its winter now

Her: I fed her before she slept

Me: uhm ma kukhona uboy osivakashela laykhaya. He is Yaya's age kodwa he doesn't go to school okwamanje. Ingane yechomi kaSoso that recently passed away

Her: aw shame man. Its not a problem sisi.

I took Shaun upstairs to give him a bath. I filled the bath tub quarterly then poured some of Limile's bubble bath. I undressed him and put him in. I let him play for a bit while I checked his bag for clothes but they were all dirty, including his underwears. I wonder ukuthi ibihlala nobani futhi ibihlala kuphi lengane while uZiya was in hospital. I left him and went to fetch clothes from Limile's room so when I was done bathing him, I dressed him in grey sweat pants, socks and a long-sleeved green T-shirt then I combed his hair and took him downstairs to MaRose

Me: boy this is gogo

Shaun: hello gogo

MaRose gave him a smile then picked him up and placed him on the kitchen counter then I left them ngayogeza. Before I knew it, it was lunch time and my husband walked into my room, I was laying on the bed with the twins. Neither of us were asleep, just bonding and relaxing

Soso: uphi uShaun?

Me: he is napping

He walked towards the bed, wasusa amawele and placed them in their portable cots that were in our room then got in bed next to me

Him: uright?

Me: I should be asking you that question. You are the one that seems offish lately

He sighed as he rested his head on his hands wavala amehlo. He seemed really troubled and I had a feeling whatever the story is ngaye nalengane, it was going to cause some sort of damage to us

Season 3

Insert 64

Soso

It was now or never, I had to tell her. I can't exactly hide a child forever but what made my heart race and my body shake is how Lwa was going to take this. I slowly opened my eyes then sat up on the bed, she mirrored my movements and did the same. She looked scared for some reason, it was as if she knew the words that were going to come out of mouth.

Me: I don't know how to tell you this, I'm scared baby. I don't want to give you reasons to leave me or to break your trust but I also understand that the longer I keep this from you, the harder it will be for you to forgive me, if you will even forgive me

I was now shuffling around the bed, failing to keep still, I had my one hand moving roughly over my hair, roughing it up even more. That was my coping mechanism when I'm under a lot of stress

Lwa: khuluma Lwandiso, usuqala ukungithusa manje

If only she knew what I was going to tell her ngabe she isn't rushing me so much. The thing about loving someone more than they love you is that you live for that person's happiness, when she is happy nawe you become happy and you would destroy anyone that would try to harm her but what happens when you become the main source of her pain? How do you forgive yourself for doing the one thing you promised not just her but also yourself that you'd never do and that's make her cry?

Me: the day of the baby launch I asked AP to make copies of Ziya's file since Jason had mentioned earlier that she was admitted in hospital for cancer. When I went through the file I came across Shaun's file as well and when I saw his date of birth, I realised that he was conceived in August the year Yaya was born. A part of me felt that he could have been conceived when Ziya and I had sex but it couldn't be because I pulled out so I went to see Ziya earlier in the week to confirm my suspicions but she denied it. Wandixelela ukuba andiwuye utatakaShaun but the connection I felt with him didn't want me to believe her, the connection was just too

strong for me to just take her word for it and fuck off so I asked AP to do a paternity test

All this time she just sat there and looked at me without uttering a single word but I could see the tears in her eyes, all that was required was for her to blink nakanye nje and zizaziwela. I wanted to hold her but at the same time ndadoyika irejection phof kalok ndiyamaz umkam xa enomsindo, akandifuni ecelen kwakhe

Me: so last night, Ziya had asked AP ukuba andifounele because she knew she wouldn't make it through the night. Ukufika kwam kuye ude wandinika iincwadi eziyi3. One addressed to me, another addressed to you and the last one is addressed to Shaun. She didn't get a chance to tell me ukuba uShaun ngumntanam but the results from the paternity test did it for her. Baby I promise you I didn't know of his existence until two weeks ago and I only found out last night that he is my son. Ziya was all he had and now I'm all he has

And then it happened, she blinked and the tears rolled down her cheeks, her bottom lip quivered as she took it between her teeth. I moved closer to her but she got off the bed, raised her hand as an indication for me to stay where I was

Me: baby I'm sorry. Lwa I really am sorry. I honestly didn't know baby I promise

Her: so, what if you didn't know Lwandiso? So, what huh? Is that supposed to make it all better? Is that supposed to make it hurt a little less to find out that my husband dumps his sperm in any woman that is willing to open her legs for him? Please just tell me how you not knowing is supposed to change anything and what relevance it has right now

I kept quiet because I didn't know what to say, so many things were running through mind, things I wanted to say in the hope that it would make all of this better but where would I start? I just have to accept that ndimoshile and not seek justifications for my actions

Me: maHadebe just tell me what I need to do to fix this, please. I know right now nothing I do or say will make any of this seem OK to you but sthandwa sam I'm willing to try. I'd move mountains for you Lwa, just for you to forgive me and for us to move forward from this. He is my son baby and you are my wife, I love you both and I can't live without either of you

Her: well you are going to have to because now every time I look at him, I'll be constantly reminded of what a man whore my husband is and that he cheated on me and didn't even bother to protect either of us from his whorish way

As much as I knew that she had every right to be angry but I'm not going to stand here and allow her to disrespect me, walk all over me in the name of anger. I'm not a weakling of a man and I'm not about to start today

Me: haaa ahh Lwandile, you will still show me respect. You might be angry but that doesn't mean you should forget your place. I am still your husband

Her: so, what's your plan? Because ngeke ngihlale nengane kaZiya in my house, I don't care whether he is your son or not but I won't do it because I know you Lwandiso. It will be as if my children and I don't exist anymore. You will spend all your time with this new son of yours because firstly, his mother is dead so you will feel the need to treat him extra special and secondly, because you feel guilty for the 5years of his life that you missed out on

The way she was looking at me made me stop and refrain from responding. If you've seen how someone who loves you often looks at you when you've hurt them, that's the exact look she was giving me. I got up from the bed to get closer to but when she told me to stop, I didn't listen, I wanted her close to me, I wanted her to hit me if she wanted to. I had even forgotten that kukhona abantwana apha eroomini until one of the twins started crying causing me to change direction from going to Lwa to going to the door. I opened the door, called out for Sno and when she got to the door, I let her in. The tension was so thick in the room that it was evident that things were not good between my wife and I at the moment

Me: ndcela ubuthathe sisi

Sno: OK

She took both of them at once, waphuma and I locked the door, I don't know why but something told me to lock it then shifted my attention to the woman I was with. I moved closer to her then enveloped myself around her, she had her arms crossed in front of her chest and the moment her head came in contact with my shirt, she let out loud sobs. I moved her head back and held her chin, she stared at me with so much hurt and mistrust, confirming to me again how much I had messed up. I wanted to

kiss her but I knew she wouldn't let me so instead I wiped her tears with my thumbs but it was as if, I was opening a tap for more tears. After crying for a while, she got out of my embrace and I let her. She went to sit on the couch while I sat on the bed

Her: I'm going to need some space

Me: what?

She must be out of her mind if she thinks I'm going to allow her to be away from me, we are married, you don't get to request space when you are married. Asijoli apha, umtshado lo

Me: andizokwaz baby. Let's just talk about it. I can't let you leave me. Not over lento Lwandile. Andizokwaz nyan

Her: I need to think Lwandiso. Iningi lento and iyasinda. We are talking about a child here, your child that isn't mine. I need time to learn to love him and accept him

Me: how will you learn to love him and accept him if you are not around him?

She kept quiet for quite some time and the silence was frustrating me because it wasn't helping either of us

Her: you are going to have to leave then

Me: you are breaking us apart Lwandile

Her: Lwandiso, please OK. I just need time to think without your influences, I need to be on my own for a while. Ngyakcela just give me space

I sighed, again running my hands over my hair. I needed to be around her in order to function normally, I just got her back a few weeks ago and it feels like I'm losing her all over again. I looked at her, I had so much to say to her but she wouldn't give me time ngoba she would take it as though I'm justifying myself

Me: if you break us apart Lwandile ndithini mna? Senditsho ukuba what if while you are taking this space of yours, you meet someone else to replace me, what then?

What am I supposed to do without you?

She raised her eyebrows at me and tilted her head

Her: I have 7, I mean 8. I have 8 kids to take care of, I'm going back to work in July where you are my boss and the whole office knows I'm your wife so where would I find iskhathi sokujola? I'm not going to replace you, I just don't want to be around you right now

She got up from the couch and came close to me and I stood up, taking in everything I loved about this woman, as if creating a mental video to go back to when I miss her which I know will be sooner than I want it to be

She wrapped her arms around my neck, I held her waist then she leaned towards me and placed a long kiss on my lips. She broke it after what felt like a short time. I wanted to tell her she was hurting me but I didn't want to seem too weak or clingy so I kept it to myself. She pulled back, squeezed my hand

Her: I'll leave you to pack so you can leave before the kids get home

She headed for the door but before opening it, she turned around and called my name, I lifted my head which was already hanging low

Her: I love you tatakhe

The way she said it, her tone and the tears in her eyes told me this was it. This was goodbye

Season 3

Insert 65

Lwa

Being hurt by someone you love has to be the worst kind of pain because it changes everything about how you see things, especially how you see yourself. I was hurting more than I was willing to show, I love Lwandiso but a child is too much, worse ke a child that just lost his mother. I'm now expected to look past the fact that he is a product of my husband's adulterous ways. He is a sweet boy, lovable and smart yet so respectful. I've spent less than a day with him and already I can conclude that about him. When I left my husband in our bedroom, I went to check on Shaun who was now awake but just sitting on the bed, I knocked on the already opened door and when he turned around, I flashed him a smile and he smiled back

Me: look who's up. Are you hungry?

Shaun: only for ice cream

I chuckled as I walked in and sat next to him, pulled him towards me and he rested his head on my lap. I played with his hair for a little while as we got to know each other. He was telling me about his favorite color, his favorite cartoons then our little moment was disturbed by my husband who kneeled in front of us. I've seen Soso at his worst and the way he looked now was ten times worse. His eyes were red, he had veins popped out the sides of his head

Soso: hey big boy

Shaun: hello

Soso: listen boy, mama and I have something to tell you

Shaun lifted his head from my lap and sat up. He looked at me then at Soso. Soso got up from the floor and sat next to Shaun who was now sitting between us. I knew what Soso wanted to tell him but I was going to let him handle this. I'll just sit here and not say anything

Soso: you know that a family has a mommy and a daddy right boy?

Shaun nodded. He wasn't much of a talker yaz, just when nodding wouldn't be sufficient, he would say something

Soso: your mommy loves you more than anything in the world. You are everything to her and she never wants you to ever get hurt or feel sad.

Shaun: I love mommy too. Shaun and mommy together forever and ever because mommy loves Shaun

My heart broke for this child, angimaz uSoso usthathaphi isbindi to talk to a child about this, I understand that it has to be done but no child deserves this

Soso: and mommy is so amazing and protective that God wants her to be an angel so she can watch over you all the time. God took mommy to heaven and she is an angel

He looked up at me and I already had tears in my eyes, listening to all this was painful but it was like Shaun wasn't quite sure of what was being said to him. He just looked at me then at Soso

Shaun: my mommy is in heaven now? Am I allowed to visit her? When will she come back?

His voice sounded soft and filled with confusion. He wasn't sad or in pain but he wanted the answers to his questions

Me: sweetie your mommy isn't coming back but she will always be with you when you need her. You know why?

He shook his head, tears were starting to form in his eyes and they were getting glassy

Me: because your mommy will always be here

I was pointing at his chest, where his heart is. He looked at where I had pointed for quite sometime then he started crying so I brought him to my lap and rubbed his back. He cried until he fell asleep, I just laid him kahle on the bed and stared at him for a while then shook my head

Me: he doesn't deserve this and I don't deserve to have to deal with this mess Soso

He sighed as he got up from the bed. He shifted his gaze between me and his now sleeping son. He ran his hand across his hair, roughing it up

Him: I had to tell him. He deserved to know but ngumntana so he will forget soon. Same way Limile forgot the pain of losing a parent.

Me: so uzomtshela nini that he is your son?

Him: yho andaz Lwa fondin. YiMess yonke lento. Fuck. And me leaving isn't going to make anything easier, instead it will make it even more difficult. I understand that you are hurting, trust me baby I do but he needs me

Me: I'm here, aren't I? I'm not going to ill treat him, I'm a mother as well Lwandiso.

He sighed for the second time in less than five minutes then we both left the room but when I heard the noise downstairs, I knew the squad was back. What worried me the most was that the kids were going to see their father rolling suitcases out the door

Soso: I have to get back to work. I'll come tuck the kids in tonight then leave when they are asleep

I nodded then he kissed my cheek and went down the stairs while I got in our room and locked the door. I was feeling confused, should I even be angry? He told me he slept with Ziya when it happened and I forgave him so how am I supposed to feel? I walked towards the bed but something caught my eye on the headboard table. It was an envelope with my name on it but I just couldn't bring myself to opening it, instead I crawled into bed and dialed Enzo's number

Enzo: buddy bae

Me: hey buddy unjani?

Him: I'll be a lot better if you told me what's wrong

Me: buddy I need you. I know you have your own family now but can you come over

Him: just tell me what's going on? You are getting me worried

Just then there was a knock on the door but I didn't feel like being around anyone. The tiny knocks wouldn't stop

Me: hold on buddy

I walked towards the door, unlocked it and opened it

Me: Yandisa what did you do?

Yaya: auntie Sno says he was sleeping for too long so I woke him up so we can watch TV but Loyiso is playing PlayStation

Me: and the second lounge?

Yaya: Lwande is watching Liv and Maddie

I moved out the way and she walked in holding Shaun's hand then I went back to my phone call

Me: buddy

Him: I'll be there in 10mins. You are not breastfeeding right?

Me: no, I'm not. I'll call Noma and borrow you properly phela you guys are married

He giggled before hanging up then I closed my door and headed back to my bed which was now taken over by Yandisa and Shaun. They were talking about Sofia and how she is a good princess but sometimes she doesn't like sharing her mother with her friends

Me: Shaun did you eat?

He shook his head and so did Yaya when I asked her but I just assumed that Sno was still making them food so I just let them watch their cartoons while I got lost in my thoughts. When Enzo arrived, I told the kids to go eat downstairs then I locked the door. Enzo brought Bar one ice cream which is my favorite, a bottle of my favorite wine and a DVD of princess diaries 1 and 2. That was our heart break starter pack. He inserted the disc into the DVD player while I went to get glasses and spoons in the kitchen. I found MaRose making herself a sandwich

Me: ma please prepare supper tonight

MaRose: anything specific?

Me: uhm no. Its all up to you

Her: OK

As I was walking up the stairs, I remembered that Shaun doesn't have any clean clothes here or any toys, just the iPad that I assume belonged to his mother so I asked Sno to follow me upstairs. I got to my room, took out my bank card and gave it to her

Me: please buy a few outfits for Shaun, nothing formal, just things he can wear while in the house also get him a few toys. Maybe a car set. Oh, and underwear. 5 to 6years old in size

Sno: OK sisi

I gave her the pin and she left then I poured Enzo and I a bit of the wine as the movie started

Enzo: so, what's going on? What did he do?

Me: he has a child buddy. With Ziya out of all whores in the world

I took another sip of the glass of wine then placed the glass on the bedside table

Me: then the bitch wrote me a fucken letter. Imagine nje buddy

Him: hold on. You are skipping things. Soso has a baby with Ziya? How? When?

Me: its not a baby. Its a 5year old child. Remember when I told you that they slept together? Before we got married

He nodded then took a sip of his wine. I, on the other hand was struggling to open the ice cream tub. He placed his glass on the table on his side of the bed and took the tub from me

Me: well that's when the child was conceived. He only found out about him last night when Ziya passed away

Him: so uzokhulisa ingane kaZiya on top of all the other kids you are raising?

Me: ngizothini Enzo? Its his son. Soso is all Shaun has, if I reject his child, I'll lose him.

When the tub was opened. I took two large spoonfuls then went back to drinking my wine

Me: I don't know how to feel, I can't be mad for his cheating all over again. We spoke about it all those years ago and I forgave him. Soso is my everything buddy, we have a family together, we love each other and we need each other but lena yona is just too heavy to take in

Enzo: understandable Lwa but in order to get through all these feelings, you have to think for Lwa and not for Lwa and Lwandiso. Zikhiphe kulementality yomshado and consider what is best for you and your kids. Yes, you forgave him all those years ago but there was no child then so he can't expect you to relax now and just take the child in with open arms. You are human after all and this child resurfaced the feelings you had when he cheated. Sit him down and talk to him. Tell him how you feel and that you can't be forced into raising this child just because nishadile. You already have 7kids that need your love, attention and money. Adding another kid will rob these kids of your full attention and that's what leads to children rebelling.

I sat there in silence, just taking in everything Enzo was saying and honestly, I wasn't agreeing with yonke lento. When you marry someone, you are told that you become one, there is no longer an I but a WE in everything that happens so nje Enzo was adding more confusion nje. When I reached for my glass, I decided to take the letter instead. I read the words written on the outside, Mrs Lwandile Smith then slowly opened it

Enzo: you better read it out loud because nami ngfuna ukuzwa

Me: lol uzozifundela

I took out the letter and threw the envelope on the floor then unfolded the white piece of paper and scanned my eyes through the paper, luckily it wasn't long. I hate reading long things especially when I'm not sober

Season 3

Insert 66

Lwa

Dear Lwa

I never thought a day like this would come, a day whereby I'd be sitting here writing a letter addressed to you but if there is anything that life has taught me in the last 5 years is that it has a way of humbling us all, a way of reminding us that we are not in control and that there is a higher being to all of us. Firstly, I'd like to apologize to you, I know I should have done it years ago but at that time I didn't see myself as being in the wrong but now I know I was. Sleeping with your fiance was wrong, it was a tacky move and he was in a bad space and as a woman that knows he is taken, I should have turned him away but this letter isn't about Lwandiso but about my son, Shaun. Shaun is all I have and I am all he has. I was never intending on him having Soso in his life but due to my condition, I don't have a choice but to let him know his father which could mean that he will also know you. Accepting a child conceived in adultery can't be easy and I can't blame you if you can't accept him but please raise him for me, wena noLwandiso. I have money saved up for him that should be enough until he is in high school so he won't be much of a burden on you financially. Lwa, I love my son more than anything and I'd never want him to be hurt. I know I'm asking for a lot from you but I'm desperate. When I've passed on I'd like for you to adopt him as your own, have his surname changed to Smith and I know as time goes by he will forget me. I know I'm in no position to ask anything from you but I'm begging you. Thank you in advance Lwa, I really appreciate it all

Ziya

Alcohol will make you feel emotions you'd never thought you'd feel towards a person. By the time I read the last sentence, tears just rolled down my cheeks, she didn't have to ask me to take care of him because she could have assumed that I'd do it ngoba she'd be gone but despite everything she still has the decency to ask me. I'm not heartless and maybe as time goes by, I'll learn to love Shaun as my own. Time

will only tell but I won't stop myself from trying. Enzo snatched the letter from me wazifundela while I watched the movie with my wine in hand and ice cream between us.

Enzo: yho this is deep and sad nje buddy. So, what now?

Me: I can't deny a woman her last wish. I don't want to be cursed Mina

We spent a good 2hours just venting and discussing my problem then around 6 when we were both tipsy, I walked him out

Me: do you want to meet him?

Enzo: next time buddy, I need to get home to my wife and daughter

When he drove off, Soso's car drove in and my heart sank. I sighed and headed for the kitchen and took out an apple from the fridge, rinsed it and sat on the high chairs. Yandisa, Limile and Shaun were sitting in front of the TV talking nonstop which surprised me ngoba I thought Shaun is the shy type. Soso walked in and all the heads turned and Yaya ran to him

Yaya: daddy

He picked her up, kissed her cheek then pecked her lips

Soso: hey princess. How are you?

They walked into the kitchen together then he placed her on the counter and walked towards me, his cologne reached me before he did then he wrapped himself around me and kissed my cheek

Soso: hey Mrs me

I faked smiled and ate my apple in peace. He spoke to his daughter then went to join the boys watching TV. I didn't want to sink into the dark place I was in a few weeks back because getting out of it will take forever. I dished up for everyone and it was when all the plates were on the table that I realised ukuthi sibaningi phela in this house. 11 plates, I didn't dish up for myself because I wanted pizza and zinger wings. Sno and MaRose set the table while I grabbed my car keys eGolf R

Soso: going somewhere?

Me: yeah.

Him: can I come with you? Lwa we have to talk and I know right now you are running away me, from this whole thing

Me: ngyabuya Lwandiso. I was drinking so I want pizza and wings. That's it

He looked at me surprised, most probably at the fact that I was drinking. He grabbed the car keys from my hand then pulled me outside into the garage

Me: I know how to drive myself so please give me back my car keys

Him: get in the car Lwandile

I listened ke nami and got in and he drove us to Romans pizza and we decided to talk while we waited for our order

Him: are you going to leave me?

That question rang in my head for quite some time before I remembered what his mother once said to me, "being a Smith wife isn't for the faint hearted". Lwandiso and I have been through so much together, things that should have easily torn us apart, I've hurt him and he has hurt me but we are grown up now, we have children, responsibilities and its no longer just about us. Now families are involved so I can't just wake up one morning and decide to leave him.

Me: no. Actually, I don't know. Just give me the time I've asked for and we will take it from then

Him: how long is this time? Lwandile you are drinking in the middle of the week. What do you call that?

Me: that's uncalled for. You are acting like I'm drunk. I can handle myself.

Our order number was called and he went to get the box. Angiyaz ukuthi sekungekabani uma isiningi kanje ipizza yakhona. We drove past KFC, got my wings and cold drink then he drove us to the park.

Me: and now?

Him: let's eat. This is most probably the last meal we'll share together as a married couple so I just want to enjoy it

We ate together with an occasional light conversation then when we were done, we chilled in the backseat with my head on his shoulder and his arm around me.

Me: I read Ziya's letter

Him: ibisithini?

Me: nothing much really. Just her apologizing for lento yenu and her asking me to adopt and raise Shaun. Honestly, I don't know what it is about me that just says when people die, they must leave their kids kimi. I'm sure Palesa and Noma will leave their kids to me as well.

He kept quiet for a while and maybe I was out of line but honestly, its too much because all these kids are small, bayalingana bonke. Alwande is 10, the twins are 9, Yaya is 6, Shaun is 5 and Limile is 4. It all gets overwhelming nje at times

Him: baby I know I fucked up but I'm sorry

Me: stop apologizing Lwandiso. Its not getting us anywhere. I get it, you are sorry

*

The rest of month went by and another one passed so it was now July, the month I'm supposed to be going back to work on. Things in my house have been OK I guess. Soso moved back with his parents and even though his parents were against it, telling us that we shouldn't allow the whole world to see us fighting. He comes everyday to see the kids, we didn't tell them much about what's going on but Soso told Shaun he is his father and my relationship with Shaun is a good one. I've grown to love him and its a lot easier now that he doesn't ask about his mother that much. When I got to work, Pali walked in as I settled behind my desk

Pali: you are back early. Weren't you supposed to be back next month

Me: friendship I've been on leave since January. I couldn't take it anymore. I've missed you yaz. How's everything?

Her: oh no you don't. We will catch up during lunch. I have to get back to work

Being back at work meant having to catch up on all the work I've missed plus trying to make it home before the kids go to bed, trust me when I tell you that being a

career mom isn't easy at all. My day at work was hectic so I decided to knock off at 6 so while I was packing up, Soso walked in

Soso: hey

I looked up from the files I was packing into my work bag to be greeted by his smile ngavele ngaweak.

Me: hey, you still here?

Him: yeah. Mike borrowed my car so I was hoping to catch a ride with you. I want to see the kids

Me: alright masambe

I tossed him the keys and he smiled again and looked at me. He knows I never let anyone drive my G-wagon but I was exhausted and iyakhathaza lemoto shame

Him: wow you must be really exhausted to let me drive your car

Me: don't make me change my mind

He took my bag; my heels then held my hand and left the office. Yabona when you get your first boyfriend and you can't stop smiling when you are with him, smiling at everything and nothing with a million butterflies fluttering around your tummy? That was me at that moment. We drove home, just talking about our varsity days, how we met and nje everything good about our relationship. Truth is I forgave him a long time ago but nje he hasn't brought up that he wants to come home so nami I won't say anything. When we got home, his kids all ran to him and only Shaun came to me

Shaun: mama

Me: hello big boy

He didn't look happy at all and I knew it's either Sno refused to give him ice cream or chocolate milk or Yaya did something to him

Me: what's wrong?

Him: Yaya finished my Milo.

Me: why didn't you ask gogo to make you more?

Him: because she finished it all mama. All of it. All the Milo is gone.

Me: askies boy. Don't you want to go say hi to daddy?

He turned around to look where Soso was then shouted

Him: hello daddy

Soso: come here

He shook his head then held my hand as we walked up the stairs. When we got in the room, he got on the bed and switch the TV on. These kids will amaze you I tell you

Shaun: mama let's go buy Milo

Me: I'm tired boy. I'll buy it tomorrow

Him: please mama, tomorrow is far. Please please please

Me: go ask daddy. I'm coming now now

He literally ran out the door, I changed into my gown and slippers then got on the bed, I was too tired for words. I was almost asleep when Soso and his son walked in

Soso: ulele?

Me: hmmm

Him: your son wants his Milo.

Me: go buy it for him Soso please. I'm exhausted

Him: will you give me a kiss?

I threw a pillow at him and Shaun laughed and threw the pillow back

Me: lol just leave already

After they left, I fell asleep and when I woke up, I was so hungry. I checked the time and it was just after 9. I walked downstairs where I found Soso and Yandisa on the couch watching a recorded episode of cartoons so I sent her to bed ngoba it was way past her bedtime.

Season 3

Insert 67

Lwa

I don't even know what Lwandiso was still doing here because he knows the kids go to bed at 8 then he leaves. I took out my plate from the oven then warmed it in the microwave. While I waited, he walked into the kitchen and sat on one of the high chairs

Soso: I'm sorry for keeping her up this late. We lost track of time

Me: hmmm

Him: undiqumbele ngok?

Me: no hawu. That's my way of saying I hear you. No need for me to say I forgive you because I wasn't angry

The microwave made that beeping sound so I took my food out and sat next to him. To be honest I hated that he was still here because I was so horny. I haven't had sex in 6months, I think the last time we had sex was before Nami passed away so nje I was sexually frustrated. I dug into my food while he just stared at me which was annoying nje on its own

Me: what?

He shrugged his shoulders then smiled at me, making sure not to take his eyes off me

Me: mxm

I continued eating, when I was done I rinsed the plate and poured myself a glass of water

Me: shouldn't you be leaving?

Him: I should be but you owe me something

I frowned my eyebrows then folded my arms across my chest

Me: askies?

Him: I bought iMilo kaShaun. The deal was that if I went to buy it, you'd give me a kiss so ndcela ikiss yam maHadebe

Me: lol you are so unnecessary yaz Lwandiso. I don't have time for your games

I placed the glass in the sink, I couldn't switch the lights off ngoba he still had to leave first

Him: lol this is not a game Mrs Me, you owe me and I'm ready to collect

He said this while licking those sexy pink lips of his and I felt my queen tingle kancane. I took my bottom lip between my teeth and stared at his lips, how I wish that those very same lips could be doing the unthinkable between my legs right now

Me: uhm goodnight Lwandiso

As I walked past him, he grabbed my arm and pulled me towards him and smashed his lips onto mine. The kiss was slow and so sexual, the way he gently pulled my bottom lip between his teeth and sucked it made me wet right there and then

Me: hmmm

I found myself moaning when I felt his hard erection pressed against my queen, I was now between his legs ngoba he was still sitting down. We kissed for what felt like forever and during that whole time it felt like the world was spinning and everyone on the planet has fallen off and we were the only people left on earth. He pulled out of the kiss leaving me dizzy and in need for me. I kept my eyes closed until I felt the tip of his tongue gently run across my bottom lip then I slowly opened my eyes. He still had the same smile he had on while he watched me eat

Him: I should get going. Its late

He stood up, adjusted his pants to hide his erection then gave me a tight hug and kissed my forehead. I didn't want him to leave, I wanted him to bury himself in me the whole night and fuck me hard

Him: goodnight MaHadebe, I'll see you at work tomorrow

Me: hmmm. You shall lock up ke because I'm going to bed

Him: alright. I love you my rib

Me: I love you too my heart. Text me when you get home so I know you are safe

He agreed then I walked upstairs to my room and threw myself on the bed and screamed in frustration. I'm so glad this room is soundproof

I turned on the floor heater then got in bed in just my underwear and Soso's T-shirt. His scent was now all over the bed which wasn't helping the state I was in. I turned the TV on, just to help me fall asleep but within a few minutes I found myself with my hand tracing the waistband of my underwear. It was innocent at first but curiosity got the better of me and before I knew it, I had my hand inside my underwear with my fingers slowly rubbing my queen. The feeling was amazing, not as amazing as when Soso does it but it was doing the job. I had my eyes shut, Soso being my muse as I played with myself and as I was close to my orgasm, my phone rang. The ringtone immediately alerted me that it was Lwandiso. I answered without thinking about it

Me: hmmm

I wasn't going to stop when I was so close so I was roughly pumping my fingers in my dripping wet queen

Soso: sleeping already?

Me: huh uh

His voice plus his scent all over the T-shirt I was wearing was turning me on even more

Him: well I'm home safe

Me: aaaah shit

I was on the brink of an orgasm, so close that I couldn't contain the sounds and moans

Him: Lwandile are you OK?

My orgasm hit like a wave of electricity, I had my legs so wide open as I rubbed my clit furiously

Me: ohhh shit. Fuck fuck fuck. Aaaah yes

Just when I was calming down, laughter came from the other end of the line. I had even forgotten that he was still there

Me: mxm uyabhora yaz

Him: lol baby, were you masturbating?

Me: mxm goodnight Lwandiso

Him: lol you better wash your hands before going anywhere near my kids. Hearing you orgasm like that even turned me on though. I'm going to rub one out before going to bed

Me: sies mahn. Too much information

I hung up then got out of bed to wipe myself and wash my hands. When I got back in bed, I had a Whatsapp text from Soso, I opened it and it was a video of him "rubbing one out" as he would put it. I just laughed to myself and placed the phone on the pillow next to me and slept. When I woke the next day I took a shower, wore an olive tight fitting dress that hugs me perfectly, showing off my tiny waist and sexy butt then wore nude heels. I wanted to go for the natural look so I had minimum make up and nude lipstick. I walked downstairs to the usual chaos that happens during breakfast time

Me: morning guys

Them: morning mama

I dished up a fruit salad, poured yogurt and a bit of muesli then went to sit in the dining area and ate while checking my social networks. Soso was going to be taking the older kids to school while I'll be taking the younger three since Sno is on leave. Her child is sick so I let her go home a few days ago. While I was eating my phone rang and it was the office which I found strange because it was way too early for Liz to need anything from me.

Me: hey Liz

Liz: morning Lwa how are you?

Me: I'm good. What's going on?

Her: your 10am meeting has been moved to 8am and its across town

I looked at my watch at it was already 7:15am. I cursed under my breath as I rushed through my breakfast. What frustrated me was the car issue. What usually happens when I have to take the kids to school is that I drive them in the Evoque then come back to take the G-wagon and go to work. I love my G-wagon, it has this thing about it that screams powerful woman and I never let the kids in it, especially these little ones. I dial Soso's number and he immediately answers with a laugh

Me: musa ukuphapha. Listen I need a favor

Soso: haw baby you don't even have to ask, kalok we are still married so this dick belongs to you

Me: sies mahn. That's not what I want

Him: lol sies? That's not what you say when you swallow my lo-

Me: oh gosh stop talking. Its too early in the day for this. My meeting got bumped up and I can't take the kids to school and be back on time to swap cars and make it to my meeting on time. Please take them

Him: no can't do babe. I have a meeting at 8 as well and it's at the office. Just take the Evoque to work and fetch your beast at lunch or after your meeting

I sighed in frustration, not sexual frustration this time around. I was frustrated because I wanted to make a statement with the "beast" kanti if I rock up to a meeting with a bunch of stuck up men in suits driving my "mommy car", I won't make a statement but I will conform to a cliché

Him: or take the Golf R because my babies are not getting in the beast of yours.

Me: mxm whatever

Him: love you

Me: where is the I?

Him: lol you are going to be late and if we lose this client I'm going to fire you

Me: lol you wouldn't dare.

We laughed then I hung up. I placed my bowl in the sink, kissed my two babies that were sitting in their feeding chairs then grabbed my work bag and the keys eGolf

Me: let's go guys. Grab your bags.

We walked out the door after I said bye to the older kids then we drove off to the preschool where I dropped them off

Me: where are my kisses?

Shaun being Shaun ran to me first, I opened the car door then pecked his lips

Me: I love you

Shaun: love you mama

I did the same with Yaya and Limile then rushed to the meeting which I ended up being 5mins late for but we didn't lose the clients. When I got back to the office, I continued with the work I was still behind on. Around lunch time I was summoned to the boss's office and a naughty smile crept onto my face. I started in the bathroom, took my lace panties off then placed them in an envelope I had taken from my office. When I knocked on Soso's door, he told me to come and I found him sitting behind his desk, concentrating hard

Me: you called for me Mr Smith

Soso: lock my door Mrs Smith

He was in boss mode and by the tone of his voice, I knew I was in trouble but what I didn't know was what for. When I walked back towards his desk after I had locked the door, his eyes were no longer on his computer but fixed on me

Him: Mr Khumalo tells me that you were late for your meeting this morning

He pushes his chair back and gets up, shoves his hands in his pockets and walks towards me and for some reason I'm turned on by the way he's carrying himself, he walks like a person in control

Me: traffic was a nightmare in the morning

Him: hmmm well then Mrs Smith I have zero tolerance for staff members being late for meetings so I'm going to have to punish you

I crease my eyebrows in confusion but he keeps his eyes on me

Him: bend over the desk Mrs Smith

Yabona le feeling of excitement mixed with a tad bit of anticipation and fear? The one that gets your blood rushing to every corner of your body? That's what I felt at that moment but I did as I was told then I felt him lift my dress and when it was on my waist, there was a sudden pause of movement until I felt his hand smack my butt. It wasn't too hard or soft, it was just right but I let out a yelp because I wasn't expecting it

Season 3

Insert 68

Lwa

I was trying to stay in character ngoba excitement was all over my body. He spanked me again but this time I didn't make a sound. Feeling the cold air on my hot bum was more of a turn on than anything else

Soso: so, tell me Mrs Smith, why aren't you wearing any panties?

Before I had a chance to respond, I heard the sound of a belt buckle which was followed by a zip sound. I was turned on, excited and in desperate need to be filled. The moment he entered me, I let out a moan

Him: fuck I missed you so much

Me: I mis-

My incomplete sentence soon turned to loud moans and groans as he moved hard and fast behind me. He even had to cover my mouth with his hand when my orgasm took over and he came after me but stayed buried inside me until his king slipped out of me. He took tissues from his desk and wiped me clean then lowered my dress before turning me around and kissing me slowly then pecked my lips. I pulled out of the kiss and just stared at the smile on his face

Him: I've been needing this relief since I heard you orgasm on the phone last night

I walked over to the couch in his office and dropped on it. All I wanted was more, I wanted to be in his arms and just make love to him the whole day. I threw my head back and just closed my eyes

Him: are you mad at me? Jonga baby I'm sorry I crossed the line, it won't happen again. Its just that I missed you

Me: its not that. I'm not mad at you, I was also missing you

Him: then what's wrong?

Me: angidelanga. I want more

Him: lol you are such a freak. We will continue when we get home. I promise.

He kissed my forehead and my stomach growled

Him: I'll order lunch for us and I'm taking you out to dinner tonight

I smiled as I got up, leaving the envelope with my underwear on his desk then I went back to my office. After work, I drove home and my phone rang as I was opening the front door. I walked in, placed my bag on the couch as Shaun ran to me followed by Limile and Yaya. My phone stopped ringing as I was about to answer, I checked who was calling and I was glad I didn't answer.

Yaya: mama you are back

Me: yes. How was school?

Yaya: it was fine. Mama can I sleepover at Unathi's house?

Me: who is Unathi?

I was already walking up the stairs with them following behind me. I opened my bedroom door and they walked in and sat on the bed while I took my shoes off and walked into my walk-in closet

Yaya: Unathi mama. My friend

Me: isn't Sihle your friend?

My daughter changes friends every month and I'm having a hard time keeping up with her drama, worse ke I'm not a fan of idrama kaYandisa, that's Soso's department

Yaya: she is my friend and she will be at the sleepover. Please let me go mama. Please

Throughout this whole time the boys were quiet, Shaun had my phone in his hand and Li was watching TV

Me: who will take you there? Daddy and I won't be here tonight and auntie Sno isn't here to drive you. You can go if Unathi's mom will fetch you or Sihle's mom will pick you up before dropping Sihle off

Yaya: call her kalok mama

I am raising a diva here so I told her to get my phone from Shaun and I knew it won't be easy. I took out a navy 3 quarter sleeved lace dress. It came just below the knee and it was backless then I took out my black and gold stilettos. I placed everything on the bed, causing Li to shift over

Li: uyaphi mama?

Even though he is my nephew, he calls me mama now since the other kids call me that

Me: out baby

I planted a kiss on his forehead while I watched Yaya and Shaun fighting for my my phone

Me: lethani iPhone yami kimi

Shaun: huh uh mama. Yaya must leave me alone

Me: bring the phone Shaun

Yaya: bring Shaun

Shaun: no. Mama said me not you

He brought the phone, ngafounela umama kaSihle and she agreed to fetch her so she went to ask MaRose to help her pack while I took a quick shower and got ready for my date. I got dressed, applied maroon lipstick then a long caramel coat. Soso walked in the house when I was walking down the stairs, dressed in caramel chinos, black shirt and a brown jacket. He looked sexy AF

Him: ready

Me: yep. Bye guys and please be in bed by 8. Especially wena Loyiso

Loy: OK mom.

He didn't bother lifting his head from the iPad, Loyiso is addicted to that thing

We arrived at the very classy and top-notch restaurant and my husband was being a perfect gentleman. We ordered starters then just relaxed

Him: you look beautiful baby

Me: lol thank you

Him: I miss you

Me: I'm right here nje baby

Him: I miss waking up next to you, watching you sleep, spending time with you. I read iletter kaZiya and it just made me realize that I need you. You are my world Lwandile, I'm incomplete without you

The waitress brought our food, we thanked her and dug in. I was curious to know what the letter said but I wasn't going to push. Its not like I told him what was in my letter

Him: baby thetha kalok

Me: what did the letter say?

Him: nothing much, just telling that Shaun is my son, why she kept him away from me and that I should watch over our son.

Me: hmmm

*

*

Soso

I hadn't had a chance to read Ziya's letter until after my quickie with Lwa at the office. As I was about to put the envelope she left in my office in the drawer, I saw the letter and took it out. I had forgotten about it actually. I opened it

Dear Triple S (Soso Shaun Smith)

a smile crept on my face as I read the first line

I don't know where to start. You always knew when to show up when I needed you, remember the night at the beach all those years back when you saved me from that horrible man and within my last days, you were there for me. I know you have your suspicions about Shaun, his date of birth, the way he looks and his name. I know I shouldn't have hidden him from you but how was I going to explain him to you? I was on the pill, you never came inside me so Shaun is a

miracle baby. The doctors told me it must have been precum but feel free to have him tested if you don't believe me. When you do find out he is yours, please love him, protect him and guide him to be the man that you are. He is everything to me and I hope your wife will find it in her heart to accept him, hopefully eventually love him and take care of him. I hope you will eventually forgive me and as much as our child isn't a product of love, I still love him. Please give him the letter I wrote him on his 16th birthday. He will be able to understand it more by than and I also have money saved up for him but my will says it all. Thank you again Soso

x

Ziya Phakathi

I sighed loudly then shoved the piece of paper back in the drawer and placed the contents of the letter at the back of my mind then tried getting back to work. After Lwa and I had dinner, we got in my Jaguar and drove home with the sounds of Vusi Nova blasting through the speakers. We can argue all you want but Xhosa musicians make the best love songs. It was already half 9 when we got to the house and as expected, the kids were already asleep so I just checked on them while Lwa went to the room we once shared together. Honestly after finding out about Shaun, I didn't think we would bounce back from that but now I'm starting to have hope in our love again and watching how Lwa is with Shaun, its impossible not to keep falling in love with her. She is the strongest woman I know and if anything, this whole saga has taught me to keep it in my pants at all times, to love my wife a hundred times more, to appreciate her for all she does for me and the kids and to always stand by her. I say this all the time because it is the truth, ndyamthanda uLwa and I'm nothing without her and my squad.

*

I woke up the next day next to the love of my life, I've missed this so much, watching her sleep. She is beautiful in every aspect of the word. I gently pecked her lips then got out of bed to take a shower and the water felt just right on my skin but what felt even better was the feel of the warm arms that wrapped around my waist then she placed a kiss on my back and I turned around

Me: morning beautiful

Lwa: morning handsome

Me: you want some Smith magic to start your day amazingly?

The smile that appeared on her face gave me the answer that I wanted. The rest of the week went by nicely, Lwa and I were like little rabbits, having sex every chance we got but I still hadn't moved back into the house. I'd sleepover every now and then but that was about it

Season 3

Insert 69

Lwa

When I woke up one Saturday morning in the middle of July, it was cold and gloomy and as much as I wanted to stay in bed the whole day, I had such a busy day ahead of me. Doing my hair and getting the boys' hair cut, especially Shaun. That afro nje needs to go now, I can't have a son that looks like a girl. I had slept alone for the first time since Soso and I started having sex again. He had gone out with his brothers and I was missing him already so I dialled his number but he didn't answer so I left him and went to take a shower. I got dressed in comfortable clothes yet still looking gorgeous. After breakfast I drove all of us to the mall, starting at the salon

Me: Loyiso you can't get your hair cut with the iPad in your hand. Bring it

Loy: but mama its not like they are going to be cutting my hands. I need to get passed this level

Me: Loyiso!

I hissed his name silently but he knew I meant business because he gave it to me instantly. I got my weave done then did my nails and waited while Yaya and Alwande had their hair braided. The boys were already done so we were all just sitting on the couch with Qhawe and Shaun watching YouTube videos from Q's phone

Lady: you have beautiful kids

I smiled at her and I must admit, she was absolutely gorgeous. She was tall, slightly curvey with sexy legs.

Me: thank you. Beautiful and naughty

Her: are they all yours

Me: yep. Plus, 6months old twins at home

Her: wow that's a big family. I'm Jessica by the way

Me: Lwa

We shook hands as she sat down on the other couch. We waited for 2 more hours before the girls were done which was a relief because the boys were starting to get agitated. I paid the salon and we left

Q: mama I'm hungry

Me: we have food at home so we will eat there

They all literally stopped walking and looked at me. Even Shaun turned against me

Me: and now?

Yaya: I'm too hungry to walk

Me: lol seriously Yandisa? Too hungry to walk?

Loy: I'm calling dad. This is abuse

Me: oh well ke mina I'm leaving. Shaun let's go

Qhawe was holding his hand so he looked up at him then at me with a confused face but I knew how to get through to him

Me: OK big boy, are you staying

Shaun: yes mama

Me: OK baby. I'm going to get home and make myself a big bowl of coco pops and a mug of hot Milo.

Those were his two favorite things, it could be 100 degrees outside but he will still want his Milo. I slowly walked away and before I knew it, I heard tiny footsteps behind me

Loy: Shaun is such a sellout

Q: and a mama's baby

Limile and Yaya soon followed Shaun and and by the time we got to the car, the squad was complete. We all got in the car and I drove off

Me: what happened to calling daddy?

Loy: mxm Yaya left nje mama. Yaya is the key to getting to dad. We all know this
Just then my phone rang, disturbing the song that was playing since my phone is connected to the car Bluetooth.

Me: Lwandiso

Soso: hey baby, nindawophi?

Me: driving to the mall. There are a couple of things I need to get for the kids

Him: are the twins with you?

Me: nah I left them with MaRose

Him: OK I'll pick them up then we will meet at spur for lunch

The moment his kids heard spur, they cheered in happiness and I just laughed and hung up. At the mall we bought groceries then an hour later, we met up with Soso, Kwando and Kwandile. My babies were a little restless ngoba they are not used to being outside the house. After lunch the kids wanted new clothes but I was tired, the plan wasn't to do excessive shopping, worse ke I wasn't dressed for walking around with them

Lwande: please dabs, my friend is having a birthday party at the end of the month and I want to look amazing

Me: lol yho Alwande amazing you say?

She nodded with a bright smile on her face and as much as I was tired, I can't say no to my kids

Me: daddy will take you guys shopping for new clothes. I have to take the twins home anyway

Soso gave me a surprised look then narrowed his eyes at me. I know that look all too well but that's what he gets for being out late last night

Soso: huh uh babe you can't leave me with these people. Yaya is going to clean out my wallet

Me: lol that's your princess nje my love. Have fun guys and get food for supper

Loy: Pizza night. Oh yeah

He started dancing all over the place and I just laughed and pushed ipram yamatwins. For once uShaun akangikhalelanga so I placed my babies in the car but instead of driving home, I drove to Pali's house. We haven't spent much time together. I parked outside then she came out before I even got out the car. She opened the back door and took Kwando out and I took my son sangena endlini. Mike was in the lounge with his sons so we joined them

Me: the brother in law that doesn't love me anymore

Mike: ahh Lwazet you know you are my favorite sister in law

Me: mxm please...I'm your only sister in law

He kissed my cheek before taking his nephew from me and placed him next to Lwakho. Kwandile being the restless child that he is, he started crawling all over the house with Avery and Lwakho following behind him

Mike: so how have you been?

Pali: before you start interrogating my friend, how's about you get us a bottle of wine?

Mike: lol come help me kaloku baby.

Pali got up and Mike grabbed her ass making her squeal and I just laughed and shook my head. These two really belong together, they are madness that

compliments each other. While I waited, I went through my whatsapp and texted Sedi. That's one person I haven't seen in ages and she has just isolated herself. I sent her a text but she wasn't online and only one tick appeared. If I could, I'd have all my friends in one town because at the end of the day we need each other. We are a family at the end of the day. Anyway, the love birds returned with the wine and we chilled, just catching up nje

Mike: how's Shaun? Is he fitting well with the other kids?

Me: yeah, he is. Obviously yena noYaya are always at each other's throats but he is a mama's boy. Uyangikhalela at times. Its adorable

Mike and Pali looked at each other then smiled and looked at me with some strange look

Me: and now? What's going on?

Pali: you love him. Your eyes are sparkling when you talk about him. You really love him

Me: lol he is my son Pali, of course I love him. Its impossible not to love that boy. He is so loveable

After our catch up session I took my kids and drove home. It was still early ngoba Soso and the rest of the squad were not back yet. I changed the twins' diapers, took their purity then placed them on their feeding chairs and fed them. MaRose passed us on her way to the laundry room

MaRose: Lwa I didn't hear you come in

Me: hey ma. We just got here.

Her: uhm OK. You have a visitor. She is in the lounge

I frowned my eyebrows trying to figure out who could visit without letting me know first

Me: uhm OK ma. Please take over lana while I attend to the visitor

I handed her the purity then headed to the lounge and my eyes almost popped out of their sockets. She looked up at me as I entered and sat down a bit far from her, folded my arms then looked at her

Me: Andiswa ufunani emzini wam?

Atha's mom: tjo the disrespect na Lwandile. You are addressing me by my first name yet I'm as old as your mother

Me: hmmm that's nice so what do you want?

Her: I called you the other day and you didn't bother to return my call

Me: I'm busy weAndiswa weh. I'm raising 8kids and I have a job, I don't have time to entertain your nonsense calls about wanting my kids

She cocked her eyebrows and leaned back on my couch. If this woman thinks I will show her an ounce of respect after everything she and her son have put me through, she has another thing coming shame

Her: you are so selfish Lwandile and I don't even know why my mother likes you. Anyway, I'm here because of my mother. She isn't well and she wants to see the twins. Even if it's for one day

Me: I can't do that. The twins have school

Her: ngeWeekend kalok Lwa. Please. We are having a family reunion type of thing for her next weekend

Me: I'll talk to Soso then I'll get back to you during the week.

Her: thank you

Me: hmmm so if that's all, I will walk you out

She got up, took a look around the room and the rest of the house as we walked out. At that moment I hated that we bought this house from her. She was walking as if she owns the place

Her: I like what you've done with the place.

Me: hmmm

We reached the door and I shut it before she even had a chance to say goodbye. I really don't like that woman and having her here in my house just annoyed me to the core

Season 3

Insert 70

Lwa

By the time Soso and his kids came back, my mood was already at level zero nje. They found me in the 3rd lounge watching TV with the twins crawling around the floor. We hardly use that lounge that's why I was sitting there because I didn't want to be disturbed

Q: mom, daddy bought Yaya a phone

I turned to look at him because I had my attention on the TV the whole time

Me: sawbona Qhawe

Q: askies mama. Molo mama

He walked in, kissed my cheek then sat next to me

Me: uthi wenzeni utatakho?

Him: he bought Yaya a phone and he also bought Shaun a phone but Yaya's phone is nicer.

I got up from the couch leaving him with his brother and sister and walked into the first lounge where they were all sitting there with their shopping bags, I swear it looked like they bought the whole mall

Yaya: mama come see my phone. Daddy bought it for me

Shaun: me too mama. Come see

I walked in and sat next to Alwande who was looking through her new clothes and paying no attention to anyone. I looked at the Samsung boxes on Shaun and Yaya's laps then looked at Soso

Me: are you kidding me right now? S3 for a 5year old and an S4 for a 6year old?

Soso: its just phones baby.

Me: Yaya has a phone. Her Vodafone works just fine. I'm taking these phones. I'll buy Shaun a Vodafone as well. I'm not going to raise brats

Yaya: but mom I like my phone

I took the box and phone from her and she protested while sulking to her father and Shaun didn't care much for the phone, the moment I took the phone from him, he took his iPad and played a game on it

Soso: come on babe. What are you going to do with these phones now since you have your own phones?

Me: I don't know, maybe I'll sell them on Olx, angaz nam but there is no way these kids will have phones that cost over R2000 each. Forget it

Yaya: you are unfair mama

She was sobbing now with her head on her father's chest. I took the phones to my study and locked them in the drawer then went back to the lounge, I needed to talk to Soso about lento kaAndiswa and wanting my kids

Me: tatakhe

He lifted his head and looked at me with a slight smile. I don't even know why he was smiling because I didn't say anything amusing or echazayo

Me: can we talk for a bit?

He lifted his still sulking daughter from his chest and placed her on the couch then weza kim saya ekitchen and sat on the high chairs

Soso: OK before you say anything, let me explain first. You know I cannot say no to her and I know I should have put my foot down but then Shaun wanted a phone as well and then before I knew it I had paid for them. I know I should have spoken to you first and I'm sorry I didn't

I just smile because that's not what I wanted to talk about, I was over yonke leyonto and it wasn't much of a big deal ngoba its his money that he chooses to waste

Me: angikho lapho kube uyaz baby. This is more serious. Andiswa was here

He closed his eyes frowning his eyebrows same time. That immediately told me that he was deep in thought

Him: ufuna nton?

Me: oLoyiso. Apparently, her mother is sick and they want to have a family reunion for her next weekend

Him: your birthday weekend?

Me: my birthday is the Wednesday after that weekend. We can do something the weekend after the reunion

Him: so, you want them to go? Bazawuhamba nobani since Sno isn't here? Kanye kanye uphi uSnothile?

Me: uSnothile is at home, her son isn't well and there are issues with regards to the family yabantwana bakhe, angisaz kahle istory

Him: so bazawuhamba nobani? Nathi?

Me: yebo baby. I can't risk taking me kids there without me especially with the nonsense they fed Loyiso the last time he went there

He stayed silent for a few seconds then released a loud sigh

Him: sistress yonke lento kodwa baby qha ke yifamily yabo oLoyiso so we can't deny them to see their family

Me: yeah. So sohamba? Saturday

Him: ewe mamakhe.

Ngamshiya ke and went to bath my babies, starting with the twins then took them to MaRose to eat then bathed Shaun and Limile together and dressed them in pyjamas then we all ate pizza while watching a movie.

A week later we were getting ready to go to the family reunion yakwaAtha and we were going to leave the other kids with maRose.

Me: Loyiso! Qhawe! Are you ready to leave?

Q: ewe I'm ready

Loyiso on the other hand was on the couch with his iPad in his hands, his sneakers next to his feet instead of on his feet. I took the iPad from him and when he protested I gave him an unimpressed look

Me: put your shoes on so we can leave and you are leaving this thing behind

Loy: haaa but mom what am I going to do all the way there?

Me: you will talk to your brother. Qhawe leave your phone and iPod please

Q: OK mama

We all got in the car and drove off. I was dreading this trip before we even left PE. Soso stopped at a garage, we bought refreshments and snacks then it was my turn to drive

Soso: can we pass by your parents' house after the reunion? Or even spend the night there

Me: Soso haa aah

Him: please babe. We have to pick up the rent for Nami's house anyway.

We decided to rent out the house while the kids are still young instead of selling it because they might need it later in life. What Soso was doing was annoying me because he knows how I feel about my parents but I agreed for the sake of peace then ngathule while he had a conversation with his sons. When we arrived, it was packed, we barely had any space to park and after we found parking, I had no idea where we were supposed to go so I just called Siviwe

Siv: mama kaQhawzin

Me: lol uyaphapha yaz. Where are you?

Him: ndisekhaya fondin. We are having a small thing for umakhulu

Me: well please come outside. Find a blue golf R and come to it

Him: sho

I hung up then we got out the car and waited for him. He came out a few minutes later holding Yathandwa's hand. She was all grown up and looking so beautiful, a photocopy of her parents. We shared hugs then he did a man hug with Soso and the twins

Siv: I didn't think you were gonna come phof ke wena Lwa umuntu wesurprises

Me: angithi you don't call me that's why. Hello Yati. Unjani baby?

Yati: I'm fine auntie Lwa. You look beautiful

Me: thank you my love

We walked in the yard together and nje there was a buzz and family love in the air, Siviwe led the twins and I to where his grandmother was so we can greet and stuff. She was so happy to see me, complaining about how I don't come see her

Makhulu: bakhulile abantwana bakho Lwandile and ndyabulela ukuba ubazise apha today. Enkosi nyan ntombi

I nodded then got up to walk out to find my husband and being careless, I was focused on my phone when I bumped into someone I wasn't expecting to see

Me: Snothile?! What are you doing here?

Sno: sis Lwa. Uhm...

Before she could say anything else, a female version of Loyiso and Qhawe ran towards us and hugged Sno

Sno: Luthando go play, I'm still talking to someone here

Lu: OK mama

She ran along and I just stared at her then shifted my attention to her mother. Heee what the fuck is happening lana?

Sno: sis Lwa ngcela sihlale phansi sikhulume kahle

We sat in the kitchen and at first, she was silent then I gave her a look indicating that she should start talking

Her: uhm I don't know where to start explaining yonke lento.

Me: how's about the beginning?

She cleared her throat then sighed and started explaining

Her: the time uMamAndiswa was blackmailing Atha and you guys broke up, we slept together and that's when Luthando was conceived and after I gave birth uMamAndiswa took her because I was still at school doing my matric

I remember reading an SMS on Atha's phone from Sno about them sleeping together but I didn't know they made a child but then again Atha and I broke up a few months later.

Me: wow so why didn't you tell me your kids have the same father as my kids? You didn't think I deserved to know that

Her: bengsaba sis Lwa. I thought you were going to fire me because of my kids. I'm sorry sis Lwa. If I knew then what I know now ngabe I wouldn't have done what I did. He was always in love with you. Even when AJ was conceived, he was still in love with you despite everything you guys did to each other.

Me: AJ?

Her: my son. Athandwe Junior. As much as I knew he was just using me for sex, I still slept with him because I loved him and I thought maybe some day he will see my love for him and give us another chance.

She took a pause then blinked away the tears in her eyes

Her: ngyaxolisa sis Lwa. I'll pack my things from your house and leave. Thank you for the job but I understand if you want me to leave

Me: woah wo I'm not firing you even though this is a lot to take in, I know you still need the job to support your son

She nodded then I got up leaving her there to find my husband. Atha was such a man whose yazi, 4 kids from different mothers. Ai cha and his family can keep secrets shame. The rest of the day went by smoothly, umakhulu was happy to have her family with her but she wasn't pleased when we had to leave. I promised to bring the boys to see her at least once a month

Soso: so, we are going to your parent's house?

Me: yeah but we are not going to sleep there. I miss my other kids.

Loy: mama you just miss Shaun

We all laughed and I didn't bother to respond because I was missing all my kids, not just Shaun. Upon our arrival kwaHadebe, uMamHadebe was surprised to see us but my kids were happy to see her

Mom: sanbona Lwandile

Me: yebo sawbona mama

Her: ninjani?

We had small talk then dad got home and we had the most awkward dinner ever then after dinner I helped mom with the dishes

Mom: banjani owele abashe?

Me: bayakhula and bayaganga too much

Her: OK. Ngyajabula ukuthi nifikile Lwandile. I miss the relationship we used to have and I'm really sorry for what your father did on your wedding day. He hasn't forgiven himself ever since that day

Me: mama ubaba uyakwaz ukuzixolisela and if he saw that he was wrong then why hasn't he apologized?

Dad: Lwandile

I turned around to find him seated on the high chairs with Qhawe on the counter next to him.

Season 3

Insert 71

Lwa

My father's voice actually caught me by surprise because I wasn't expecting him to be listening in on our conversation

Me: baba

Dad: we need to talk mntanam. We need to sit down and have a long conversation about a lot of things.

Mom: ngizqedela lana, wena just go with your father

I placed the dish cloth on the sink then followed my dad to the study. He sat at his desk and I sat in the chair in front of him. I've wanted this moment for almost 6years now and now that its happening I can't help but be nervous because of all the emotions that I suddenly felt resurfacing

Dad: Lwandile mntanam kuningi osekwezakalile in the past 5years. Til this day I still blame myself for your shooting but at the time of my actions I thought I was doing the right thing. The aim wasn't to hurt you or anyone but the plan was to protect my only daughter. I was blinded by everything Atha told me and I couldn't see the love you share with Lwandiso. I understand your anger and hatred towards your mother and I but I just want to let you know that her and I are not getting any younger and we will be gone before you know it

My vision was now blurry from the tears that had built up in my eyes. The events of my wedding day that I could still remember came flashing in my mind like a movie. The pain I felt after finding out that it was my dad that invited Atha to my wedding now occupied my heart

Me: I just want to know why baba. Why did you invite him? What were you hoping to achieve?

He paused for a few seconds as if calculating his next choice of words then soon followed with a sigh

Him: I wanted to protect you. I couldn't change your mind about marrying Smith so I thought he would be able to. Lwandile I just want us to move on from this and be a family again. Life is short mntanam, I've already lost your brother and I can't lose another child. You are my only daughter Lwa

The ball was placed in my court now and it was my turn to drift into deep thought. I thought about everything dad said and honestly, he hasn't apologized and that's what I need the most from him. For him to take responsibility for his actions and say he is sorry

Me: do you at least acknowledge that you were wrong?

Him: yes, I know i was wrong and I feel bad for it all

Me: then why ungathi sorry baba?

Him: ngiyaxolisa Lwandile mntanam. Ngicela ungixolele

Ngavele ngathula and just let the tears roll down my cheeks, its no secret how much pain I've endured and how much one simple word freed me from the hurt and the burden I carried on my shoulders. I cried so much that my dad got up from his chair and came to wrap his arms around me but I cried even more when he held me.

Me: I for...forgive you baba

*

*

5 years later

The twins (Loy and Q) are now 14years old, in grade 8, Alwande is 15years old, in grade 9, Yaya is 11, in grade 5, Shaun is 10, in grade 4, Limile is 9, in grade 3 and owele (Kwando and Kwandi) are 5, in grade RR

It's a monday morning and I'm dreading getting out of bed because I'm exhausted from last night. Soso and I decided to make love all night and even though he was gentle, I'm still exhausted. I switch off my alarm then drag myself out of bed, put on his t-shirt that I find on the pile of our clothes that's on the floor then I open the blinds and the sliding door. I'm greeted by the warm September sun that's not to hot but

just right. As I take in the warmth of the sun I feel his arms wrap around me from behind and kisses on my neck

Soso: good morning Mrs Smith

I smile to myself as I suddenly feel butterflies fluttering in my stomach and my heart starts racing. Is such a thing even possible? 11years of a rollercoaster marriage and he still makes me feel like a teenager with a crush

Me: morning sthandwa sam

I turn around to face him and before I get a chance to utter another word, he kisses me softly yet passionately, taking my bottom lip between his teeth and gently biting it. While I'm still enjoying the feeling this kiss is sending through every corner and curve of my body, I suddenly feel his hand between my thighs and I break the kiss

Me: haa aah Lwandiso, I'm still sore from earlier this morning and time isn't on our side

Him: but damn baby, do you know how sexy you are? Especially when you are wearing my clothes. 33years old and yet you look like you are in your teens

Me: lol stop smooth talking me into having sex with you. I need to check on the kids

I got out from his embrace and went to wash my face and brush my teeth then I wore a silk robe and headed for Qhawe's room

Me: vuka boy

He started stretching and yawning all over the bed

Me: Qhawe wake up

Q: I'm up mama

Me: good

I woke his twin up and that's always a mission because Loyiso stays up late busy pressing his phone. When everyone was up and showering, I went to take a shower as well then wore navy chinos with a yellow blouse and yellow heels. I tired my weave into a bun then applied my make up, finishing my look off with plum lipstick then I headed downstairs for breakfast

Me: guys listen up

They all lifted their heads to focus their attention on me

Me: daddy and I have decided to take cellphones away during the week

Loy: but why?

Me: because number 1 you stay up late everyday pressing that phone then when you have to wake up its a mission and secondly you need to learn to do other things apart from pressing phones and iPads

Shaun: you taking the iPad too mama?

Me: yes baby. I'm going to take everything after breakfast then you will get it after school on friday

Everyone at the table complained but I was putting my foot down and as always Soso was being Stevie Wonder to the whole situation. After breakfast I took the preschool and primary school kids and Soso took the high school kids and as I was about to drive off he came to my window

Soso: bye guys. Daddy loves you

Kwando: kwando loves daddy too

Kwandi: I love you too daddy

Then there was silence but knowing my kids, Yaya was angry at something, Limile and Shaun had their minds focused on something else

Soso: Yaya kaTatakhe

Yaya: tatam

Soso: awumthandi utata ngok

Then soft giggles came from my backseat. I wasn't going to say anything because ekaYandisa nobabwakhe ayingenwa. I soon drove off, dropping them off at school then drove to work. Around lunch time Pali came rushing into my office and threw herself on the chair opposite my desk

Me: and now?

Pali: friendship I shouldn't have said yes to this whole big wedding thing. Planning it is an absolute nightmare

Pali's marriage with her father ended two years back when her father was found dead in the bathroom of his house with his penis chopped off and stuffed into his mouth. He died a horrible death umntomdala and til this day we still don't know who did it but his death meant that Pali was now free to marry Mike and she finally said yes to him last December. The wedding is in mid October. Just over a month from now

Me: what's wrong now?

Her: everything. I don't know what cake design or flavors I want and I don't know what I want on the menu, I don't know who is going to walk me down the isle and I don't know what to do with my hair

Me: ok friendship breath ok. Just calm down and take it easy. These aren't major setbacks so after work we will go to a few caterers and taste a couple of dishes and if there is time, we will go to the bakery as well. This wedding will be a success come hell or high waters

Her: thank you friendship. I don't know what I'd be without you

I smiled then we spent the rest of my lunch hour talking about her wedding. After work I left Soso at the office and drove home where I found Sno preparing supper and Owele were eating a fruit salad with yogurt

Kwando: mama is home

She jumped down from the high chair and ran to me and as tired as I was, I picked her up

Me: uyasinda kodwa Kwando. You are big girl phela manje

Kwando: but I'm still a baby andithi mama

Me: yes, baby you are my little girl

I walked the kitchen naye then placed next to her brother. I kissed his head then took a spoonful from his fruits

Me: hello Kwandile

Kwandi: hello mama. What did you bring me?

Me: lol a big hug. Uyayfuni?

Him: hayi mama. You didn't bring ice-cream?

I shook my head

Season 3

Insert 72

Soso

I've watched my family grow over the past 13 years and honestly, I wouldn't change a thing. Every trial and tribulation we went through, every nightmare and every fight were worth it and packed a valuable lesson for all of us.

Kwandi: daddy umama zange wafika nelce-cream yam

I was barely through the door and into the house when my youngest son greeted me with his daily dose of complaints. That's how Kwandile was, he always has something to complain about, no matter how small it is

Me: uthini na ndoda?

Him: ice-cream daddy. You not listening kalok wena tatam

Me: lol uxolo mahn kwedin. Uphi umama?

He threw his arms in the air in defeat then went to join his sister in the lounge where she was watching tv

Me: molo Kwando

Kwando: hey daddy

She didn't bother removing her eyes from the tv screen. I walked into my bedroom but to my surprise it was empty. I changed into basketball shorts and a vest and sneakers then went upstairs to the gym and that's where my wife was, sweating away on the treadmill with headsets in her ears. I chose not to bother her and just started with my stretching. When she eventually saw me, that beautiful smile of hers crept on her face and I just waved at her and continue working out. My workout session was soon disturbed by my phone

Me: Aphile. Unjani?

AP: I'm good as any person and you?

Me: ndiyavuya ukuva lonto ntwana yam. What's up?

Her: I'm bored mahn. Can I come over?

I looked over at my wife who was done with her workout session and walking towards me

Me: come through ngeWeekend bruh. Things are crazy apha during the week

Her: oh

I could hear the disappointment in her voice but kalok bendingaxoki, it's chaotic during the week in this house. Lwa reached me then pecked my lips

Me: we will talk later neh. I have to go

Her: alright sho

I hung up then grabbed Lwa's waist pulling her closer to me

Me: hey

Her smile broadened causing me to smile too

Lwa: hey

She pecked my lips again then giggled

Me: lol go check on my kids, woman

She burst into laughter then looked at me with all the attitude in the world

Her: lol your kids are old bruh, they can look after themselves

Me: well your son wants his ice-cream

Her: ice-cream that he won't get. Its not summer yet so nje I don't want to be going to doctors for his asthma

She had a point because when that boy's asthma acts up, akukhomuntu olalayo.

After taking a shower, I went to help the kids with their homework

Alwande: malume kawuthethe noDabs torho. I can't survive the whole week without my phone. I'm already having withdrawal issues

Loy: you are wasting your time cuz, only person that can get through to mama is Shaun.

They all turned and looked at Shaun and he just stared right back at them

Shaun: what?

Yaya: thetha noMama twin

Yaya and Shaun call each other twin which always makes me laugh because they look alike and are almost the same age

Shaun: mom will know you guys sent me

Q: I have a plan little bro. Sizawthetha ngayo when dad isn't here

Me: lol why must I be gone? Its not like I'm gonna tell mama

Q: dad we know you are going to tell her. You and mom tell each other everything

Me: lol oh wow guys. You have no faith in me. Let me leave you to your sneaking around.

I left them to their mischievous ways and went to find my wife who had her feet up on the couch watching some girly show on catch up

Me: where are your kids?

Lwa: helping MaRose with packing laundry away

Me: uphi uSno?

Her: in their backrooms

Me: hmmm so we can have a quickie right here

She grabbed the cushion between us and smacked me with it making me laugh instantly

Me: ouch MaHadebe what was that for?

Her: you are always thinking with your penis. You are always trying to bump and grind me

Me: do you blame me though? Have you seen yourself? I can't help myself

She tried pretending to be angry but before I knew it she was blushing

Me: jonga mamakhe don't you think taking the phones away was too drastic?

She cocked her eyebrow at me then folded her arms across her chest

Her: askies?

Me: calm down babe, I'm just saying nje.

Her: those kids need discipline baby.

*

*

Lwa

I wasn't intending on hearing anything Soso had to say about his kids and their phones. Lento kaSoso of having lost his parents at a young age is the reason why he doesn't want his kids to be unhappy of which is understandable but I'm not going to give into their demands. During dinner, they were still begging me for their phones

Me: yaz nizojwayela not having phones during the week. You guys are just complaining because its the first day

Alwa: how I wish it was Thursday already thixo onofefe

Me: lol ai ke idrama yakho mntaka bhuti. Yini usuyajola na baby?

Yho I saw Nami's daughter change from a yellow bone to a red bone same time. She was blushing uncontrollably and Loyiso was laughing his life away

Alwa: hayi dabs andijoli mna. I just miss texting my friends qha

Me: hmmm

That's one thing I'm not ready for, my babies can't start dating. Especially the girls because I can't handle seeing them cry because of some stupid boy. After dinner Soso and I went upstairs to our room and I threw myself on the bed sighing immediately

Soso: can you stop overreacting? Umntana akajoli

I sat up with my eyes glued on him now

Me: how do you know?

Him: babe you and the kids have an amazing relationship so I think if any of them started dating, you'd be the first to know

Me: maybe I should go through her phone just to be sure

Him: no Lwandile you will do no such thing. Its invasion of privacy

Mxm invasion of privacy my foot. I left him when he went to shower ngaya eroomini kaAlwande but when I got there she wasn't alone so I stood at the door since it was partly open

Q: cuz just calm down and explain to him tomorrow that mama took our phones and you will text him on Friday

Alwa: dude he is the coolest guy in our class, all the girls want to be friends with him and he chose me. If he sees that I don't respond, he will move on to another girl

Q: yima kalok Alwande, do you like him or do you like like him?

Alwa: he is just a friend, you know you'd be the first person I'd tell if I have crush

I let out a sigh of relief when I heard that, I didn't even realize that I was holding my breath then I knocked softly and walked in, I even acted surprised to see Qhawe there

Me: awusenayo eyakho iroom Qhawe?

Q: tjo goodnight cuz

Me: I don't get a goodnight?

Q: heh haike mama ugqiba ukundiphoxa ngok and now you want a goodnight. No way Mrs Smith, andidlali nawe

My kids are something else yaz. I just chuckled as he walked out waving goodbye to me

Me: icousin yakho igcwele impambano yodwa shame. Sengfisa ukubona abazali bakhe

Alwa: lol its you and uncle Soso nje dabs

Me: mina? I'm a mother to such a crazy child? Its unbelievable. Anyway, have you brushed your teeth?

Her: ewe. Jonga

She flashed me a huge smile

Me: ok ke bengizokucheker nje. Goodnight baby

Her: dabs can we go for lunch ngomso? Just the two of us qha

I agreed to the lunch though I found it strange that she'd want alone time with me because we do everything as a family laykhaya. I checked on the rest of the kids, tucked in the younger ones then went to bed. We slept in a cuddling position and when I woke up I was craving some Smith loving so while he slept, I gently took his briefs off and lowered myself on the bed until my head was just above his king then gently sucked on it causing him to groan with his eyes still shut then I sucked his morning erection even more which woke him up and he stripped me naked

Soso: you are the best wife ever

This was now after an amazing love making session and we were catching our breath in each other's arms

Me: lol yes I am. Good morning my king

When we got downstairs for breakfast, Yaya and Kwando were arguing about something while Shaun and Q were eating in front of the tv which they know they are not supposed to do

Me: Qhawe kudlelwaphi laykhaya?

Q: Shaun wanted us to watch highlights of the Man United and Liverpool game

Me: that's not what I asked you and you are older than Shaun, set an example for him

After breakfast I did my usual routine and when I got to work, it was business as usual but ke I had to leave early for my lunch with Alwande.

Season 3

Insert 73

Lwa

I drove to the school at 2pm then waited for the kids to come out. I was a bit early so I had to wait for them kancane. Ukufika kwabo, it was just Alwande and the boys so I let them all in

Me: hey guys.

Twins: hello mama

Alwa: molo dabs

Me: I'm not taking you guys, I'm only taking Alwa

I was now looking at the twins sitting behind me. Loyiso wasn't impressed

Loy: why are you leaving us?

Me: Alwa and I are going somewhere so auntie Sno will fetch you guys as usual and don't you have soccer practice today?

Q: what day is it today mama?

I frowned my eyebrows and just stared at him. Uqalile ke futhi u Qhawe

Me: it's Tuesday

Q: and when do we have soccer practice?

I let out a chuckle as I remembered that they have practice only on Monday and Wednesday. Just then I saw my Evoque pull up behind me

Me: phumanike uAuntie Sno is here. I'll see you guys at home.

They opened their doors baphuma

Me: I love you my minions

They immediately stopped walking and turned around

Loy: seriously mom? You are going to mess up my street cred yaz.

Q: yho Mrs Smith undehlule nyan

Alwande and I laughed as I drove off. These boys want to grow up way too fast. Just the other day they were my minions and now they are in high school

Me: so, what do you want to eat? Pizza or burgers?

Alwa: burger yaKwaSteers

I drove to the mall where I found parking then grabbed my bag sangena, placed our order then we sat down

Me: uright baby?

She shook her head slowly

Me: what's wrong?

She bowed her head and started talking softly

Her: something happened yesterday when I was about to get off the car when auntie Sno dropped us off phezolo. There was blood on my uniform so I had to go home and change. Auntie Sno uthe mele ndikuxelele so you can tell me what's wrong. Am I dying dabs?

I laughed a little as she gave me a concerned look

Me: askies nana, I didn't mean to laugh. You are not going to die, I promise you.

Her: but I was bleeding dabs

I explained everything to her about her monthly period in a way she could understand then our food arrived sadla. We then left for Clicks where I bought her sanitary pads then I drove us home. I wasn't going back to work ngoba it was already late. My babies are really growing, talking to Alwande about her period made me feel so old but I'm happy that they are growing, I just wish I could slow it down a bit

Alwa: dabs can I ask you something?

Me: yes baby. Anything

Her: what is sex?

I chocked on my own saliva because that is one thing I wasn't expecting to hear. I even stepped on the breaks to hard causing the car to jerk. I cleared my throat

Me: uhm what was that?

Her: sex. Yinton leyo

Me: uhm nana we will talk about it properly when we get home. I promise

She nodded and I turned up the radio for the rest of the ride home. The whole way I thought about how I'm going to break down this sex topic in such a way that won't create curiosity from her to try it out. She is just 15 so she doesn't need to be having sex. Upon our arrival at home, I told her to go change out of her uniform while I also changed. Soso walked in as I was getting out of my work clothes

Soso: you bunked work today

Me: hey to you too baby

Him: haa aah Lwandile, you can't just leave the office whenever you feel like it

I looked at him with my eyebrows raised and my arms folded

Him: what?

Me: look at the time. Look at where you are

Him: your point?

Me: this is where you enter daddy and hubby mode. No boss talk. We can have this conversation tomorrow at the office

He sighed, shook his head then smiled, showing me that gorgeous smile of his that I love then he sat on the couch

Him: yizapha ke sthandwa sam

I slowly walked up to him, I just in my lace black and red bra and my red lace boyleg underwear. I sat on his lap with my legs on either side of him and wrapped my arms around his neck while he held my waist

Me: kiss me

We shared a slow emotion-filled kiss then after a while I pulled back then stared at him

Him: what's wrong?

I sighed

Me: when did we get so old?

Him: lol ok what happened? You found a grey hair in your weave?

I hit his shoulder playfully then gave him an unimpressed look

Me: no man. Alwande got her first period yesterday

He frowned

Him: woaw kanti how old is Alwande na baby?

Me: she turned 15 last month. She is a late bloomer yena because some girls get them around 11/12

Him: oh, so iperiods zomntana zikwenza ucinge ukuba ulixhegu ngoku. Lol unedrama mahn baby tjo

Me: mxm yabona when the minions come to you about wet dreams you will understand my pain

He laughed into ende uSoso and as usual he wasn't taking me seriously

Him: ulate yaz baby. We covered lonto 2years ago. I even told them about masturbating. My boys are sorted

Aibo what's happening here? What's next? Shaun is going to bring a girl home one of these days phela without me realizing that they've grown

Him: hey hey baby sukhala haw. Growing up is good njena.

Me: it's happening to fast kodwa Lwandiso

He got up with me still on him leading to me wrapping my legs around his waist then he walked towards our bed and lowered me onto it and took my panties off

Me: baby haa aah mahn

Him: shhh I'm going to make other parts of your body wet because I hate seeing you cry

Before I could respond, he was already sucking on my clit. After my second orgasm, we took a shower together then I went to have the talk with Alwa. I found her in her room and she sat up when I walked in. I sat next to her on the bed

Me: before I respond to your question, I want to know why you are asking. Uyizwephi indaba yesex?

Alwa: auntie Sno said that now that I have my period, if I have sex, I'll get pregnant

Me: oh, ok ke baby. I want you to listen to everything I tell you and if you have questions, feel free to ask

She nodded then I started with the so-called talk. She listened attentively then asked her questions at the end and I answered them as honestly as I could. As much as I wish Phiwe was still around to do this, I'm glad to have done it. It's great preparation for when I have to talk to Yandisa and Kwando.

The rest of the week dragged on, it felt like each day between Monday and Friday was doubled so when I got home on Friday afternoon, I was exhausted and just wanted to shower and get in bed but when you have a house full of kids, things never go according to plan. The moment I walked in through the door I heard loud voices

Me: guys owani umsindo?

Loy: mama its Friday today, our phones please

Alwa: ewe dabs iPhones zethu

They all had their palms open in front of me, mind you they haven't greeted me

Me: so, this is the hello I'll get every Friday? Anikho serious yaz and I'm too tired for yonke lento, anisuke phambi kwam

I walked around them ngaye eroomini then took my clothes off and got into bed. The moment my head hit the pillow, I passed out. I slept throughout the night and when I woke up in the morning my throat was sore and my nose was blocked. Flu in spring or summer is the worst, I didn't even want to get out of bed and worse part was that

Soso wasn't in bed with me when I woke up. I reached for my phone and went through my social networks, I came across pictures of Liyana and her parents on Instagram. Enzo's daughter was all sorts of adorable and uyafana noAsemahle, the older she gets, the more she looks like her. Next thing my door opened and Soso walked in with his children holding a tray of food. I sat up on the bed looking at them

Shaun: morning mama

Me: morning baby

He crawled on the bed followed by his brothers and sisters

Soso: where am I gonna sit if you guys take all the space on the bed?

Kwando and Yaya shifted and made space for him wahlala next to Limile and Loyiso

Loy: we made you breakfast mama

Q: to say sorry for them being rude to you yesterday

Loyiso and Alwande gave him the death stare ngahleka kancane. I really wasn't feeling well but I had to put a front for them. After we all had my breakfast, they went to get ready because owele were spending the day at Enzo's place, Shaun, Yaya and Limile are going to visit Avery and Lwakho and the twins and Alwande are going to the mall with their friends

Soso: the flu has you by the boobs neh baby

Me: lol you have no idea

Season 3

Insert 74

Soso

Me: you ready to tie the knot little bro?

It was the day before Mike's wedding, we were running around doing our final fittings for his big day. Memories of my wedding 11years ago flooded my brain and every emotion came racing back. That day was filled with so many mixed emotions and nothing defines a rollercoaster as much as that day. The day I almost lost the love of my life

Mike: I'm as ready as I'll ever be. I've been wanting to do this for 10years now.
Ndiyamthanda uPalesa bro. Uyayaz mos nawe

Me: and you better not fuck up. We don't fuck up

Jay: we just fuck around. I don't understand why you guys insist on getting tied down. I'm living my best life right now. No kids. No wife. I fuck who I want whenever and wherever

Mike and I first looked at each other then we turned to look at him. Jason will never grow up; our parents have accepted it and I think its about time we accepted it

Me: you are going to die alone

Jay: impossible. I'll probably die with my dick in some fine young thing

I shook my head ndahleka kancinci. Ndinombulelo nyan that I am not like him, that I found someone that I love and who loves me and that I have kids that just make any day seem amazing. Ukugqiba kwethu ezofittings we drove to Jay's house and started drinking. Ntando and Marcus joined us since they are also part of the groomsmen, we took out meat, marinated it and had a braai as just the guys. Later Enzo and KK came through then strippers arrived

Mike: Jason I told you I don't want strippers

Jay: just because you don't want them doesn't mean the rest of the gents don't want them.

He brought a bowl to each of us to put our phones in it then he placed the bowl in the dishwasher but didn't switch it on. The strippers did their thing, giving us lap dances, drinking our alcohol and just ensuring we have a good time

Enzo: wena KK you better not disappear with any of these girls. I know you are still dating my sister

KK: I wouldn't dream of it grootman

We stayed up until 5am then we passed out. Ntando, Marcus and Jason disappeared with strippers into the rooms in the house and the rest of us were on the couch. I happened to be the first one to wake up and I immediately went find my phone. It was already 9:15am and the wedding is at 10:30am

Me: majita wake up. We are gonna be late

Mike opened his eyes then stretched and yawned while rubbing his eyes

Mike: lithini ixesha apho bruh?

Me: ngu9 fondin. Vuka and find that whore of a brother of yours so we can get ready

Him: last night was lit though. Those girls...yees

He was now on his feet and Enzo and KK were waking up as well. We took showers, got dressed then drove to the venue. I had ignored the 20 missed calls from Lwa because I know if I call her back, she was going to start shouting from the moment I say hello. I was genuinely happy for my little brother. I know everything he and Palesa have been through, I know the kind of love he has for her and their sons and the sacrifices he has made but most importantly the man he has become is worthy of praise. The wedding went well and it was absolutely beautiful. It was only at the reception that I got a chance to see my wife. She was at a table with Asemahle and Enzo's daughter. As much as she was part of the bridal party, she wasn't about the life of sitting with the rest of the bride's maids

Me: hello Mrs Smith

I kissed her cheek then pulled a chair to sit next to her. She looked absolutely gorgeous in her light pink cocktail dress

Lwa: Mrs Smith? Mina? Nah bruh I'm single

Me: lol molo Asemahle. Its been forever hey

Mahle: sawbona bhut' Soso

She smiled at me while her niece looked at me with her cuteness. I greeted her as well then focused on my wife who was suddenly single nje overnight

Me: askies my love. Its Jason's fault

Lwa: I should have guessed and I'm sure he gave you tons of strippers to entertain yourselves

Me: lol I'm not going to answer that because andifuni ubethwa mna

Asemahle looked at us while laughing to herself most probably thinking we are crazy but that's what I like about us, we are carefree. It was after midnight that we got to our house and I was beyond exhausted

*

*

Lwa

The day after the wedding I woke up tired but I forced myself to get out of bed and make my husband and children breakfast

Soso: uyaphi? Its still early

Me: aren't you hungry?

Him: well I'm starving sthandwa sam but not for something in the kitchen

He spoke while running his thumb up and down my queen but over my panties. I was tired and I wanted to go make the kids breakfast before they come running in here so I hit his hand

Me: I'm tired baby

He wasn't trying to hear a single thing I was saying because he got on top of me started rubbing his morning erection against my underwear

Me: hmmm Lwandiso

Him: ewe sthandwa sam

He had his lips against my ear nibbling and gently biting it. I released another moan then he removed my panties and pressed his thumb against my clit circling it around my most sensitive area. I was grabbing onto him, wanting him, needing him. My queen was dripping wet as he inserted a finger in me causing me to release an even louder moan

Him: hmmm you are so wet baby. I love it when you are this wet

I wrapped my legs around his waist in the attempt of pulling him closer so he can enter me but he wasn't having any of that

Him: what's the rush mamakhe?

His other hand was now on my boob, pulling and twisting my nipples sending electrifying shocks throughout my body. My hand was on his hard king, stroking it up and down making him groan endlessly. The moment I felt his precum on my hand, I knew I wanted him right there and then

Me: baby please

Him: please nton baby?

Without warning he slammed into me and I screamed his name. We made love for 3 hours then just laid in bed. My kids were probably starving where they are. I had my head on his chest, listening to his heartbeat and drawing patterns on his chest

Me: can't we spend forever laying like this

Him: lol and what about work? The kids? Food?

Me: we'll quit work, send the kids to my mother and we can eat each other

I gently bit his chest and he laughed out loud. Soso has the kind of laugh that makes anyone laugh so here we are in bed, in each other's arms just laughing

Him: I love you so much baby

Me: I know my love. I love you more but let's get clean and go see our kids

When we got downstairs, Sno was helping Shaun with a school project while the twins played the playstation, Alwande and Yaya weren't in sight while owele were watching tv in the other lounge and Limile was in the kitchen doing lord knows what.

Me: hey guys

I was where the twins were but all I got were waves, no one looked up. That's how they are ke when they are playing that thing of theirs so I stood in front of the tv

Loy: what the hell ma

Me: askies

Loy: uxolo mama but please move

Me: in whose house? And why aren't you playing in the game room anyway?

Q: the tv is being weird. Dad said he will look at it today. Mama move please

I clicked my tongue and left them. These kids hardly get out the house but thats changing today. I walked into the kitchen, made breakfast with the help of Limile. I made Soso a greasy breakfast while I had a fruit smoothie then served him and left him. I told Limile to call everyone into the lounge

Me: we are going to the beach so please go get ready because we are leaving in 20mins

Loy: can I stay?

Me: no one stays. We all leaving

I packed fruit juice, fruit slices and made sandwiches and packed everything in a coolerbag then changed and waited for Soso and his kids

Me: Ma are you coming?

MaRose: hayi mntanam. Kushushu phandle. USno uyahamba

Me: lol ok ma

After a good 30mins all the kids were ready but before we left there was a buzz at the gate. I opened up then there was a knock at the door

Me: Qhawe hambovula

He did as told and in walked a ghost of Soso's past ngavele ngaNaar but I wasn't about to show it, worse ke Lwandiso wasn't in the room

Njalo: oh good. I thought I was lost. Bendithi ndinikwe iaddress ewrong. Molweni guys. Akushushu phandle. Uright Lwa?

Ngavele ngambuka up and down and internally questioned her sanity. I don't know ukuthi wangfunani lomfazi. How bored is she to rock up at her ex's house on a Sunday afternoon? uzothini nje lana? iscefe on a Sunday

Season 3

Insert 75

Lwa

I didn't have the energy to get into an altercation with Luminjalo especially not in front of my children

Me: guys please pack the things in the car. Yaya and Alwa make sure the twins are buckled up kahle and Loyiso hambobiza utatakho please

Luminjalo just stood in the middle of my house while my kids rushed around her. Bengaz ukuthi akazile kimi so i wasn't going to pay much attention to her

Njalo: ndiyabulisa kalok Lwa kuthen wamuncu nje wethu? Uright kodwa?

Me: angithi uyabona ukuthi we are getting ready to leave manje nginganaki izingane zam mina because Michelle Obama has entered the house. Awuphume kimi Luminjalo

Her: tchin thiza yinton ngawe sisi? Well anyway I'm here to see your husband so wena nceda ke Mrs wakhe uyombiza and I'm thirsty mahn khawenza noma iLiquifruit or iSavanna.

Heeeh ngezwa ithi xhifi inhliziyiyo but ngazibamba for the sake of being civil and lady like. She walked into the lounge and dropped herself on the couch as Soso and his son came down the stairs

Soso: mamakhe uthi uLoy uyandbiza

Me: we are leaving and you have a visitor

He frowned his eyebrows and gave me a questioning look, almost using his eyes to ask ukuthi ivisitor ewubani leyo

Me: its in the lounge. You will find us in the car and lock up maseniphuma

It was like he became more confused and I wasn't in the mood to entertain his confusion

Him: yima kalok baby. Kwenzeka nton?

Me: tatakhe just go into the lounge, talk to your visitor then we will leave

Ngaphuma noLoyiso, leaving him to attend to his guest.

*

*

Soso

When my eyes fell on the woman in my lounge, ndavela ndabhoreka same time and stood against the wall with my arms folded ndamjonga. Its as if she sensed my presence because she turned around and smiled as if she's been casted in a colgate advert

Njalo: Lwandiso. Long time, no see. Yizapha and let's catch up

She patted the empty seat of the couch indicating that I should come sit next to her but I didn't move from where I was standing

Me: ufuna nton Luminjalo?

Her: ical catch up session or are we enemies ngok?

Me: yey sundigezela fondin. Ndyayaz ukuba awukho muncu ngalohlobo. Uyabona ukuba siyahamba so thetha lonto ofuna ukuyithetha uhambe

Her wide smile soon turned into a frown xa ebona ukuba andinalo ixesha lobubhanxa mna. She sighed then got serious

Her: uhm Soso ndifuna uncedo lwakho. I lost my job a few months back and I've struggled to find another job

Waske wathula umntu when I'm still waiting for her to continue to the point of this conversation

Me: pho mna ndingenaphi? Yey ntombazane thetha ukhawuleze lundimele ulwandle neSea breeze fondin

Her: ndifuna umsebenzi Lwandiso. I know your office doesn't have a legal department but I was hoping you could find a way

Me: ndivule idepartment entsha mna because wena uphelelwe ngumsebenzi?
Awuphambani na Luminjalo?

I didn't have any energy left to listen to her so I just indicated ukuba ndyahamba mna ngoku so she needs to leave. I know she was taking advantage of the fact that I used to have a soft spot for her but yadlula kudala lonto. Andimkhathalele uLuminjalo mna anymore

Her: Soso ndyakcela. I'm desperate here. I have bills that won't stop pilling up. I have a 16year old that is driving me crazy with his demands

Me: I'm leaving. My family is waiting for me so you need to leave

She slowly got up and walked towards me and we walked out together then I locked up. Wahamba naye

*

*

Lwa

The whole way to the beach was just one awkward trip but the kids were having a conversation amongst themselves

Me: do you know where Mike and Pali left their kids?

Cwaka. No response from my husband, I don't think he was even listening to me

Me: baby ngikhuluma nawe

Soso: askies sthandwa. Andikuvanga.

This time he even turned to look at me then turned his eyes back to the road. I repeated my question

Him: they are with my parents. They wanted to bring them to us but I refused.

Me: good. 10 kids are too much. We'd go crazy

Ukufika kwethu at the beach it wasn't packed so I laid a big towel on the sand while uSoso wamisa the big umbrella and the kids changed and went into the water noSno. Mina nobaby sahlala and watched them. I could easily tell that iguilt yevisit

kaLuminjalo was eating him up but I wasn't gona to say anything. Uzozikhulumela masethanda

Him: this was a good idea yaz baby. I think the couches were already getting holes in them the way the kids are always glued on them

I gave him a smile, it was genuine and he smiled back at me. We watched our kids swimming and playing while we had small talk here and there. At the end of it all, it turned out to be a beautiful family day.

Weeks passed and it was now the end of November. Alwa and the twins were done with exams so they weren't going to school anymore so while I was at work I received a please call me from Qhawe. As per usual I called him back using the office phone

Q: hey mama

Me: yah boy what's going on?

Him: that lady is here. Uthi ukhangela utata

Me: what lady? And kutheni ungasendelanga utatakho ucall back?

Him: la mama owaye apha last month when we went to the beach

My alarm bells instantly rang and I knew ukuthi ukhuluma ngoLuminjalo. I've had it with idisrespect yalosisi. She knows very well that Soso works and there is no way he'd be at home ngalesiskhathi

Me: ok I'll be home soon. Don't tell her though, just tell her that daddy is coming

Him: ok mama

I hung up then started packing my things. It was already 12pm which is lunch time anyway but I went to report to the boss first. When he told me to come in, I walked towards his desk and sat opposite him

Me: do you mind if I take the rest of the day off? I'm not feeling well

A look of worry immediately washed over his face. He is most probably asking himself what's wrong since I don't even look sick

Soso: what's wrong?

Me: I have cramps. I think my periods are on the way. I just need to lay down

Him: ok baby I'll check on you later

We shared a short kiss then I left the office and drove to his parents' house and luckily, I found his mother alone. After getting the greetings out the way, I got straight to the point

Me: ma, do you still have that sjambok you once told me about

S's mom: yes, I do dear. Why?

Me: I just need to borrow it. I'll bring it back ngeWeekend

She seemed a bit skeptical but she gave it to me then I drove to my house. Today I'm going to teach Luminjalo a lesson she will never forget. I'm sick and tired of her nonsense and disrespect, I've let her treat me like a doormat for way too long and enough is enough. When I got home I found her in the lounge with a jug of juice and a glass in front of her. She was at home ke mntakwethu kushoda nje ukuthi abeke izinyawo on the table

Me: sanbona

Sno: hey and bye sisi

I had the sjambok hidden in my work bag so there was nothing suspicious

Me: take the kids with you. Uyolanda oYaya angithi?

Her: yebo

They all left and I was left with Njalo

Me: you are waiting for Lwandiso right?

Njalo: yep. That boy of yours said he will be home soon

Me: alright. Let me change then I'll make you a snack or something

She flashed me a fake smile and I returned it with one of my own. My heart was racing due to the adreneline but the anger was even stronger than ever. After changing into my leggings and vest, I grabbed a bottle of baby oil and the sjambok and returned downstairs, starting in the room that used to be the nursery, poured the

whole bottle on to the far end of the room then hid the sjambok in the cupboard by the door ngaphuma

Me: I think you should wait for him in the study since he will be here soon and I'm sure you guys will need a bit of privacy

You know when a person looks at you like they know you might be up to no good? That's how she looked at me but she was still stupid enough to trust me. I led her to the room I was in a few minutes ago and by the time she realized it wasn't the study, I had already locked the door. What made me laugh the most was that she was wearing heels so this was going to be so easy

Njalo: yinton le Lwa? What are you up to?

Me: me? That's what I should be asking you. Uyifunani indoda yam?

Her: lol still as insecure as ever even when you have a ring and his surname.
AwunaConfidence girl

Season 3

Insert 76

Lwa

Njalo: what else could I want from Lwandiso apart from his dick? Uyayaz mos that he knows his way around pussy

I opened the cupboard with the sjambok and took it out. She looked at me in disbelief and started laughing as if I just told her a huge joke

Her: lol what are you planning to do with that? Don't mess with me Lwandile, I'll mop the floor with that plastic weave of yours

I hit the sjambok against the cupboard wathuka uLuminjalo but still acted tough kodwa when I walked towards her, kwaphela ukusa and fear took over her face

Me: no, Luminjalo you shouldn't mess with me

It was as if a higher power took over me and all I saw was red. My body was shivering due to the anger and I was too angry to stop myself as I whipped her all over her body with the sjambok

Her: what the fuck? Uyaphambana wena?

Her voice sounded miles away as I whipped her over and over again until I got tired. I wanted her to feel the pain I've felt because of her, the hell she put me through when I was pregnant with Yaya. I wanted to beat that stinking attitude out of her and ukumqeda ubufebe. She kept trying to fight back but she was slipping all over the floor.

Her: Lwa please. I'm sorry, ok. Please just let me go. Ndiyakcela. Let me go

I was breathing heavily, covered in sweat and exhausted. Both mentally and physically

Me: I want you to leave and never come back here. I want you to stay away from me, my husband and my family and if you even think of reporting me to the police, you will regret it. Nxa

The moment I opened the door my eyes landed on Lwandiso and I froze instantly. All that confidence, courage and bad bitch attitude I had while I was beating Luminjalo was gone. I was like a child standing in front of my father at that moment and I was shaking in my boots

Me: Soso...uhm what are you doing here?

He cocked his eyebrows before clicking his tongue and roughly pushing me out the doorway wangena eroomini causing me to turn around and follow him with my eyes. He took one look at Luminjalo then turned to look at me

Me: what the fuck, Lwandile?

I got a fright because hearing Lwandiso shout at me was foreign to my ears. No matter how angry he gets, he never shouts at me. He walked over to where Njalo was curled up and he almost slipped because of the oil and again his eyes fell on me. I wasn't ashamed or feeling bad for what I did. She asked for it and I gave it to her

Me: baby I can explain

Him: Lwandile if you know what's good for you, you will shut the fuck up. I can't believe you did this

He helped Njalo up but she flinched to his touch. She had red bruises all over her arms and legs luckily there were no open wounds. He lifted her into his arms and jealousy filled me to the pit of my stomach

Me: Lwandiso

My voice came out as a whisper. He was now passing me at the door with ubitchikazi in his arms. He didn't even stop to look at me, he just walked out and a few minutes later I heard the front door slam shut. He left with her and only then did I consider the consequences of my actions. What if me beating her up has driven him back to her? But nah, Soso loves me. He wouldn't leave me for that skank.

I woke up around midnight because I was hungry. I had skipped dinner, I didn't have the energy to do anything so after leaving the room I had beat Njalo in, I took a bath ngalala. What made matters worse is that I woke up to an empty bed, Soso didn't come home lokhu ehambe noLuminjalo. I got out of bed and made my way

downstairs, warmed my food then tried calling Soso but he didn't answer. A lump rose to my throat and my eyes filled with tears. I can't lose him. Not now. My thoughts were interrupted by the beeping sound of the microwave which instantly brought me back to reality. I took my food out, poured myself a glass of milk then went to eat in front of the tv while watching a recorded episode of Isibaya. Half way through my meal, I heard the front door open so my eyes averted from the tv to the door and in walked my husband. I made sure to check the time and it was 00:17am. I know for a fact that he saw the lights switched on in the kitchen and that he definitely saw me sitting in the lounge but he walked past like there was no one there and I just lost my appetite right there and then

*

*

Soso

Being married to someone for 11 years means you know the person quite well, you know what makes them laugh, cry and angry but most importantly you learn to spot the things they do when they are lying. When my wife told me she wasn't feeling well, I knew she was lying but I figured maybe she was planning a surprise for me. When Sno called me an hour later informing me that she thinks Njalo was attacking Lwa, that was not the surprise I was hoping for. I know Luminjalo can be bitchy but her bark is always bigger than her bite. Lamntana is all talk and no action but Lwa on the other hand is action all the way so I definitely knew it was Lwa that was doing the attacking. I tried calling her phone but it rang unanswered several times so I drove home. All the kids were playing outside but when I walked into the house, there were screams coming from the nursery. I banged the door over and over again but no one opened until I had given up. The moment ndibona uLuminjalo curled up on the floor and Lwa holding a sjambok, I knew hell had broken loose. How could Lwa beat someone to such a state? What angered me the most was that I, as the man of this house have never laid a hand on anyone. I didn't choose to help Njalo because I cared about her or whatever nonsensical idea that was most probably going through my wife's head but I chose to do it because I needed to. She wasn't going to cope or drive in her state. Seeing the hurt and heartbreak in my wife's eyes as she watched

me carry another woman in my arms was enough to erase the anger and replace it with my own heartbreak.

Njalo: where are you taking me?

Me: the hospital

I had just reversed out the yard when I heard her voice for the first time since I rescued her from my wife

Her: no. No hospitals please. They'll ask too many questions. Just take me home

Me: Njalo you are hurt badly. You need a doctor

Her: I said no Lwandiso. I'll go to the doctor on my own. I don't want your help

I looked at her and she wasn't even looking my direction, she looked broken and traumatized. Andimaz loNjalo endimbona apha. We arrived at her flat ndamnceda getting in and placed her on the couch then ran her a bath ndafaka isavlon then went back to the lounge.

Me: yizohlamba Njalo

Her eyes widened, she was shocked and scared at the same time

Her: you have done enough Soso. Enkosi

Me: stop being stubborn and let me help you. Its the least I can do. Yonke lento yifault yam

She nodded gently then I helped her out of her clothes washiyeka ngepanty qha then I lifted her ndayomfaka kwibath tub wancwinya the moment the water came into contact with her body

Me: uxolo vah

She smiled faintly then nodded again. I bathed her using a sponge then helped her stand up wrapped her with a towel then took her to her room

Me: uzokwaz uyithambisa mos

Her: ewe

I could tell she was trying her best to distance herself from me and I was ok with that. I wasn't going to push her

Me: ndizawukwenzela ukutya then tuck you in before I leave

Again, that look of fear took over but ndamshiya before she tried convincing me not to. Andaz noba ndizawuthini xa uNjalo ethi ufuna upressa icharges because if Lwa wasn't my wife bendizothi she should press charges Bendizamyisa ngokwam. After cooking I dished up for us and we ate together during an awkward silence

Me: Luminjalo

Her: hmmm

She was staring at the tv and not even giving me her attention

Me: Njalo ndcela undijonge

She turned her head and the moment our eyes locked tears rolled down her face wakhala umntana bantu and worse ke she didn't want me to hold her. I felt useless and I hated that feeling more than anything in the world. A man should never just sit and watch a woman cry. Yes, she isn't my woman but a woman shouldn't cry kanje

Me: ndcela uxolo. I'm really sorry she did this to you

Emva kwexesha elide she spoke up. Bendiseze ndacimela ke mna

Her: I don't blame you and I don't blame Lwa. I provoked her

Season 3

Insert 77

Soso

I looked at her as she slept next to me and wondered how someone so beautiful, kind, loving and caring could do something so hurtful to someone else. I know my wife has problems handling her anger but I never thought it would get this far. I stared at her for what felt like forever before I decided to get out of bed. We had slept in the same bed last night just so the kids don't get alarmed but I was still very angry about lento ayenze kuNjalo. When I got out the shower my navy 3piece suit was laid on the bed while my checked shirt was hanging from the hanger and I heard shuffling going on in the closet but zange ndahoya. I got dressed and only then my wife came out with her outfit of the day in her arms. She was still in her robe

Lwa: morning tatakhe

She walked over to me and pecked my lips but I didn't bother responding. I wasn't going to pretend like we are all good when clearly, we not

Her: I was thinking maybe we can drive to work together today vele I have nothing out of the ordinary to do today. So, what do you say?

Again, I said nothing instead I took my phones, car keys and wallet ndaphuma bumping into uKwandile in the passage

Kwandi: morning daddy

Me: morning boy

We walked down the stairs with me trying to fasten my wristwatch. It was still early so the kids were not down for breakfast yet but Sno was in the kitchen getting their food ready

Me: morning

She looked up from the pan of bacon she was turning and smiled

Sno: morning bhuti

Me: please pour my coffee into a travel cup and don't dish up for me ngoba ndiyahamba ngok

She did as told and I left, obviously starting at Luminjalo's place to check on her but she wasn't alone because a boy opened the door when I knocked. He was dressed in a school uniform so I assumed it was her son

Me: eita

Boy: sho

Me: Mngqobi right?

He nodded

Me: may I please come in, I'm here to see your mom

He opened the security door and entered the apartment but Njalo wasn't in sight

Mngqobi: upha eroomini yakhe so just knock there. Ndiyahamba mna ngok, I don't want to be late

Me: alright thanks

It was after a few knocks that I heard her soft voice telling me to come in. I gently and slowly opened the door and when her eyes fell on me, she was quite surprised to see me

Me: morning

She frowned as she slowly tried sitting up

Njalo: ufuna nton apha Lwandiso?

Me: ndizokcheckisha nje qha. How are you feeling? Did you take the painkillers?

Her: ewe ndiright mahn. Stop fussing and you should stop coming here before your wife catches you and takes it out on me.

I bowed my head as it hit me that she was blaming me for yonke lento and maybe I am to blame

Me: ndizawuyeka xa sendibona ukuba uright nyan. Anyway come. Get out of bed, I'll make you something to eat then I'll leave

Her: you don't have to

Me: but I want to

Sancuma sobabili at the same time as I helped her on to the couch in the lounge. I folded my shirt at the sleeves then made her a bowl of cereal ndamshiya esatya ndahamba ndaya emsebenzini and as I parked my car, Lwa's car parked next to mine saphuma at the same time

Lwa: ungishiyeleni?

Me: bendithe ndzakmela?

Waske wathula so I proceeded walking to the entrance, greeted Liz then got to work. Around lunch time I received a visit from Jason and I had to stop working ngoba he wouldn't stop talking

Jay: ebezayithini isjambok umfaz wakho phezolo?

Me: uyazi njan ukuba she took it?

He had made himself comfortable on the couch in my office. Unjalo ke uJason

Jay: ndixelelwe ngumama. So, what happened?

I sighed as I leaned back on the chair with my head thrown back

Me: uLwa ubethe uLuminjalo

Jason was finished, he laughed so hard that tears started coming out while I on the other hand saw nothing funny about this whole thing.

Him: lol dude, are you serious? Yho umfaz wakho unesbhindi seTriple decker mos. Akoyiki ukubanjwa?

Me: andimaz fondin. Luckily, I don't think Njalo will press charges

Him: so xa esitsho uthi umbethele nton?

Me: exelela bani? Andithethi namageza mna Jason and worse ke yena kaboni ngxaki ngalewei

Jason gave me a weird look most probably for the fact that ndigqiba ubiza umfaz wam ngegeza but she did behave like a psychopath

*

*

Lwa

After work I picked the twins up from soccer practise then we drove home. They were talking on their own while my mind was miles away. Soso was still mad at me but if I was to tell him I'm sorry, I'd be lying to him because I wasn't sorry. It was his fault that Luminjalo shows me no respect as his wife, he is too soft on her so I handled her myself. I've been asking him for years to get that woman out of our lives and he has failed over and over again. When we got home, his car was in the drive way so I just parked next to it

Me: shower first then homework guys

Twins: ok mama

Soso was in the kitchen eating ice cream with owele and uKwandile yena was at his happiest because he is an ice cream addict

Me: hey guys

I kissed their foreheads

Kwandi: daddy came back with lots of ice cream. You want some mama

Me: I want some of yours

Kwando: have some of mine too mama

I took a spoonful from each of their bowls then another from Soso's bowl just to test the waters but he paid me no attention and I left him. Upstairs I changed into my bikini, wrapped a towel around my lower body then went to swim. It was way too hot to sit in the house and the water felt refreshing on my skin and was also doing wonders for my clustered mind. I swam for close to an hour then when I got out, Soso was sitting on the deck chairs looking at me.

Me: hey

Soso: we need to talk

Me: now?

Him: if I wanted us to talk next week then I was going to come to you next week

I wanted to click my tongue so badly but ngazibamba

Me: let me take a quick shower then we will talk in your study

I left him there ngayogeza then wore my short pyjamas with a matching vest ngaya kuye and found him on his chair with his head thrown back and his eyes closed.

Even when I sat opposite him, he kept them closed

Him: I just have one very simple question. Why? Why did you do it?

Me: those are two questions

He slowly opened his eyes, leaned forward and placed his hands on his desk. He kept his eyes narrowed

Him: Lwandile

Me: she was asking for it. Angimsukelanga uLuminjalo. She came into my house and got what she was looking for

Him: and you couldn't have been civil with her and talk to her? You just had to get violent? What are the kids supposed to learn from what you did? Ulwela indoda at your age? Indoda that has always been yours

Me: civil? Where has being civil with Luminjali gotten us? For 12years we've been civil with her and she keeps coming back. Don't expect me to say I'm sorry because I'm not. Given the opportunity, I'd beat her again.

He let out a sigh then closed his eyes and massaged his temples

Him: Lwandile you are a married woman, a mother and your behavior should match that. I get that Njalo has caused you a lot of pain and maybe my methods of handling her haven't been effective but it really didn't have to come to this

Me: are you still in love with her? Is that why you carried her out of her? Why you spent the whole night with her? And I'm sure you went to her this morning as well.

Him: the only person I'm in love with is you. I was merely just helping Njalo because she was in pain. Baby its always been you but you need to stop this madness.

Please. Ok?

Me: keep her away from us and my house then I'll have no reason to beat her

Him: after what you did, I won't need to. She will keep herself away

Good. She better keep herself away or else next time I'll put her in a coma. I got up from the chair and sat on my husband's lap causing him to smile as his hands reached for my ass. I wrapped my arms around his neck then pecked his lips

Me: still love me?

Him: forever and always.

We shared a long kiss causing me to start grinding on his lap as I felt his manhood harden under me. He let out a groan and I quickened my pace then he got up with me still on him and placed me on the couch

Him: you know I'm going to have to punish you right?

I smiled because I knew his punishments involved sex and sex is exactly what I want right now. I just need a mind-blowing orgasm to release all this tension.

Season 3

Insert 78

Lwa

Me: how's Asemahle now?

KK: angaz sis. She isn't taking my calls and she already went home

Me: I wonder umenzi umntana bantu and I hope you didn't cheat on her

I was laying on my back on a towel outside by the pool talking to KK on the phone. It was 2years later, a week away from christmas and the december sun was showing off so we were spending the day with our friends having a braai and swimming. KK and I soon wrapped up our conversation. I walked into the house to charge my phone and just as I had connected the charger I heard the door close and I turned around to find babe behind me

Me: lol what are you doing here?

Him: i missed my wife. You've been chilling with your friends all afternoon and not paying me any attention

My man is such a big baby and you'd swear the older the kids get, the more his baby behavior increases

Me: awutefi kanje kodwa Smith wam

Within minutes I felt his hand grab my ass giving it a gentle squeeze causing me to let out a squeal as he bit my neck

Me: hayi baby we have guests

Him: they won't even notice we are gone. Just one round nje baby

We heard footsteps coming towards our door then seconds later the door started banging

Nomz: can you two stop fucking and come outside? Wena Lwandiso stop being so pussy whipped

Bae and I looked at each other and started laughing softly then he shook his head

Him: iichom zakho amageza nyan

I pecked his cheek taking his hand into mine saphuma and Noma wasn't at the door anymore

Him: baby she is gone. Yiza kalok

Me: lol later baby. I promise. Let's go be good hosts.

The rest of the afternoon was nothing but fun, all the kids were with their grandparents so we were just having the time of our lives without any responsibilities. It was me, Soso, Enzo, Nomz, Lolz, Sedi, AP, Jay, Mike, Pali and Ovayo (one of Jay's floozies). We all had our feet in the water since it was already dark and just having a crazy conversation because alcohol was taking its toll on us

Jay: I think ndifuna umntana ngoku guys

Just like a choir, we all laughed at the same time. Jason must be either too drunk or high ngoba this was unlike him

Jay: yinton guys? I'm 38years old and I need a mini me now

AP: I don't think I'm drunk enough for this. Sedi please pass me iHunters dry in the coolerbox

Sedi passed the green bottle yaze yafika kuAP nami I requested my hunters gold but uBae refused ngamyeka because I didn't want to fight with him in front of our friends

Mike: so big bro since ufuna umntana ngok, uthi uzomfumanaphi since you are not about the commitment life

Jay: surrogate or something

Ovayo gave him a death stare ngavele ngahleka kancane but Soso nudge my ribcage gently with his elbow then shook his head. I mouthed "what" at him and all he said was "hayi baby"

Ovayo: tchin Jason are we not in a committed relationship mna nawe?

Jason took a gulp of his beer then turned to his lady for the day

Jay: baby we are not even in a relationship. Ndakuxelele mos ukuba I don't do relationships

Ovayo: but...actually never mind

Jay: good. Suza nedrama fondin. Ubuseza kakuhle suyimosha ngok

I don't know whether its desperation or what but why would you let a guy talk to you like that? I don't care if his penis is made of strawberries and cream, if we are intimate, you owe me a certain level of respect, especially in front of your friends. Anyway, during the course of the night, the guys went to buy more alcohol leaving us ladies to talk amongst ourselves

AP: Ovayo right?

She was directing her question to icherry kaJay and she responded with a nod

AP: umfuna nyan umntana kaJason?

She didn't respond but instead she smiled and took a sip of her wine

Lolz: are you blushing? Tchin lomntana. Please don't tell me you are in love with that idiot

Ovayo: he is hot, rich and he spoils me plus we have this chemistry nje between us. I can't explain it but he gets me in ways no other guy does

AP: you forgot to mention that he is a man whore. Jason fucks everything with a vagina so if I were you I'd get rid of that fairytale you have going on in your head

The poor girl went from blushing to depression mode within seconds so I just decided to change the topic

Me: Sedi, Lolz and AP when are you guys getting serious, relationship-wise? Guys we are almost 40 yaz

Lolz: I'm focusing on my career babe, andinalo ixesha lendoda mna

Nomz: and which one of your patients is servicing you?

I was the first to laugh because Lolz is a child psychologist so none of her patients are legal to service her

Lolz: sundiqhela kakubi. Andithi my patients have fathers so nje I do get serviced but I don't want to date. I don't have the time. Next.

I turned my head to look at AP who was more focused on her bottle than anything else. She was staring at the damn thing like it has the answers to the secret of life

Pali: Aphile weeh.

She lifted her head and frowned at Pali who dismissed her easily

AP: yintoni?

Lolz: utyiwa ngubani ghel?

AP: yiVibrator yami mntaka dabs and andina ngxaki shame

With that said she sipped on her cider leaving us in awe. Yho I don't think I'd survive without uSmith wam. I mean sometimes sex isn't just about an orgasm, sometimes its about the kisses in sensitive areas, the touches, the feeling of being together and the cuddles and pillow talk afterwards.

Jay: tchin Aphile no wonder hlezi umuncu nje. Unqatshelwe mos

We didn't even hear them come in and as soon as AP heard what Jason said, wamthela with the contents of her liquor bottle

AP: tsek mahn

Jay: lol I'm sure your panties are wetter than my t-shirt right now

Me: hayi Jason mahn. Respect haw

He raised his hands in the air in defeat wathatha umuntu wakhe into the house ngoba she was being sour now. Ubaby wam took his place next to me kissed my cheek causing a smile to take over my face

Soso: uright?

Me: yeah ngiright baby

Him: ubacheckishile abantwana

I shook my head slowly feeling like such a bad parent but then again, my kids are old now. Alwa is 17, the twins are 16, Yaya is 13, Shaun is 12, Limile is 11 and owele are 7. He helped me up and we walked towards the house

Nomz: hai hai hai ibhekephi leyondlela?

Me: lol awukahle haw. We going to call the kids

We got to his study and I dialled inumber kaQhawe from the landline

Q: hello mama

Me: yah boy uright?

Him: ewe ndiright. We are watching movies noMalum Sakhile no Malum KK

Hearing that my brothers are at home made me miss home and the fact that christmas was a couple of days away wasn't helping this feeling

Q: mama, are you still there?

I had gotten so lost in my thoughts

Me: I'm here boy. Baphi owele?

Him: sleeping with ugogo nomkhulu

Me: alright. Don't stay up too late please and ngcela unike uShaun the phone

Him: lol I knew it. Stop babying the kid mama. He is old now

Me: shut up and give him the phone. Oh, and your father says hey

Q: please tell dad that the sneakers we ta-

Me: call him yourself. Now give my baby the phone. Love you

Him: love you too Mrs Smith

Everytime I do something he doesn't like, I go from mama to Mrs Smith then I have to apologise later for ukumphoxa as he calls it. I spoke to my baby boy then Soso spoke to all the kids and we hung up. He stared at me for a while then smiled and shook his head

Me: what?

Soso: you and Shaun. I'm just thinking about how you'll react when he gets his first girlfriend

Me: same way you will react when Yaya starts dating

He frowned his eyebrows and his smile disappeared ngavele ngamhleka. I can never get over how cute he is when he is overprotective over his daughters, reminds me of how my father was while I was growing up but it was worse kimi ngoba I was the only girl. Soso and I spent the rest of the week enjoying our alone time then on Christmas Eve we drove to my parents' house since I had convinced him that we should spend Christmas there. We loaded everyone's gifts in his car then left

Soso: yaz i've been meaning to talk to you about something mamakhe

Me: yini leyo baby?

Him: Mr A offered to sell me his company and I'm really considering it

Me: can we afford it? Will we still be ok afterwards?

Him: yeah, we will be but that's not what worries me.

Me: so, what's the problem then my love?

I took his free hand into mine then brought it to my lips

Season 3

Insert 79

Soso

A few weeks ago, Mr Anderson approached me with the idea of me buying his company and I figured it would be a great opportunity for me career wise but he wasn't just selling me the PE branch. He was selling me the whole company, including the head office in Jo'burg

Me: well the problem is that I'm going to have to move to Jo'burg for at least 6 months

Lwa slowly let go of my hand but remained quiet as if processing the whole thing. The look she had on her face wasn't leaving my heart at peace. I couldn't read the look so I couldn't tell how she was receiving yonke lento

Me: baby say something

Lwa: I don't want to have this conversation in the car and I don't want to think about it until we are in our bedroom

Me: but babe

Her: pull over

Me: huh

Her: stop the car

I've been confused a lot of times in my life but this takes the cup. I didn't know whether she wanted to leave me as soon as the car stops or whether she wants to just kick me out the car and drive off without me but I stopped it and immediately locked the doors. I wasn't going to take chances. She unbuckled her seatbelt then turned on her seat to look at me, the unreadable expression still painted on her face

Lwa: tatakhe the reason I wanted this trip, this christmas is because I miss my family, I miss the joyfulness that they bring into my heart and I just want to be a child again and carefree

Me: basically, you want to be happy and stressfree?

She nodded

Her: yes, so can we just sweep this whole conversation under the carpet and focus on Christmas. I'm not saying we won't talk about it because we definitely will

Me: just not this weekend?

Her: exactly sthandwa sam

I exhaled loudly then she took my hand for the second time in a short space of time causing me to lift my head and look into her eyes. For a long time I've been feeling like everytime my wife and I are in a good space, something, usually from my side just turns our world upside down. I want to build a legacy for my kids but I don't want to do that at the cost of my marriage. What would be the point if I lost my wife in the process of it all?

Her: let's go ke baby. I'm dying to see my kids and ngcela ungastressi about yonke lento, we will figure it out when the time comes

She placed another kiss on my hand then pecked my lips but I pulled her in for a deeper kisser then pulled out after a while

Me: Ndyakthanda Lwa. I can never say it enough because just saying it never feels enough

She smiled, almost blushing which calmed my racing heart and when she gave my hand a squeeze nam ndancuma

Her: I know my love and I love you even more.

2 and a half hours later we drove into the yard yakokwabo and the moment the kids saw my car, the little ones came running towards us, Kwando didn't even wait for Lwa to get out the car before jumping on her and hugging her tightly

Kwando: I missed you so much mama

Me: haw baby what about me? Wasn't I missed?

We got out the car, Lwa holding Kwando's hand and Kwandile holding my hand endibalisela about how his brothers were bullying him. I walked up to the pool area where KK and Sakhile were chilling and after we exchanged greeting, I joined in on the conversation

Me: are my in laws home?

KK: you just missed them TaLDS. Dad is picking mom up from where she is volunteering for christmas

Just then Lwa walked out with two glasses of orange juice and came to join us. She hugged her brothers before taking a seat between mna noSakhile

Sakhi: you look good little sis. Its been a long time since we've been together like this

Lwa: I know hey that's why I had to come home. I've missed you guys. Even you, little one

KK gave her an unimpressed look trying very hard not to laugh but failing dismally

KK: sis I'm 30years old, please don't call me little one. You, on the other hand could easily pull off being Alwande's twin. You are aging well

That wasn't a lie. Lwa is petite but with the curves in the right places and an ass to die for and now that she is addicted to working out, her body is tight. That's why even after being married for 13years, i still want to jump her every chance i get

*

*

Lwa

Christmas with my family was everything I wanted it to be and more. The vibe, the love and the warmth were nothing short of amazing and a bit tiring. Christmas night we were chilling outside together as a family, just without my parents since they were already asleep and Alwande was glued to her phone, smiling senselessly the whole time and her uncles noticed it

Sakhi: Alwa wahleka wedwa nje what's going on?

Before Alwa even answered, Shaun andYaya looked at each other and started laughing which caught my attention

Me: and then nina? What's going on?

Shaun: nothing mama. Askies

Sakhile was still looking at Alwande whose phone was now in her pocket

Sakhi: usuyajola yini Alwande?

Alwa: hayi malume. Andijoli

KK: good. Keep it that way

Me: hayi suka anyeke ingane yami howu. Where are your kids vele nina?

Sakhi: in a condom sis

Soso quickly closed Kwando's ears but it was already too late ngoba she had heard everything anyway

Kwando: where is condom daddy?

Soso: it's a town next to Cape Town. Malum Sakhile's kids live there

Kwando: we should visit them daddy. Andithi malume?

Sakhile, KK and I were failing at containing our laughter. Izingane zikaSoso are too alert for their age. On the 30th my family and I drove back home but lento kaAlwa was still on my mind but I trust her and I know she will come to me. Upon our arrival at the house, I was exhausted and in desperate need of a nap so while everyone was offloading things in the car, I got in my room, opened the sliding door then threw myself on the bed. When I woke up, I was feeling fresh so I just took a quick shower, wore white cotton bumshorts, a sports bra and Soso's red Miami heat basketball jersey. Put my slippers on then went downstairs where I found my husband barefoot and shirtless behind the stove cooking up a storm. Judging by the aromas all over my kitchen, he was making something delicious.

Me: hey babe

He turned around already smiling showing me his pearl white teeth

Soso: come give me a kiss

I pecked his lips and he spank my bum as I headed for the fridge and took out a small tub of Magnum ice cream then sat on the counter with my legs crossed

Me: ngcela ispoon baby then we can talk about you and Mr A

He stirred his pots a few times then took out a spoon for me and one for him wahlala next to me but with his feet dangling

Him: if you think I shouldn't do it then I won't do it. I promise

I took a spoonful then fed him and he did the same. I was contemplating what the right thing to do in all of this is. 6 months is a long time and it could be more than 6 months but then again Jo'burg isn't overseas and I know he wants this

Me: would you hate me if I said no?

Him: I could never hate you sthandwa sam

Me: but?

Him: no but. Yes, I want this but I don't want it if its going to cost me my wife and kids

Me: can I at least sleep on it? Then we can talk to the kids and get their take on this because its no longer about just us anymore.

He nodded then got off the counter to attend to his pots

Me: what are you cooking?

Him: lamb stew and pap

Me: qha?

Him: ewe mamakhe. Alwande and Yaya said they'll make salads

He was now between my legs since they were dangling over the counter

Me: where are the kids vele?

Him: twins are out, Alwa is in her room, Shaun and Yaya are swimming and owele are napping

Me: hmmm. How far are you from being done? Ngikukhumbule

A sly smile appeared on his face as his hand went for the area of my queen

Him: let me just lower the stove then ask Alwa to keep an eye on them.

By the time we got to our bedroom we couldn't keep our hands off each other. He stripped me naked while he remained in just his briefs then seductively started

kissing my neck, licking and biting it as well causing me to moan into his ear. His wet kisses made a trail from my neck to my left breast where he gently took my nipple between his teeth and nibbled it. My back arched as I dug my nails into his back. The pain from my nipples combined with my horniness was making it hard for me to control myself. Soon after he gave my right boob the same attention while his hand slowly trailed up my thigh causing me to widen my already opened thighs. I could feel his erect manhood against my hip but when I reached for it, he softly hit my hand. His trail of kisses soon got to my cleanly shaved queen where he blew air into it causing me to arch my back even further then he ran a finger up and down my queen but not entering me. I moaned loudly as his thumb pressed against my clit

Me: aaaah shit baby

He circled his thumb on my clit slowly then inserted a finger in my already dripping queen and finger fucked me slowly. The in and out movement of his fingers was causing his thumb to repeatedly rub on my clit and I could feel my orgasm brewing. He repeated this until I was about to cum then he pulled them out leaving me empty and in need of being filled. He gently turned me around to doggy style position and started rubbing his king on my queen making me want him even more then he spanked my ass

Soso: I love your ass baby. Shit

As much as I wanted to respond, a moan was sufficient and when he entered me, I grabbed onto the sheets as he had his way with me. He was slow at first but that never lasts long because as soon as my orgasm took over, he flipped me over, placed my one leg on his shoulder and my other leg wrapped around his waist. We soon heard a knock at the door. There would be no point in responding ngoba our room is sound proof but it was as if it was motivating him to go ever harder in me

Me: fuck baby. Woaw woaw slow down Smith

He shut me up with a kiss as he pinned my arms above my head and continued fucking me like there is no tomorrow. My queen walls tightened around his king and we came together

Season 3

Insert 80

Lwa

After our steamy love making session, Soso went to check on his pots but luckily Alwa had finished them up for him so I went to chill on the patio with my phone in my hand when he went to take a shower.

Me: Yaya

Yaya: ma

Ebesabela from the kitchen where I had left them making salads. She emerged from the house and stood next to me

Me: what salads are you guys making?

Yaya: greek salad, potato salad and pasta salad

Me: leave out the pasta salad, that's already too much heavy starch

Yandisa loves arguing so she will always try to convince you to see things her way and if that doesn't work, she will call her father to defend her

Yaya: the pasta is already cook nje mama

Me: then put it in the fridge, we'll have it for lunch ksasa

Yaya: fiiiiine and ksasa means morning by the way. The correct term is ngomso

I cocked my eyebrow at her then she ran away before I could start shouting at her.

An hour later I heard the twins walk in then Alwande came to where I was seated

Alwa: dabs

Me: yes baby

Her: ndicela uthetha nawe

I sat up kahle so I can listen to her. She sat down next to me with her head bowed and playing with her fingers

Me: I'm listening

Her: uhm may I please go to a party tomorrow? Its not going to be too late

Me: whose party is it?

She kept quiet and I instantly knew a boy was involved

Me: Alwande

Her: yiParty kaMnqobi

Me: who is that?

Q and Loy walked out as well and joined us. I was hoping that at least they know ukuthi ubani loMnqobi and if he was umfana oright or not

Me: Loyiso ubani uMnqobi?

He turned his head to look at Alwa who shrugged her shoulders

Loy: that guy of yours cuz?

Alwa: he is not my guy haw. We are just friends

Me: uhm excuse me. Can someone answer my question?

Q: Mnqobi is a guy that goes to our school, he is in matric, lives a street away from kwaMakhulu. He is one of those popular kids nje and Loyiso doesn't like him because of that

Loy: andimkhathaleli lamjita mna mfethu

My eyes shifted from the twins to Alwa then at Soso who was now standing at the door

Me: ok the only way I'm going to agree to this party business is if wena Alwande uhamba noLoyiso noQhawe to this party. I'll drop you off and pick you up at 10

All three of them agreed but Loyiso required a lot of convincing then they went back into the house leaving me with my husband

Soso: please don't start crying again. Its just a party

I hit him playfully then rested my head on his shoulder and he kissed my head

Me: she is growing too fast Lwandiso. She likes a guy in matric and iparty yakhe lena abaya kuyo. I know nothing about this Mnqobi boy, angibazi abazali bakhe

Him: you are going to give yourself a heart attack my love. You will meet the parents ngomso or whenever and I trust Alwa, we've raised her well.

He had a point shame, Alwande is a good child, smart and well behaved.

The following day the kids treated us to breakfast, pancakes, eggs, sausages and bacon. As I got downstairs Kwandi came rushing to me

Kwandi: mama uyangisukela uKwando.

Me: ukwenzani mfana wam?

Him: she took my ipad because daddy took hers away

Me: Kwando!!

Kwando: he is lying mama. I did nothing

She did nothing yet she is carrying my child's ipad esandleni sakhe. I didn't bother shouting at her, we just sat down as a family and had breakfast.

Soso: so, what are we going to do with the kids? Remember Enzo is hosting us for New Year's Eve

I don't know how but Enzo's party had slipped my mind and what made matters worse is that MaRose and Sno were not around

Me: we can take them to your parents

Loy: hell no mama. I'm not spending New Year's Eve with makhulu and Tamkhulu.

I turned my attention to him because if I remember correctly, I was talking to my husband not him

Me: akekho okhuluma nawe nje Loyiso and if you don't want to go to your grandparents, where will you go? All your cousins will be there so you guys can have your own little party

Q: and we can invite our friends?

Me: you will have to discuss that with umakhulu

The way Soso's parents spoil these kids, I know they will agree for them to have the party. After breakfast I took a shower, wore a mint summer dress with white sandals then applied make up and tied my braids into a half bun. Soso was dressed in black denim shorts, sky blue v-neck t-shirt and white roshe sneakers then wore a black baseball cap. We were going to drop the kids off with Soso's parents then drive to Enzo's. The party at Enzo's was amazing and we all got super drunk to the extent that AP and Jason disappeared together. We didn't get a chance to sleep so midday on the first, Soso drove us home and we slept the whole day, vele the kids were only coming back on the 3rd. The following day, bae wanted us to spend the day out as a couple so we had breakfast at Maxxis

Soso: when last did we do this?

Me: I don't even remember yaz. So, what do you have planned for us?

Him: well after breakfast, I'm taking you shopping then we are heading to the spa after that we are going to watch a movie, have a late lunch, take a walk on the beach then get takeaways so we can get home and make love the whole night

We were both smiling at each other and holding hands when the waitress brought our food and drinks. He raised his glass in the air and I mirrored him then we clicked our glasses

Him: to an amazing year ahead sthandwa sam. May our love grow stronger, our kids grow happier and our marriage grow fruitfully

Me: here here baby.

We took sips of our drinks and indulged in our meals. After our day to ourselves and spoiling each other rotten, we headed home with the food since the kids would be home anyway. They had had enough of their grandparents and came home early.

Me: hey guys

Qhawe and Alwande were in the kitchen making sandwiches. I don't know where the other kids were

Q: hey mama. Happy new year

He kissed my cheek and i smiled. I have so many men in my life though, i'm truly blessed

Me: thanks baby. Where is your twin?

Alwa: with his girlfriend

I literally choked on my saliva and sat on the highchair while Qhawe brought me a glass of water. After downing the water, i was ready to process what i just heard

Me: uphi uLoyiso?

Q: he is with Sne. His girlfriend

Me: since when does your brother have a girlfriend?

Q: since the 31st but he has had a crush on her since last year

Me: and wena? Who's your girlfriend?

He chuckled and Alwa joined him

Q: i'm a straight A student mama, i play sports so i don't have time for girls.

Alwa: lol and girls don't have time for nerds

She stuck her tongue out at him

Me: don't listen to your cousin wena boy, you are cute

He smiled then helped me dish up the takeaways. Alwa went to call the rest of the kids and Soso. I placed all the plates on the dinning room. Loyiso walked in as we were about to sit and eat so he came to join us

Me: did you wash your hands?

Loy: they are clean mama

Me: asingaxabani Loyiso. Go wash your hands

He dragged his chair back and left the room and Soso stared at me

Me: what?

Soso: that wasn't necessary baby

Me: eat your food Smith

We ate until we were done without Loyiso coming back and I knew he was throwing his tantrums so after clearing the table I went up to his room ngavula umnyango.

Loy: knocking mama

Me: in whose house?

Wathule then sat up on the bed while I sat on the chair

Me: why didn't you come down for dinner?

Loy: so uzondiphoxa for no reason?

Me: watch your words mfana wam

Loy: why? Mama all I did was walk in and you bit my head off about washing hands. Seriously mama?

Me: where were you coming from?

He cocked his eyebrows at me then checked his wristwatch and looked at me again

Him: I didn't miss curfew, I was home in time for dinner so what's the problem? I'm 16, mama come on

Me: why didn't you tell me usuyajola? I thought you and I are close nje

He let out a sigh then moved to the edge of the bed. My vision was getting blurry and I knew the tears are going to start rolling. My minion has a girlfriend, my little baby, my baby boy is 16 and dating

Him: because its not a big deal mama and I didn't tell you because its still something new to me. I was going to tell you though. I promise

Me: you should tell your father as well

Him: uhm daddy and I talked about it yesterday.

I opened my mouth widely in shock.

Season 3

Insert 81

Lwa

I don't know what hurt the most between finding out from someone else that my son is dating or that he told Lwandiso before telling me

Loy: mama please don't cry. I was going to tell you it's just that daddy is a guy and i needed pointers. Ndicela uxolo mamakhe

I laughed with the tears still rolling down my cheeks. Only Soso calls me mamakhe so Loyiso was most probably saying it to get me to laugh and it was working

Me: you are growing too fast boy. Slow down please

Him: lol tchin mama you have two other boys that are still small plus Qhawe because he will live with you until he is 40

I hit him on his shoulder and he faked a painful reaction

Me: don't say that about your brother. He will find his way at his own pace

Him: or he is just gay. Oh, Thixo I have a gay twin.

Me: lol you are so dramatic and leave your brother alone, he isn't gay. Anyway, how was the party? Did your cousin behave?

Just then his phone rang and he smiled a very broad smile

Him: can we talk later mom? I have to take this

Me: is it her?

Him: jeez mama lol you sound like a jealous mistress

Me: lol ngizokshaya wena. Goodnight baby

I kissed his head then went to check on the rest of the kids who were watching a movie in the theater room except for Shaun who was in his room playing a new video game KK got him for christmas. I said goodnight then went to bed where I found Soso on the phone and it looked a bit serious so I just left him, got naked then went to take a shower. He joined me a while later then we had innocent fun under the

water with a few stolen kisses here and there then got out when the water started getting cold. When we were in bed he laid on his back with one arm around me, my head on his chest and my thigh on his

Soso: bendithetha noMr A

Me: uthini?

Him: he wanted to know if i've decided and I told him not yet. Andifuni ukufakela ipressure sthandwa sam but have you thought about it?

I sighed. Honestly, I haven't given it any thought but what better time like the present to think about it

Him: mamakhe

Me: lol yaz Loyiso called me that earlier. Angihlekanga kanje

Him: lol he was softening you up kalok.

Me: because you guys keep secrets

Him: lol mamakhe let's not lose track please. Can I have your answer ngomso?

Me: so much for no pressure.

Him: uxolo baby but the clock is ticking

He had a point there. The new year has started and he has to decide soon. We had random talk until he passed out and I followed after. A few days passed and I agreed for him to buy the businesses then Saturday night we decided to tell the kids.

Me: guys we have something we need to talk to you about

Alwa: dabs I hope its another baby

Q: yho hayi cuz sizamthini omunye umntana? There are enough kids in this house

Soso and I looked at each other and smiled. Bayahlanya laba, I was sane when I had my womb removed, I can never have another baby but I'm glad I have the 8 I'm raising

Soso: its not a baby. Uhm I'm going to be moving to johannesburg in two weeks. I bought the company we work for so I have things to finalize at the head office

Yaya: daddy is moving away forever?

Me: of course, not princess. He will be coming here during weekends and its only for 6months

Shaun: that's a long time and does it mean you are going to be busier than you are now?

His question was directed at Soso and I wasn't going to overstep and answer so I kept quiet. I understood Shaun's concern, Soso is dedicated to his work and as much as he tries to balance it, he often failed

Soso: yes, boy but I'll always have time for you and your siblings. I'm only going to be phonecall away. I promise I will be there for you guys.

Alwande and the twins were a little too quiet for my liking and owele nabo bebethule but most probably because they were not processing any of this

Me: Loyiso? Qhawe?

Them: ma

Me: you guys are quiet. What's going on?

Loy: nothing. We are used to people leaving us and never sticking around so this isn't new to us. Bio dad left, uncle Nami and auntie Phiwe left as well so siyiqhelile lento thina

I wanted to say something but the lump in my throat stopped me and I turned my gaze from them to Soso who wasn't even looking in my direction. I wanted him to say something, something reassuring and hopeful but wavele wathula nje

Q: was that all mama? Tata?

Soso nodded slowly then Loyiso, Qhawe and Alwande got up, took the twins with and left the room so we were left with Yaya, Shaun and Limile. Silence filled the room

Yaya: I don't want you to leave daddy. Please don't leave

She got up to sit on his lap with her arms around his neck. Soso kissed her forehead then brushed her head. She was already sobbing but still talking in between her sobs

Yaya: daddy please. Daddy I'm begging you. Don't go. Tata wam ndyakcenga

I slowly got up from the couch, trying my best not to cry because watching my daughter crying like this was breaking my heart. When I got to the kitchen, Limile was right behind me

Li: can I make you tea mama?

I smiled faintly then nodded

Me: ask Shaun to help you kodwa. I don't want you to get burnt

Li: Shaun yiza kalok. Ndinga uncedo lwakho!!

Shaun: sungxola ndiyeza

After they made my cup of tea, they went upstairs and a while later Soso walked up the stairs with Yaya in his arms, I assume she was already sleeping then a few minutes later he walked into the kitchen but stood at the doorway staring at me. I didn't have energy to speak to him so ngavele ngathula until he walked in and sat next to me

Soso: baby

Me: hmmm

Him: talk to me

Me: ngithini kodwa Lwandiso? This thing is doing more harm than good. These kids love you more than life itself and to the older ones it just feels like you are another person leaving them, Yaya is losing her King and owele have no idea what's going. Shaun and Limile are the only ones that understand this.

He sighed loudly then placed his head on his arms on the counter. The defeat was evident through his body language

Me: they will come around hopefully

Q: no, we won't. We need you, tata and seeing you 3 days every week isn't going to be enough. I get that wena nomama niyayfuna lento but what about what we want?

I didn't even see or hear him come in until he started speaking. By now Soso's head was lifted from his arms and he was looking at Qhawe who was now leaning over the counter in front of us

Me: I need sleep right now so I'm going to let you guys have this conversation.

I got up, kissed their cheeks then made my way upstairs to check on my babies. I found them in their room arguing as usual

Me: shouldn't you guys be in your pyjamas and in bed?

Mind you they are arguing in their underwear. Carefree

Kwando: mama I don't want to share my room with him anymore. He is stressful

Me: lol what do you know about stress na Kwando

I was helping her get into her pyjamas then helped her brother

Kwandi: mama Kwando is a bully

Kwando: and you are a baby

Me: animeni guys. Did you guys hear what daddy said earlier?

They shook their heads and I knew it. They were not listening but then again, the tv was on and their attention span is short

Me: well daddy is going to leave in a couple of days but its not forever.

Kwando: hawu so daddy won't take us to school anymore? I want to go with daddy

Me: so, you want to leave me? Ngedwa?

She kept quiet for a while as if weighing her options

Kwandi: does daddy have to go?

Me: yes, but he will be taking you guys out every weekend. You won't even notice that he is gone

We continued talking about nonsense until they fell asleep, I tucked them in then went to bed. I'll talk to the other kids tomorrow. A few hours later I felt Soso getting in bed then he held me from the back and kissed my shoulder. Following day I had plans with the girls so I woke up, made breakfast then took a shower and got

dressed. I wore denim shorts, white shirt that i tucked in the front and white superstars. I applied my make up and Soso walked in while I was checking myself out in the mirror. He sat on the edge of the bed just looking at me

Me: staring is rude Lwandiso

Soso: not when I stare at what belongs to me

Me: lol so how do I look?

I did a twirl for him and he whistled at me. My husband can be so silly at times

Season 3

Insert 82

Lwa

I picked AP from her place then we went to pick up Lolz. Nomz and Pali were going to come with their own cars vele so I drove us to the shiyanyama and it was packed despite it being a Sunday but luckily AP knew the manager so he led us to our table

AP: enkosi mahn Vince, you are heavenly sent

Vince winked at her then left us while a waitress came to take our orders

Waitress: molweni my name is Cleo and I'll be your waitress for today

She faked smile and I returned it with an even faker smile if there is even such

Me: ngcela ired square yeApple gal

Lolz: get me ice tropez please

AP: I'll have hunters dry and we will order meat when the rest of our friends get here

She took down our orders then left

Me: so how have you guys been? Haven't seen you guys since new years

AP: ndcela singathethi ngeNew years guys. Ndinenhloni njan. Yho

I then remembered that my dear friend disappeared with Jason that night and even on the first, they were no where to be seen

Lolz: heeeh kanene wena noFuck boy naduka

AP: I don't want to talk about it guys. Please

Me: lol heeeh Aphile. Claps once

Cleo and her fake smile returned with our drinks then left again. This girl had zero customer service shame but I wasn't going to entertain her. Nomz and Pali walked in, I waved at them since they were looking around aimlessly then beza kithi. We shared hugs then bahlala

Pali: lona lanwa already?

Me: we were not going to wait for you guys. Should I call the waitress for you?

Nomz: please lover

I signalled for her to come over, my friends placed their orders for drinks then we ordered our meat and chilled

Nomz: Lwa uLiyana wants to come for a sleepover kwakho. Uthi she misses owele

Lolz: woaw woaw woaw stop die lorry, we are not discussing kids or husbands today. Its a girl's day out and that's what it shall remain

Nomz: mxm uyaphapha Lolothando. Angaz awumithi ngani nje

Lolz: mina? A mom? Hell no. I could never do that to myself

AP drank the remainder of her drink in one go then slammed the empty bottle on the table, instantly grabbing our attention

Pali: what's with the drama Aphile?

AP: askies guys. I'm just frustrated with myself

Nomz: sexual frustrations getting to you?

Lolz: lol anything but that. Kalok Jason's dick game is kwi PHD level mntaka bawo

AP frowned her eyebrows then turned her whole body to look at Lolz. Well Nomz and I know that Lolz and Jay had a fling years ago but that was all it was

AP: wazi njani wena?

Nomz: leave that, did you and Jason...you know?

Pali: say it Nomz. AP did you fuck Jason?

AP: I'll answer when Lolz answers. Lolz yiza nazo wethu

Lolz: ok fine, no need to beg. We hooked many years ago man. Nothing serious, just holiday fun since he had a girlfriend anyway and mandiycinga kakuhle it was around this time but kudala ke

AP looked like she was hit by a bus. I know it stings a bit to find out that you and a friend have hooked up with the same guy at some point but it shouldn't be a factor if neither of you love the guy. Le look ka AP yona yayixaka

AP: i need a stronger drink

Nomz: AP don't tell me you are upset manje. Over Jason out of all people.

AP: how could I sleep with him? He sleeps with everything that has a vagina and it doesn't help that he is so great in the sack

We all looked at her and clearly that last part was meant to be a thought that stayed in head. Anyway, our meat arrived and we dug in keeping the conversation light and the drinks kept flowing. I was having a great time with my girls, talking, laughing and just letting lose

Me: i need to get myself a vibrator, guys. Soso is moving to Jo'burg in two weeks

Lolz: husband talk? Khanimeni guys tjo

Nomz: ignore lesislima Lwa. Why is he moving?

Me: we bought Anderson and Sons so he has to be at the Jo'burg office until June

Pali: wow that's great news friendship. You get to be your own boss, well and my boss as well

Nomz: look at it this way chomi, 6months isn't that long and you and Soso are strong, you can get through anything

AP: and this is for you and the kids. It will be worth it in the long run

I smiled faintly then Lolz held my left hand while Pali squeezed my right hand.

*

*

Soso

Last night Qhawe and I didn't talk much because emotions were still high, I needed them to be calm before I can revisit the conversation. The next day after Lwa had left, I wanted to spend some quality time with the kids but I didn't know what to do with them. It was around 2pm when I walked into the lounge, Alwa was busy texting on her phone, Shaun and Li were playing a video game, owele were in the other lounge and Loyiso and Qhawe were not in sight

Me: Alwa where are your cousins?

Alwa: gym I think. Well uQhawe usegymini and I think uLoyiso useMall noSne

Me: ohh. Let's go out. We will have lunch then go to the beach

Alwa: or we could go shopping.

Me: ok shopping it is then. For school uniforms that is

She sulked but ended up going upstairs to change then came down with Qhawe, Yaya and owele all dressed up and ready to go. What surprised me was that Qhawe was going with us as well

Me: ready to go?

Yaya: yep. Dumb and dumber don't want to go with us

I frowned my eyebrows in confusion, kalok andimaz uDumb and dumber mna

Alwa: lol she is talking about Li and Shaun malum

Me: hai Yandisa don't call them that. These are your brothers

Q: you should see them though daddy. They woke up at 6am and have been in the game room playing that stupid video game. They are still in their PJs

I tossed the car keys to Qhawe then went into where the boys were. There were cereal bowls on the floor, snacks and empty packets all over the place and they were on the bean bags holding on to the joysticks for dear life

Me: boys

Them: daddy

Me: we are leaving but if you want to come with, we'll wait for you guys

Li: nah we good daddy

Shaun: Just bring us food please

Me: ok but when mama comes back you guys better have showered and this room better be clean. Understand?

Them: uh huh

When we got to the mall we started with the shopping, we bought uniforms first then we went to Cotton On since the girls wanted new clothes. I sat on the benches with my sons while we waited

Me: you should call your brother so we can have lunch together

Q: with the girlfriend?

Me: yeah, its fine

Then something caught my eyes, the bumshorts Yaya was holding didn't put my mind at ease so I called her over with her shorts

Me: I'm not paying for that so you better put them back

Yaya: but daddy they are so nice and they fit me perfectly

Me: I don't care, put them back. I won't have my daughter walking around with no clothes on

Her: but daddy

Q: put them back Yaya and finish up. We also have clothes to buy

Yaya stuck her tongue out at her brother then left to put the shorts back. When they were done, I paid then we left for Truworths and luckily the boys were not that fussy then our last stop was Sportscene. I knew that's where my wallet was going to be dented the most

Me: guys one pair each please

Q: I'll get a pair for Loy as well and he said he will wait for us at Spur

I nodded then grabbed a pair of red and black Nike Air Force sneakers for Li and the same pair but in blue and black for Shaun. As I headed to the counter, I saw Njalo and her son walking in and I could be wrong but I swear I saw Alwa blushing as she rushed to Qhawe. Njalo and I shared a hug while her son went to look at sneakers

Me: uphillile?

Njalo: ewe ndiphilile wethu Lwandiso. I see the whole squad is out with you today

Me: lol that's not even all of them hey but syahamba ngok. Jonga neh I'm heading out to Jo'burg in two weeks, the legal department should be up and running by February so if you are still interested

Her: yeah of course I am. I'll wait to hear from you then

We both shared a smile, I paid for everyone's sneakers while Alwande nomntana kaNjalo were sitting by the sneakers

Me: Alwa masambe baby

Q: that's the guy tata. The guy whose party we went to during new years

Me: thats the boy Alwa likes

Q: qho

Yho Lwa isn't going to like this one bit. In fact, she will try her best for it to come to an end

Mnqobi: bye Alwa

Alwa: bye

I just chuckled then we left to put the bags in the car then went to spur where we found Loyiso

Season 3

Insert 83

Soso

Loyiso was seated with a girl I assume is his girlfriend so we joined them

Loy: so, you guys went shopping without me

Me: well you were not around, clearly you had better things to do

Bahleka abantwana but ngambona logirl kaLoyiso ukuba ubanjwa zinhloni so I cut the laughing early

Me: introductions Loy. Suba rude kwedini

Loy: eish. Sne this is my dad and that's my little sister Kwando and little brother Kwandile. Uyabaz mos labanye

She nodded then smiled kancinci. She was pretty so my boy ukhethe kak'hle

Me: nice to meet you Sne. So, tell me about yourself.

Q: yho daddy. Date my family vibes kwaSpur

Me: lol ok fine ndithule

We placed our orders then had our late lunch over a light conversation. Turns out Sne's parents are engineers, they adopted her from Ghana when she was just a baby and she has a brother who was also adopted. The lunch was nice, the kids were happy and I was enjoying our bonding session. We were moving past yonke lento of me moving to Jo'burg. I was feeling horrible about the kind of impression I had left in their hearts but I know my kids, bayaz how much I love them and how much they mean to me

Kwandi: daddy khawenze ilce cream kalok

Me: you want mama to shout at me?

Kwandi: sisi Sne ndicela ice cream kalok wena awumaz umama so akazukshouta

We all laughed but Sne ordered the ice cream for him and waffles for his sister. My phone rang while we waited for our take aways. It was my amazing wife so I had no choice but to answer

Me: sthandwa sam

Lwa: nikuphi tatakhe? I get home and the boys are still sitting in their pyjamas and the play room is a pig sty

Me: you are directing your anger at the wrong person. I told them to clean up before you come home and we are at Spur but syabuya ngok

Her: ok please bring me a bar one shake and onion rings. I bought braai'd meat and rolls

Me: ok babe.

Her: mcwaaaaa

Me: lol mcwa mcwa

I hung up, settled the bill then got my wife's food sahamba

Me: Sne, should we drop you off?

Sne: my mom is going to pick me up

Loy: yeah and I'm going to wait with her

I cocked my eyebrows at him. A part of me was proud of the gentleman he has become. Not many boys would wait with his girlfriend while his family leaves him

Me: how will you get home?

Loy: I'll take a cab or I'll call uncle Jay

Me: take a cab because if you come home with Jason, mama will lose it

We all said bye to Sne then I drove us home. The job offer I made to Njalo kept ringing in my head. I don't even know why I offered her the job because I know its going to cause such a ripple in my marriage and ndiyamaz uLwa asoze ayive tu lento. The kids off loaded the bags when we got home We walked in to find Lwa in the kitchen with Shaun and Li

Yaya: tchin Dumb and Dumber are finally out of their cave and they showered. Amen

Li: ndzakbetha Yandisa. Sundiqhela kakubi. Nxa.

Lwa didn't bother entertaining them, we are used to their bickering. Lwa was making a smoothee with the help of the boys. I kissed her cheek then sat on the high chairs

Lwa: ubashiyeleni abantwana bami?

Me: ask them. They didn't want to come with us

We had dinner, I took a shower then got in bed while Lwa tucked the kids in. Mike called while I waited for her

Me: little bro

Mike: hey bro I need your help

Me: wassup?

Him: Jason and I were thinking of expanding our company to include different departments. Jason wants a legal department but kalok we don't know any lawyers that we can trust

Me: so uthi ndithini mna bruh?

Him: khawthethe noLuminjalo. Last time I checked she was looking for ispani

Me: I'll forward you her numbers. Yho ntwana yam you don't know how much you've saved my marriage

He chuckled but trust me xa ndisithi undincedile uMike

Him: what did you do?

Me: ey mfethu I offered her a job

Him: what?! Ai fondin uyaRiska bruh. Entlek Lwa should beat you with that sjambok since usisbhanxa. Let go of that chick bro. Ndyaqonda yifirst love yakho and all that but she isn't worth it

I sighed into ende because he has a point, too many people have been telling me that I should let her go but I just can't completely let go of the connection we have. Its not love anymore but nje I feel a certain need to look out for her

*

*

Lwa

Two weeks passed and it was time for Soso to leave for Jo'burg. My heart was in pieces, I spent the whole night crying my eyes out and worse ke I didn't want him near me. I hugged the pillow with his scent and just cried the whole night then when morning came, he walked into our bedroom and sat at the foot of the bed. It was most probably 5am ngoba the sun wasn't even out yet.

Soso: baby I want to hold you, please don't deny me that. Ndiyakcela Mam'Smith

Me: ok

He slowly got up then got in bed with me, I rested my head on his chest as he squeezed me tightly. This is what I'm going to miss the most, being in his arms. Maybe I'm being a bit dramatic but after spending 13years waking up next to someone everyday, its not easy to let go of that.

Him: uyandethemba?

Me: yes

Its without a doubt that I trust him, I love him and I believe that love and trust are one and the same thing. You can't truly love someone unless you trust that person with that blind trust, that beyond a shadow of a doubt, no matter what this person or that person says, you believe your man. That's how much I trust my man, yes he is not perfect, he is far from it but the way he loves me, respects me and treats me makes it so easy to love him the way I do

Soso: baby uyandiva?

Me: hmmm askies tatakhe. Ubusuthini?

Him: lol I love it xa uthetha isiXhosa yaz baby

He placed a kiss on my forehead and I responded by placing a kiss on his chest. I was smiling like a little child, the fact that he was leaving in a few hours was forgotten and I was just lost in this moment

Me: thetha kalok baby. Ubusuthini?

Him: bendisithi I want to spend the whole day in bed with you

Me: but baby your parents and your brothers are throwing you a farewell party njena baby

Him: andiyifuni lo party mna. I just want you. No kids. No parents. No brothers. Just you, my wife, the love of my life, my last love and my everything.

I smiled again for the umpteenth time. Ungenza dizzy nangu ubhuti shame. He lifted me and made me straddle him with my legs on either side of his body then our eyes met

Him: hey

Me: lol hi

I covered my eyes shyly with my hands, my stomach fluttering with a million butterflies

Him: lol tchin sthandwa sam, you are shy now?

I giggled while nodding then he giggled and flipped me over, now he was on top of me with my legs around his waist

Him: yiza ndiphuze mamakhe

I pouted my lips then he came in for a kiss. We shared a long passionate kiss singajahe ndawo. The kiss was filled with so much love and emotion that I just got lost in it but after some time I pulled out from the kiss. We made love for 2hrs then we slept for a further 4hrs. I was woken up by the ringing sound of his phone

Me: baby your phone

Soso: hmmm

Me: Lwandiso iphone yakho

Him: answer it kalok baby. Uze uxelele that person that I'm sleeping

Nami ke I answered the phone without checking the caller ID

Me: ello

Lady: may I please speak to Lwandiso?

Me: ulele so please call later

Her: please just tell him I said thanks for hooking me up with the job with Mike.

I lifted the phone from my ear to check ukuthi ubani losisi that's being hooked up by my husband but the number was hidden

Me: so ngithi kufoune bani if you hide your number?

Her: uyaz yena. Thanks, neh

She hung up and now that I think about it, that sounded like ivoice kaLuminjalo but she can't be that stupid. No one is that stupid. I placed iphone kaBae back where it was and my sleep was gone so I tried getting up but he pulled me towards him and my ass was now against his erection

Him: uyaphi?

Me: I was going to take a shower

Him: that can wait

He lifted my leg and gently inserted himself in me causing a moan to escape my mouth. He thrust in then nibbled on my ear

Him: I love how you are always ready for me

He thrust again, harder this time and my moans were louder

Him: you are always so wet and sexy for me and I just want to always have my dick buried inside you

He fucked me and he fucked me well.

Season 3

Insert 84

Lwa

After spending most of the day in bed, we eventually went out for the little farewell braai then around 6pm the kids and I drove Soso to the airport. The kids were emotional but ke bane Drama vele abantwana baka Soso, angaz why they are emotional ngoba indoda yam lena not eyabo. We said our goodbyes then he took my hand to go with him to check in

Soso: mamakhe

I didn't want to look him in the eye because I know myself and crying wasn't far from my emotions right now

Me: tatakhe

Him: I'll see you guys on Friday. Please take care of my kids and don't cry anymore. I hate it when you cry

I nodded because the lump in my throat wouldn't let me speak. We shared a long hug then he kissed my forehead before pecking my lips

Him: I love you so much Lwa and I'll call you as soon as I land

I hugged him again, waved goodbye then went back to my kids. My strong front was on another level because I wasn't going to cry in front of them. I drove us home then got started on dinner because we don't eat take aways on Sundays. Alwa walked in as I was busy with the stir fry and she sat on the counter

Me: hey Alwa. What's up?

Alwa: I have a crush on a guy and he says he likes me as well

Yabona when you hear something you were not expecting to hear and you start questioning if you heard correctly or nah? That was me at that moment but I chose to keep quiet so that she will repeat herself and I'll know for sure if what I think she said is indeed what she said

Her: dabs

Me: hmmm

Her: did you hear me?

Me: huh uh baby. Awuphinde futhi

Her: oh gosh. Mngqobi told me he likes me

Me: wathini ke wena?

I switched the stir fry pan off then moved closer to the counter so I can hear more about this. I wasn't in panick mode because offer months of being in denial, I finally accepted that the kids are growing. On wednesday Alwa starts matric, the twins will be in grade 11, Yaya will be in grade 8(Soso is still having a hard time with his little princess going to high school), Shaun will be in grade 7, Limile will be in grade 6 and owele will be in grade 2. So, the only babies I still have are owele, Shaun and Li

Alwa: andaz dabs. I feel weird and nervous around him, I get butterflies in my tummy and worse part is that he is leaving for varsity in February.

Me: Varsity Alwande?

I was a little freaked because varsity boys are bad news, I was in varsity once and thats where I came across the likes of Lunga

Her: ewe. Its his first year and I really like him dabs plus he is so cute

She was blushing uncontrollably and it was cute but I was still scared because I don't know this kid or anything about him

Me: lol ok calm down. How's about you invite him for supper tomorrow then I can get to know him a bit

Her eyes opened wide and she started shaking her head

Her: hayi dabs its too soon for such things

Me: well you can't date him until I meet him.

Her: but dabs

Me: no buts

I finished up with the cooking then dished up for everyone, including MaRose and Sno then we all ate at the dining area

Me: tomorrow no one goes anywhere, I want books to be covered, uniforms ironed and shoes polished when I get back from work tomorrow

Li: why tomorrow mama? School opens wednesday kalok

Shaun: we can do it tuesday

Me: it wasn't a suggestion, boys, benginitshela nje.

They mumbled something which led to owele laughing

Me: askies? what was that?

Li: nix mama

Me: it better be nix. MaRose and Sno please only iron for owele qha. The rest of of the kids will iron they own uniforms

Shaun: haw mama I don't know how to iron

Sno: I'll help you

Me: keyword being help so she won't be doing it for you but she will be assisting you

After dinner Loy and Yaya washed dishes while I headed up to my room to take a much-needed long bath. I filled the tub and just as I was getting naked, my phone rang indicating a video call from Soso so I just wrapped myself in a towel and answered

Me: my love

Soso: hey baby. I just got settled in at the hotel room

Me: how was your flight?

Him: it wasn't bad. Did I catch you at a bad time?

I smiled when I saw the confused look on his face, in fact I laughed ngoba ebezihlanyisa

Me: maybe

Then I winked at him wangachazeka shame

Him: udlala kakubi mahn baby. Go bath ke sthandwa but don't end the call, I want to watch

We continued with our nonsensical conversation, laughing the whole time. We were joking around and we were at our happiest. My heart was at peace with him being away but thanks to technology, we have things such as video calls. After my bath, I got in bed and slept. The following day I was woken up by a call from Lwandiso then I took a shower and got ready for work and since the kids were still on holiday, I made a light breakfast then drove off to the office and the moment I walked in people started clapping and I was now more confused than ever

Liz: morning boss lady

Oh, wow news travel fast, I put on a smile, greeted everyone then went to my office. I wasn't about to change just because I own fifty percent of the company. As I got to work, there was a knock on the door and Yolanda walked in with the biggest fake smile I've ever since. You know mos, that fake smile old white ladies give us when they see us kumaParkings

Yoli: Mrs Smith. Uright wethu?

Wethu? Heeeh claps once. Ziyajika izinto shame

Me: ngiright Miss Ntabeni. Do you perhaps need anything?

Her: lol uhm not at all chomee, I just thought we should go out for lunch you know, get to know each other a bit

I leaned back on my chair and stared at her with a straight face, I wasn't going to pretend like this is not the same woman that accused me of sleeping my way into an internship I earned due to my hardwork

Me: get to know each other? Thani uyadlala sisi. Yaz thani uyadlala ngempela

She frowned with her pretence look of confusion then I started typing away on my computer, at the end of the day I still had work to do

Her: haw Lwa I was hoping we could put our past behind us and start afresh.

Me: our past is what determined our present and our present will determine our future. You don't need to suck up to me just because I have power in this company and I'm not petty, I won't use your insults on me against you. I'm professional and speaking of being professional, I need to get back to work so please close my door on your way out

She got up and left my office. I really don't understand how she thought this would play out for her. Did she think I was going to be stupid enough to befriend her after all the shit she put me through? Anyway, after work I got take aways from spur, steaks, ribs and wings then went home to prepare for this dinner with Alwa's crush. I'd rather have my kids date with my permission instead of doing it behind my back and lying to me. I changed into cotton shorts and a plain t-shirt and slippers, took my phones and went downstairs

Me: Alwande

Alwa: dabs

Me: woza kimi

I was now in the kitchen taking out veggies for the greek salad when she walked in with Kwando right behind her

Me: did you call him?

Alwa: yes, i did

Me: and?

Alwa: he said he will come, I must tell him the time so I was still waiting for you to give me the time so I can tell him

Kwando: who is this him cuzzy?

Me: uthanda izindaba bhabha and Alwa tell him to come at 7. Where are the twins?

Alwa: the minions?

Me: lol don't you dare let them hear you calling them that.

Alwa: lol they are upstairs in their rooms

Me: Kwando go call your brothers. Your oldest brothers

She ran upstairs while Alwa and I started on the salad then I boiled sweet potato because i wanted to make mash as well. The minions came down with Loyiso carrying his little sister

Q: hey mama

He kissed my cheek and smiled before sitting on the high chairs.

Loy: dude you are so gay its ridiculous

Q: no I'm not. Nothing wrong with loving my mother

Me: exactly wena baby

Loy: uhm you are gay. Hey mama

He placed his sister on the counter then sat next to his brother

Me: we seem to be out of juice so please go the garage and get 5 2l of liquifruit. Mix and match

Loy: car keys please

The minions have their learners' licences and they know how to drive, they just don't have their license yet

Me: to the garage and back please. Not to the garage then Sne's house

Season 3

Insert 85

Soso

Honestly, I'm regretting this move to Jo'burg already and mind you its still the first day and I'm working late already. I ordered dinner at spur so I was just waiting for them to deliver it when my phone rang but when I saw the caller ID I had second thoughts about answering ndayiyeka yakhala. The person didn't give up so I ended up answering

Me: you shouldn't be calling me

Njalo: I wouldn't call you unless it was an emergency. I have no interest in talking to you Lwandiso but this isn't about us

Me: thetha fondin

Her: Lwa invited me to dinner

I'm tired, hungry and not in the mood for stupid jokes so what Njalo is doing right now just annoyed me to the point whereby I dropped the call. Lwa would never invite Njalo to dinner unless she is planning on killing her. My wife hates her. She calls again and I huff before answering

Me: andinalo ixesha lokuncokola nawe mna Luminjalo so if you want to act all Trevor Noah on me, this is not the time

Njalo: you didn't let me finish kalok, it so happens that uMnqobi noAlwa bayajola or something along those lines so Lwa invited Mnqobi but kengok ngumntanam lona so I have to be there as well

Me: did you just say uAlwa uyajola? Tchin and ujola nomtanakho? Jonga fondin you can't go there, Lwa is going to kill you.

Her: ndithini kuMnqobi kengok xa ndingasayi pha?

Truly speaking I think Njalo is enjoying this, I'm sure she is going to go anyway to the dinner and when Lwa fucks her up, she will try to make me feel guilty for all of this but problem is I'm not doing that twice.

Me: hey fondin make up an excuse of some sort, fake sickness andikhathali but just don't go there. Let the kid go alone

Her: uphambene Lwandiso? Ufuna umfaz wakho abulale umntanam? Libala. If I can't go then Mngobi doesn't go.

Me: ok. Do what you want but don't you dare hold me responsible for what happens at that dinner.

I hung up and I wanted to call Lwa ndibuze about yonke lento but I couldn't because xa endibuza ukuba ndiyivephi, ndizawthini? So, I just decided to let it go okwangoku and deal with it when I get home on friday. Anyway, my food arrived ndatya then got back to work. I stayed at the office until 9pm then drove to my hotel room, took a shower then got on the bed in just my briefs, bekushushu kalok so I switched the tv on and watched a movie on channel 103. I haven't spoken to Lwa today so I decide to call Loyiso and he answers after quite some time

Loy: wassup dad

Me: lol heey ubuCool kid sekuyizinto zakho kwedin

Him: andikho gay kalok mna tata, yiDepartment kaQhawe eyo

I couldn't help but laugh kodwa naye uQhawe needs to man up a little, isoft mahn lantwana. Too much

Me: subanjalo ntwana. Uright kodwa ndoda?

Him: nditop taima. Wena?

Me: mna ndiright boy. Uphi umamakho?

Him: downstairs neOutie kaAlwa. Yho tata buya ngok, umama uyaphambana

Me: hayi Loyiso suthetha ngalohlobo ngomamakho. Imbheko boy. Suyilibala

Him: uxolo tata but what she is doing isn't normal. Its like mama is trying to be white or something. Sne's parents tried that with me and I backed out of it but kalok bona ngabantu abamhlophe mos so I understand

My son had a point and what gets to me the most about yonke lento is that she waited for me to leave then she does this behind my back. These are OUR children

not just hers so I need to be kept in the loop with everything that goes on ngabo. Loyiso and I talked about a few things then I told him to tell his mother to call me when she is done with yonke lento yakhe then I hung up. I called room service, ordered a beer and peanuts then watched soccer when my snacks arrived. I hated watching Liverpool lose but I still have the greatest love for my team kalok andiyoFan, ndiyisupporter so through winning or losing, I stay a loyal supporter. 30mins into the game, my phone rang and a picture of my wife and I appeared on the screen

Me: Lwandile

Lwa: haw what's wrong?

Me: who said anything is wrong?

Her: because you called me Lwandile

Me: and that's your name

Her: Soso what's wrong?

Me: should I also ask what's wrong? Since you just called me by my name

Just then my team scored and I screamed in celebration, with complete disregard for the person I was on the phone with

Her: what the hell? Can you focus on this conversation then get back to your soccer?

Me: my team scored, anyway uright?

She sighed then took a 3sec pause

Her: I'm fine just tired

Me: long day?

Her: yeah, we had a guest for dinner

Me: what guest?

Her: Alwa's crush. He is such a nice boy, he is smart as well and well mannered.

Me: are you serious? Actually, you know what, I'm not going to do this over the phone but I want you to know one thing, I am not ok with you pimping my child out

Her: pimping? Aibo tatakhe that's not what I was doing

Me: I'm just telling you kalok but like I said, sizawuthetha kakuhle ngokufika kwam friday. Anyway, where in the house are you?

Her: our bedroom. Ngikhathele and I just want to close my eyes and sleep

Me: unxibe nton baby?

My voice was now soft and the hand that wasn't holding the phone was in my briefs rubbing uSmith who was semi-hard already

Her: lol hayi baby I'm too tired for this. Goodnight

Me: mxm uyabhora yaz baby. I'll call you ksasa sthandwa sam. Ndyakthanda mamakhe

Her: love you more baby

By the the time I hung up, Smith was rock hard and there is no way I'm going to sleep with a hard dick, fuck no. I took out my laptop, placed it in front of me, retrieved my hidden folder with my porn collection, played one of the videos then leaned back on the bed and rubbed Smith. By the time I came, I was already breathing heavily, I cleaned myself up with tissue, set my alarm then slept.

*

*

Lwa

My husband is full of drama but being married to him for so many years has taught me a lot about submission. Now ngiyaz ukuthi if yena ephakama ngolaka, mele mina ngehle ngizithobe because if we are both shouting, nothing gets solved. Wednesday morning after taking a shower, I took a few nudes then sent them to bae and as I was getting dressed, he video called me

Me: morning my love

He was in just his navy chinos and socks, no shirt on so, his 8pack was right there on my screen and I swallowed hard as I stared at him

Soso: uwrong kodwa Mrs Me. Jonga lento endishiyeke nayo after I saw those pics

He lowered his phone to be just in line with his erection and I just giggled

Him: suhleka baby. Yeer ngikukhumbule

He slowly unzipped his pants and set his King free ngazithola sengijuza amathe just staring at a penis. Just then Yaya burst into my room and the moment she heard Soso's voice she ran for my phone and I panicked but moved it out of her reached and ended the call

Yaya: I want to talk to dad, mama please

Me: we will call dad when I take you to school, go put your shoes on

Her: ok, i wanted to borrow your hairbrush, Kwando lost mine. Don't ask how and why but somehow, she just can't remember where she put it

I helped her brush and tie her hair. She posed for a few pictures then we went downstairs for breakfast. Now all my kids are in big school and I couldn't be prouder, they are growing into happy kids

Loy: mama can we drive ourselves to school? We have learners now and I'm a great driver

Me: not going to happen. When Alwa gets her licence in August then I'll allow her to drive you guys

Q: August mama? The year is over mos in August

Me: tough luck. Guys, eat up, I don't want to be late

Yaya: and we still have to call daddy

Kwandi: nyan mama? We going to call daddy?

Me: if you finish your food, we will

I took my plate to the kitchen then went up to rinse my mouth with Listerine, grabbed my handbag and my work bag then we left with the kids. I connected my phone to the car via bluetooth then called Soso and he spoke to his kids. Shame man they were missing him and judging from their conversation, naye he was missing them. He hung up just before I dropped owele, Limile and Shaun off.

Me: Loyiso and Qhawe please look out for your sister, this is high school and she is still a baby so please take care of her

Q: if I see you with a boy, I will kill you both

Me: and you have my permission to do that

Yaya: mama seriously? The minions are going to cramp my style.

Season 3

Insert 86

Lwa

Friday afternoon after picking the kids up from school, I drove us to McDonald's because they were complaining of hunger from the moment I picked them up. Instead of focusing on me or on each other, they were on their phones texting away. I decided ukubalaya ke nam and texted my girls kwigroup and 30mins later, they arrived

AP: mfazi, shouldn't you be in bed in your sexiest lingerie waiting for your man

Me: Aphile! Kids haw

AP: tchin bazinton ngeLingerie aba? Oh, kakade uyajola ngoku usisters

She was looking at Alwande who was blushing like there is no tomorrow.

Alwa: hayi auntie AP andijoli mna

AP: akukho ngxaki xa ujola nana, ukhulile kalok ngoku so its normal. No need to feel embarassed evah?

She nodded shyly then lowered her head to look at her phone

Lolz: wena Qhawzin iphi icherry yakho?

Q: andinayo and andiyfuni. Hayi okwangok, see I have a plan

Loy: his plan is to give mama and dad a son in law.

He laughed and his brother was not impressed with him.

Me: ngzokshaya Loyiso

Nomz: ithini iplan yakho Qhawe?

Q: I'm going to focus on school, go to medical school, make lots of money and by then I won't need to go after girls, they will come after me.

As much as I hated his little plan and how little respect he had for women at this moment, I have to admit that he is smart and I was a little relieved to find out he isn't

gay. I would love my son no matter what but I know I won't be able to protect him from the harsh society we live in

Pali: yho Q you are going to be such a fuck boy, just like your uncle Jason

Kwando: what's a fuck boy maKaLwakho?

Pali: you must ask your father. He will give you the answer

Me: lol gosh you female dogs are not child friendly. I should learn not to bring my kids around you people

Loy: mama can we go home so you and your friends can chill kak'hle. My ears can't take anymore of this conversation

I laugh. To his defence, this conversation was going to go from bad to worse and I can't let that happen in their presence

Nomz: take the kids home then we will meet in town so we can go shopping. Soso needs to have his breath taken away

Q: ok I'm definitely leaving ngok. Let's go guys

They got up and headed for the car while my girls and I broke into laughter. I dropped them off at home, told Alwa to tell MaRose not to cook then drove off to town. I wasn't dressed too formally so I didn't feel the need to change. I found my girls at Foschini, in the lingerie section

Me: lol imani guys, kanti niserious yini?

Lolz: serious as a heart attack babe. Didn't you say you are in trouble with him anyway?

AP: trouble? What did you do?

I told them everything about the dinner with Mnqobi and Soso's reaction and for some reason, of which I don't understand, they agree with him

Nomz: Soso considers Alwa as his daughter and for you to have this dinner in his absence comes across disrespectful to him and as if you don't consider his opinion when it comes to the kids

Lolz: this is why I don't want a man in my life. Men like unnecessary power and they are stupid

AP: I agree with you apho

They high fived and laughed while dangling the skimpiest lingerie in my face. There is no way in hell I'm going to wear that, I won't look like a whore in the name of seeking forgiveness

Me: hell no

Pali: we need something sexy yet classy

AP: the fuck? Sexy and classy have never gone together. Either you want sexy like this or classy like pyjamas

Yho my friends need serious prayer. I eventually settled on a violet thong and its matching night dress type of thing but it didn't even cover my ass. I paid for it then we went to woolies where AP and Lolz practically forced me to buy strawberries, whipped cream and melted chocolate

AP: you must dip his dick in the chocolate then suck it off

Lolz: then let him spray the whipped cream on your pussy and eat you out

AP: or spray it yourself. Its sexier that way

Nomz: you two are just too slutty. How and why am I friends with you guys?

My friends are the true definition of crazy but I love them to death and I wouldn't change a single thing ngabo. After the little shopping spree, I drove home, put the bags in my room then went to get started on dinner. I defrosted the beef, chopped the veggies then placed the rice on the stove

Yaya: can we help?

I can never keep my daughter and her cousin out of the kitchen, these two love cooking and baking

Me: salads babies. I'm quickly going to change

I changed into bumshorts and Soso's Miami Heat vest then went to get started on dinner. We played music and just had a light and fun conversation with my girls.

Soso walked in through the front door as I was switching the stove off, well I heard Kwando screaming "daddy" before I even saw him. They walked into the kitchen and Yaya's face lit up like a christmas tree

Yaya: daddy

Soso: my favorite girls. Ziright iigirls?

Them: ziriirriiiiiiiiiiiiiight lol

Me: lol you guys are crazy. Seriously

He smiled at me and I couldn't help but smiled back and my smile grew wider when he approached me. He placing his travelling bag on the counter and held my waist then pulled me closer to him

Him: I missed you

I wrapped my arms around his neck and kissed the living daylights out of him. I even forgot that the kids are in the room until I heard Kwando and her twin laughing then I broke the kiss

Soso: smells great in here and i'm starving

Me: go freshen up ke tatakhe then we will dish up

Soso: yiza mamakhe. Ndfuna sincokole before dinner

He grabbed his Nike travelling bag from the counter, took my hand into his then we walked up the stairs. I sat on the couch in our bedroom and he joined me

Soso: so how was the dinner?

Me: it was quite nice like I told you over the phone

Him: my only question about this whole thing is why did you wait until I left for you to organize yonke lento. Why do it behind my back?

Ngavele ngathula because I didn't know what to say. He wasn't going to understand that I did yonke lento without thinking and it didn't feel like a big deal kimi

Him: Lwandile

Me: look I meant no disrespect, honestly. I just wanted to get to know the kid and Alwa only told me about their liking for each other after we dropped you off at the airport

Him: so, it couldn't wait until today? I might be gone Lwandile but these are still my children

Me: I know Smith and I'm sorry

Him: alright. Ndisayohlamba ke mna then I'll come down

He pecked my cheek then smiled a naughty smile that I know all too well

Him: I can't wait to show you how much I missed you

I chuckled loudly then headed to the kitchen to dish up. I told Li and Shaun to set the table then I placed everyone's food on the table. Soso joined us then we ate while his kids entertained him with their stories about their first week at school. After dinner the minions cleared the table, we had ice cream with chocolate sauce then they washed the dishes

Shaun: daddy you going to play PS with us, right?

Kwandi: then you going to tuck us in and read us a story andithi daddy?

Soso: yes, and yes

Me: well goodnight guys

I kissed everyone then grabbed the strawberries, melted chocolate and whipped cream before heading to our bedroom to bath. I filled up the bathtub, added foam bath then got in with my phone in my hand. I was texting my girls in our whatsapp group. Just as I was beginning to relax, I suddenly craved wine so I dialed Soso's number but it rang in the room so I called Alwa and asked her to give Soso the phone

Soso: mamakhe

Me: I'm craving a glass of red wine, please pour it for me and bring it upstairs. There's a bottle in the fridge

Him: ai baby i'll send Yaya to bring it. I'm bonding with the kids apha

Me: please baby. It will only take a minute

He agreed after I begged and sulked. A few minutes later the bathroom door opened and he walked in with my wine. A glass and the bottle

Him: lol I knew this was a trap

Me: lol not even yaz.

I took the bottle and glass from him, poured my wine then gave him back the bottle. He sat on the edge of the tub and just stared at me. I sipped on my wine then closed my eyes. It tasted so good. By the time my glass was empty, I opened my eyes and found him still sitting there

Me: shouldn't you be bonding with your kids

Him: but baby i can't leave anymore. I want to bath you

Me: lol oho go away Lwandiso

Season 3

Insert 87

Soso

Lwa is well aware of the fact that i've been horny the whole week and now I was watching her naked and she expects me to go bond with the kids while I have a hard on. This woman must be crazy because I'm not going there

Lwa: the kids are going to run in here looking for you then what will you do? Just go spend time with them babe, we have the whole night ahead of us

Those words instantly made my dick twitch but she had a point. I took the wine bottle and the glass and left the room just after adjusting my pants. I played 3 games of fifa before my sons fell asleep. I had to carry them to bed and just after I tucked them in, Lwa appeared in the passage in what looked like new lingerie and I have to admit, she looked drop dead gorgeous and absolutely sexy.

*

*

Lwa

When I had eventually chased Soso out the room, I got a chance to bath properly then wrapped my body with a towel and headed to our bedroom where I began moisturizing my body. I sprayed my body with perfume then stared at the strawberries and cream and just giggled and shook my head. Kodwa Lwa wenzani? How the hell are you going to pull this off? You don't know anything about these kinky things. These thoughts were all over my mind and I figured I should just stick to what I know so I placed the food on the dressing table then put on the lingerie, tied my hair into a messy bun then stood in front of the mirror and took a few deep breaths. I was nervous for some reason and that's what I love about my marriage, we have been together for so long but the things he still makes me feel are things new lovers experience. The butterflies, the burning desire and lust for each other and never-ending love. I walked out our bedroom with the intention of hopefully finding him downstairs but instead we met in the passage and the way he looked at me was

enough to awaken my queen from her deep slumber. He walked up to me, the way he was looking at me was even making me blush

Soso: wow

He tried leaning in for a kiss but I backed away which brought confusion kuye and I just smiled and held his hand leading him into our bedroom

Him: lol what are you up to MaHadebe?

Me: lol me? Nothing sthandwa sam. You did promise to show me how much you missed me

Him: you are stopping me njena baby

Me: we will do it my way, all you have to do is trust me

I helped him out of his clothes leaving only his briefs on then I laid him on the bed and placed a peck on his lips. When he tried to deepen the kiss, I pulled back then began kissing his neck down to his chest and all the way to his abs

Soso: baby this is torture

Me: yet I haven't even started

My hand went to his king and he was rock hard, he tried grabbing my ass but I smacked his hands. He didn't move it so I pinched him and he groaned in pain

Him: what the hell Lwa?

Me: lol no touching

I removed his briefs then gently sucked on his king but when he started to really get into it, I stopped then got off him. I suddenly felt brave and went to fetch the strawberries, melted chocolate and whipped cream. Soso isn't a fan of being dominated in bed, he lets me do it for a few minutes then he takes over and shows me who is the man. I started thinking about what AP and Lolz said I should do with the chocolate, "dip his dick in it and suck it off". Considering the position he was laying in, that won't work

Him: lol baby what are you trying to do exactly?

He was now sitting on the bed staring at me with a smirk on his face

Me: don't laugh Soso. I'm trying to be spontaneous and sexy here

Him: you are always sexy baby now come here

I tried putting the things I was holding back on the table but he stopped me

Him: bring those over here. I know exactly what to do with them

Me: mxm because I don't?

Him: I didn't say that. Yiza before I fetch you

Me: lol anfuni

He cocked his eyebrow then got off the bed walking towards me. I wanted him to fetch me anyway so when he lifted me up bridal style, making me giggle like a two-year-old

Him: the things I'm going to do to you tonight.

He shook his head and the excitement washed over my body. He placed me on the bed then lifted my lingerie top, placed kisses on my stomach before removing it completely off. The cotton sheets felt soft and smooth against my skin as my bare back made contact with it.

Me: welcome home baby

I whispered feeling his body pressed against mine, I grabbed his arm in attempt to pull him closer but he denied me. He reached down with his left hand, cupping my right breast and gently began to fondle my nipple. I moaned as I felt myself get wet. As his lips moved down to my left breast, his right hand slowly moved past my waist and under the sheet. He teased me and caressed my inner thigh as I continued to feel myself become more and more ready. Continuing to arouse my nipples with one hand, his other hand slowly moved closer to my panty covered queen and he didn't bother taking it off, instead he ripped it apart with one hand.

Me: Soso, that was expensive.

Him: I'll buy you 50 more

I moaned with delight as he inserted two of his fingers into my wetness and I felt his king get harder on my thigh. My hips began to grind him uncontrollably as he rubbed

my clit and thrust his fingers into me. Slowly and with purpose he massaged me, back and forth, knowing exactly when to move slower and faster based on my moans and cries. He knew my body so well, it annoyed me at times. He pushed me further up on the bed then removing his fingers from inside me making me moan in frustration. He reached for the whipped cream then shook the can and that's when my eyes opened.

Me: baby come on

Him: I'm hungry. Yima kalok

He poured some of the cream into his mouth and moaned in satisfaction then took a strawberry and bit it sexily, increasing my wetness. He then did something I should have been expecting but for some reason I wasn't. He pushed my thighs apart then poured cream on my queen, the feeling was foreign but nice then he took a strawberry from the tub and dipped in the cream then bit it again. He lowered his head between my thighs and I continued to moan and cry out as he spread my lips wide open licking the cream and sucking my clit. Grabbing his hair between my fingers, I felt my thighs tense up around his head and shoulders. He grabbed my knees and pushed my legs wide open. I could feel myself ready to cum but I didn't want it to happen just yet. I lifted his head and tasted the cream, strawberries and my own taste on his lips. His eyes were blood red indicating his horniness yet he insisted on torturing the both of us. I wanted him inside me so badly that I reached for his king but he moved his hips away from my body

Him: you taste so good but I hate that you stopped me before you came and you still messy down there so let me clean you up.

He returned down there and really got into it, pulling on my clit and flicking it with his tongue causing me to scream and moan all at once

Me: fuck baby, don't stop. I'm so close

I was now grinding my hips on his face roughly, my toes curled and I released an immense amount of pleasure

Me: Sosoooooooooooo

He lifted his head from between my thighs with a "mission accomplished" smile on his face then aligned his king with my queen and entered me

Him: fuuuck baby

He remained still inside me and I wanted him to move, I wanted him to make love to me so I moved under him

Him: baby don't move, you are going to make me cum and I want this to last

After a few seconds he moved and I joined in the movement. I was feeling the pleasures of sex. We moved back and forth slowly, enjoying the connection and just pouring our love into every thrust then he flipped me over, spanked my ass then I arched my back as he entered me from behind causing me to release another loud scream. He fucked me senselessly then stopped as I was about to cum

Him: so, tell me baby, why don't you listen when I tell you that things concerning the kids must be run past me?

This man can't be serious right now, we are in the middle of something. I didn't bother answering and he rammed into me again, roughly and I swear I felt him in my stomach

Me: baby please

Him: please yantoni sthandwa sam. I asked you a question.

Me: I'm sorry

He stopped moving again and I was in frustration mode now then he moved his hand to my queen and rubbed furiously

Him: that's not what I asked you. Ingxaki yakho Lwa awuva. Awumameli nyan

Me: yessss baby. Don't stop. Please don't stop

I say don't stop and what does this idiot I married do? He stops

Me: voetsek mahn Soso what the fuck is wrong with you?

He flips me over again then places each of my legs on his shoulders then enters me again

Him: what's wrong with me is that my wife doesn't listen but I know she will start listening today

He fucked me with no mercy and the painful pleasure was on another level, I swear I felt my soul leave my body and as my orgasm got closer and my walls tightened around him, he moved faster and his groaning got louder

Him: fuuuuck i love you baby

Me: i love you too babyyyyyy

We came together and he collapsed on top of me.

Season 3

Insert 88

Lwa

We made love/fucked/smashed/screwed, whatever you want to call it until we passed out around 4am. Soso just wouldn't stop and during his recovery time, we pillow talked about everything and nothing and for those moments it felt like Jo'burg didn't happen and that we were in each other's arms all week. Saturday morning, I woke up before he did and took a moment to admire him, I truly am blessed with a beautiful man, inside and out. I was tempted to kiss him but decided against it, he was exhausted and sleeping peacefully so I got out of bed, took a shower, opened the sliding door and a few windows then wore bae's shirt which was basically a dress kimi. I made sure to fold the sleeves then took his dirty laundry to the laundry room and loaded the washing machine. As much as we have MaRose and Sno, I like to be hands on when it comes to izinto zomyeni wam. When I got to the kitchen owele were already eating oats so I dished up for myself and joined them

Me: morning babies

Them: morning mama

Kwandi: daddy is taking us out right? See I was thinking we go to the park and play soccer then get ice cream

Kwando: no buddy. It will be better if we go to the beach then get ice cream. You can play soccer here

Kwandi: we can also swim here

I can't wait for these two to grow up and stop fighting, they never agree on anything but I'm just glad I'm not in Soso's shoes right now. After breakfast I ran them a bath then dressed them and made them watch tv while they wait for their father. I was now in my study with my laptop in front of me researching business ideas. As much as I love my job at MY company lol, with the kids growing up, i'm starting to feel like I have too much time on my hands. I wanted to branch into something that wouldn't just be about money. I want something that would go as far as changing lives and

uplifting the community but I just couldn't decide on what that would be. I decided to call my lawyer, yes i have a couple of those now. It comes with owning a company

Laa: wow this is a surprise. Hey beautiful

Me: lol you better not let your wife hear you say that

Yep, Landile finally settled down, I think Nami's death gave him a reality check on how short life is and you can't spend your whole life chasing one girl that doesn't want you. His wife is gorgeous so I've heard, Soso and I didn't make it to the wedding. It was around the time just after owele were born, when I was going through depression and wasn't myself. Now that I think about it, Soso promised me a new toilet during that time but even til today, dololo the toilet

Laa: lol well luckily for me, I'm at my office so I can flirt with my crush all I want

Me: lol you are such a man. Just can't keep it in your pants

Him: haaibo Mrs Smith, what's that about my pants? You want what's inside? Well we can arrange that

I was laughing hysterically to the extent that tears were coming out. Landile is a comedian, I give him that

Him: lol I hope uyaz that I'm billing you njalo ngoba uhleka nje

Me: lol ok ok let's get serious

I told him about my idea and my problem regarding the idea and he was liking it

Him: uhm I'll talk to my sister, being a social worker, she will know about what the community needs with regards to non-profit organisations then I'll email you her suggestions

Me: I should have thought about uAsemahle yaz now I have to pay you for something I could have done myself

Him: lol but you didn't think of her so you still have to pay me. I'll email you my invoice

Me: crush discount nyana?

Him: lol forget it beautiful

Me: oh well I tried. We'll be in touch ke Laa

I hung up and just smiled to myself thinking back on the crazy conversation I just had. Landile is too crazy and such a great guy. He knows how to lighten up any mood with just a few words

Soso: so, who am I killing?

I lifted my eyes from my laptop to meet his as he was standing at the door. I didn't even hear it open or did I even close it when I entered

Me: and why must people be killed now?

Him: I could hear you laughing all the way from the kitchen and i get Here to find to smiling alone

Me: jealous much? I was talking to my lawyer

Him: legal advice is funny these days? I should get some as well so I can laugh

Me: you are being dramatic bruh. Come see this and stop standing by the door like a bouncer. Its creepy nje futhi

He walked up to my desk and stood behind my chair as I showed him what I was researching

Him: you want to start an NGO?

Me: yeah but not right now. Maybe 5years from now so okwamanje I just want to do research, find one that touches my heart the most, take a few business courses so I don't mess it up then only get it off the ground

Him: wow, so you have this all figured out babe? Its a great idea sthandwa sam and I'll support you all the way

Me: pinky promise

I lifted my left pinky in the air entwining with his

Him: lol you are too old for pinky swears babe but ok, I pinky swear.

I swear my husband looks sexy in just about anything and right now he was sitting on my desk in basketball shorts, slippers and a t-shirt, unshowered yet looking perfect

Him: you are staring

Me: am not. Have you and your kids decided where you are spending your day?

Him: yep. Arcade and the movies. I decided to take all of them

Me: well have fun. I'm spending the day baking. Its been a while and I know the kids will love it

Him: yeah, they will. Let me go shower so we can leave. Kiss?

I smiled as we both leaned forward and our lips touched, his being soft and cold as he sucked my bottom lip between his teeth then quickly pulling back

Him: the melted chocolate is still unused by the way

He winked as he got off my desk and I just chuckled. Uzolayeka ngoba i'll just bake with that chocolate, its not body chocolate anyway. After Soso and his kids left, I went out to the mall to buy cake mixes and cupcake mixes, I wasn't going to bake from scratch and risk it being a flop. As I was standing in the cue, I felt someone tap my shoulder and as I turned around, my eyes met an unrealistically gorgeous man, my man is gorgeous and all but this guy looks like he just walked out of a movie

Him: pardon me, I could be wrong but I think you and I know each other

I rolled my eyes as easily as that cheesy pick up line rolled off his tongue. As if I'd forget if I knew such a gorgeous creature phela such people are not easy to forget. Beautiful people and ugly people are hard to forget

Me: yeah sure, most probably from the dream you had last night. I was probably an angel dressed in white with wings and a halo

The guy smiled and the smile almost made my knees weak...I said almost, it didn't quite get to that

Him: beautiful and funny. Clearly, I'm wrong about us knowing each other so let me introduce myself to save me from the embarrassment

Even the way he speaks is just so...damn. Ok Lwa get it together, you are a wife, your husband is gorgeous as well and you love him but then again looking at the menu doesn't mean I'm ordering, right? and ordering doesn't mean I'm going to eat. Eating is the problem, ordering is still a safe bet

Him: hello, did I lose you there for a second?

Yho I'm sure my cheeks had turned red by now. I was staring at the poor guy, so embarrassing

Me: uhm sorry about that. You were saying?

Him: Advocate Khumalo. That's my name. You are?

Me: lol your parents named you advocate?

Him: lol you really have a great sense of humor. Its attractive actually. Its Advocate Xolani Khumalo

Oh hell no. It can't be the same Xolani Khumalo I know and to think I almost dusted up my flirting skills for him. Mxcim

Me: lol what the fuck bruh? When did you get this hot? Yeah you were cute during our varsity days but when did you get so fiiiine

He frowned his eyebrows, clearly confused out of his mind. I was next to pay so I did then he asked me to wait for him, of which I also did

X: so I was right, we do know each other? I just can't seem to put the name to the face. My memory is a bit rusty

Me: I'll give a clue. Atha and the minions

He smiled again, adding a bit of a chuckle this time

Him: Lwa. Dude its been years hey. Come here

He pulled me in for a hug, he smelled expensive and he had strong arms, he probably lives at the gym

Me: what are you even doing here?

Him: I'm here on business actually. A high-profile divorce case and it will most probably drag on until end of Feb. You live here right?

Me: yeah. My family lives here

Him: we should catch up some time

He gave me his business card and I gave him mine. The company name change was finalized on Wednesday and we got our business cards yesterday

Him: alright then Miss CEO, i definitely will be calling you and Lwa...

Me: yes

Him: you still look gorgoeous as ever

We both smiled as he walked away to his car and I went to mine.

Season 3

Insert 89

Soso

My day out with the kids was everything I wanted it to be, we were having fun and even the older ones have managed to put their phones away and engage in the fun. We settled on watch a cartoon movie (I don't even remember the name) to accomodate everyone but it was owele that seemed to enjoy it the most, tugging at my shirt everytime something they considered exciting happened but I was just happy they were happy

Me: so, how's high school princess?

We were now seated at Panarotti's having pasta and pizza. It was Loyiso's idea because he was over spur food, so he says and Yaya apparently read somewhere that McDonald's food is artificial, I don't know what that even means but because of that, she straight up refused to eat there so we decided on this place

Yaya: I don't even get what the big deal is over high school, I don't feel any different, smaller yes but that's about it

Alwa: that's because you have us to look out for you and the whole school knows that

Yaya: hold up, the whole school knows I'm related to the minions? Oh well there goes my chance of being popular

Loyiso frowned his eyebrows at his sister who was paying him no mind but rather poking at her pasta but when he called out her name, her eyes shifted to him

Loy: I told you to let go of that name, I won't repeat myself to you about the same thing as if you have issues understanding

Yaya: dude calm down, its not like I mention it outside the family and besides everyone in the family calls you guys that and you don't see Q getting his knickers in a knot over it

She didn't even wait for a response from Loyiso because after saying all that, which I consider was crossing the line and disrespectful but obviously i wasn't going to

address it right now. Ever seen how foolish people look why reprimanding a child in public? Yeah well, I wasn't going to be a part of that so instead I changed the topic and we spoke about lighter things and eventually the mood lightened up. By the time we left the restaurant, it was already 5pm so I drove us home, the energy in the car is one thing that I miss everytime i don't see my kids for more than two days. When we got home there were about 25 cupcakes on the counter and Lwa was busy icing the chocolate cake and when the kids saw all that, they crowded the kitchen, begging their mother for a cupcake

Lwa: guys out please, i'm busy

Shaun: mama please just one

Lwa: after dinner

Li: one now then one after dinner

Lwa: Limile since when do we negotiate in this house?

Li went silent and Lwa finished him off with that "exactly" look and just like that the kids scattered all over the house

Me: they look good babe and that cake takes the cup. You really outdid yourself

Her: lol ngempela baby?

I nodded while taking a cupcake, she can deny the kids but there is no way she will do that to me. She was looking so cute in the apron which was covered in flour plus the flour patches on her cheeks completed the look, although i have a feeling she staged it

Her: so how was your day out with your kids?

Me: exhausting but fun and worth it. Yaya and Loyiso went off at each other during lunch

Her: over what now?

Me: she called them the minions

Her: lol call your daughter to order ngoba mase bemushaya lana ngizothula mina ngoba akezwa. Abalifuni ngempela lelo gama

Me: I'll talk to her.

Turns out she made sweet sticky chicken for dinner which is the kids' favorite so they were licking their fingers nonstop during dinner

Q: sweet sticky chicken stays winning. My future wife better get the recipe from mom before she even says "I do"

Alwa: lol so you will ask her if she got it after the wedding?

Q: after? Nah fam, her vows better be that recipe. I promise you

Dinner with the family was entertaining as usual until the part where my wife, whom I paid tons of money for; to love me and take care of me decided that its ok for me to wash dishes. 8 kids in the house and somehow, I get picked to be the dishes guy

Yaya: I'll help you daddy

Great this will give us a chance to talk about her and Loyiso before Loy loses it with her. We clear the table, load the dishes in the dishwasher then we both chill on the counter waiting for it to finish. The rest of the family has scattered all over the house so its just the two of us

Me: baby you owe your brother an apology

She looks at me with confusion but I know she knows what I'm talking about

Me: he is older than you and you can't talk to him the way you did

Yaya: dad you can't be serious. Loyiso is controlling, he likes to dictate everyone's life just because he is the oldest and honestly the minions thing isn't that major. He will get over it

Me: it might not be major to you but it is to him and as for controlling, that's what big brothers do. Its how they show their love, uLoyiso uyakthanda baby and trust me when I tell you that you disrespecting him in front of the little ones hurt him so just apologise

She rolled her eyes then sighed. My daughter is spoiled on the highest level and she is getting bratty with every waking day

Her: fine. I'll apologise

Me: and if you roll your eyes at me again, I'll ground you until you finish high school.
Siyevana?

Her eyes widened as she nodded in agreement

*

*

Lwa

Advocate Xolani Khumalo aka X... mmmmh now that's a sight for sore eyes. When I first met him, he didn't have the title nor the sexiness that he now possesses. He was best friends with my ex, Atha and his res was next to mine. He has always been a cutie but just like fine wine, he got better with age. He is smart, he looks good, smells good and has a bit of superman in him. My hero. Let's just say he played a major role in me getting rescued from Atha and Lunga all those years ago. Ok now that the history lesson is out the way, lets move along. So here we are now, having lunch in my office. He called last night asking that we go out for drinks but I'm a working mother so going out ebsuku with someone other than my husband isn't what I do

X: so, what have i missed empilweni yakho? We haven't seen or spoken to each other in 15years

Me: lol sounds like you've been counting

He smiled while picking a french fry from his meal, we we were having McDonald's...cheap I know but the fries are world class

Me: I got married 14years ago, had 3 kids after the minions and recently bought this company.

Him: hmmm life has been good to you I see.

Me: if only hey. Everything good I have in my life right now came with a great challenge that my husband and I had to overcome. Growing up is tough but one just has to toughen up and fight through it

He leans back on the couch and stares at me with half a smile on his face, his eyes are sparkling for some reason and after some time, I shift my eyes to my food. I can't

bring myself to look at him any longer, its starting to get weird so I clear my throat with the hope that he will look else where

Him: sorry about that, I just got lost in the sound of your voice. You sound happy Lwa and I hope you truly are happy.

Me: believe me, I am. So wena? What's been going on with you?

Him: after varsity I travelled for a few months, the plan was for it to be a year but I had to come back early for Atha's funeral. Now that I think about it, I should have seen you there but I didn't

Well most probably because I was laying in hospital fighting for my life after your so-called bestie shot me. I wanted to say that but stopped myself because I didn't want to be rude and shame poor guy probably doesn't know about that

Me: I wasn't feeling well

Him: oh ok. So yeah man, I had to cut my travels short so following year I got a job in Durban and decided to settle there.

Me: wife? Kids?

Him: lol no and no. I was and still am focused on my career. Not many women understand my work schedule so my relationships don't last

We spent the remainder of my lunch hour just laughing and catching up. Later I picked up the kids from school, helped them with the homework then retired to my room with my glass of wine. I was watching Twilight: Breaking Dawn part two when my phone rang, it was hubby calling. A smile washed over my face as I answered

Me: my heart

Soso: my rib. Ndikukhumbule fondin

Me: lol its still Tuesday babe, don't hurt my heart like this

Him: eish ndiyayaz baby. How are you? How are the kids?

Me: we are fine my love, just missing you.

I know siyatefa noBaby wam but ayijwayileki leLong distance shame. My bed is cold during the week but the kids are used to it now, those traitors. They were all emotional when he left but look at them now, going on with their lives

Him: so, who is the guy you had lunch with today?

Heeh what's this now? Is this man spying on me? He can't be serious right now

Me: how do you know about my lunch plans?

Him: you are my wife Lwa, I know your every move

Me: you sound ridiculous Lwandiso. Seriously ridiculous

No, but honestly uyasangana uLwandiso, who watches a person's every move and if he doesn't trust me, he should just say so

Him: I asked you a question Lwandile. Don't make me repeat myself. Who was that man ngoba he isn't a client nor is he a potential client

Me: he is a friend

Him: yeses Lwandile. You just never listen. Tell me something, is this how every week will be like?

Me: haaibo Lwandiso, number 1, don't raise your voice at me and number 2, you need to calm down because if you don't, I'll hang up on you

Him: mxm

Next thing the line went dead. Yho Jesus take the wheel before I take this man's life.

****Next time you drop the phone in my ear, you will come home to an empty house, I promise you Lwandiso Shaun Smith. Since when don't we respect each other in this marriage? ****

After sending that text I switched my phones off, enjoyed my movie and wine then later fell asleep. Next morning as we were having breakfast, Sno approached the dinning area with a bouquet of red roses and a box of chocolates

Me: flowers so early in the day? Who is this guy of yours Sno?

Sno: lol udlala ngam sisi. They are for you

She placed them in front of me, I shifted my plate to the side and retrieved the card and opened it:

"Good morning beautiful. I searched throughout the world to find flowers to compliment your beauty but even these roses don't compare to you. I'm sorry. Have lunch with me today"

Season 3

Insert 90

Lwa

I read the card over and over again and everytime the smile on my face grew wider, i'm sure i was literally smiling ear to ear ngoba even my cheekbones started hurting. This man kodwa thixo, kazi where did i find him? I took my phone from the side of my plate and dialled his number and he answered on the first ring as if he has been waiting for my call

Soso: i'm sorry

Me: good morning Lwandiso

Him: i'm really sorry mamakhe for hanging up on you last night. I shouldn't have disrespected you like that

I got up from the table, took my plate with my half-eaten food and headed to the kitchen

Me: so, the lunch proposal? How's that going to work since you are in Jo'burg and i'm here?

Him: my flight is booked for 10am. What i did last night was really uncalled for so i have to come apologize in person

Lord this man is everything. The moment he says that my heart starts doing cartwheels and its not even about what he said but rather the way he said it, he wasn't being extra, he was just being my Soso

Me: i love you. Dammit you make it so difficult to stay mad at you

He giggles, tells me he loves me more then we hang up. My day is made, fuck it my whole week is made thanks to flowers from my lover and this call we just had.

Me: asambeni guys. I don't want to be late

Alwa: dabs Mnqobi wants to drive me to school

Me: don't push it Alwande Hadebe. Grab your bags and let's go

She sulked all the way upstairs and she is crazy if she thinks i'm going to allow such nonsense. The last thing i need is her getting pregnant and everyone blaming me for it.

The time is 10:56 and the work load on my desk doesn't seem to be decreasing and all my focus is on it to the extent that i don't hear the door open but after a while something tells me I should lift my head and when i do, I'm met by his eyes. He is standing at my door, leaning on the door frame and just staring at me. Creepy yet kind of cute

X: you work too hard

Me: and you don't work at all

Him: I have flexible hours on some days

He walks in and damn he looks mighty fine, dressed in light grey coat over a navy suit with a navy scarf and his glasses hanging from his top pocket. Dammit. He places a kiss on my cheek then sits down in front of me

Him: let's have go for coffee

Me: i have work to do Xolani. I really can't

Him: lunch?

Before i could answer, some one answers for me, causing the both of us to focus our attention to the door and when i see him my heart starts racing. Angaz why ngoba its not like i'm doing anything wrong but knowing Lwandiso, all hell is about to get loose

Soso: she already has plans with her husband

He walks in, not taking his eyes off me which makes me more nervous ngoba the look on his face doesn't scream "I'm happy to be home". When he gets to my desk, I get up to greet him with a hug then he pulls me closer to him and kisses me. I'm not talking about a peck, i'm talking about the kind of kiss that leads to the bedroom. When his tongue invaded my mouth and his hands grabbed my ass, giving it a gentle squeeze, I couldn't control the moan that escapes my mouth and when X cleared his throat, I pulled back from the kiss

Soso: hey

I smiled

Me: hey...uhm babe this is X, you remember him, right?

Soso: ndoda have we met before?

X: not really. Xolani Khumalo

He pulled out his hand towards Soso and Soso shook it but his face didn't ease up at all, in fact he became even more tensed up

Soso: Lwandiso Smith, her husband. Father of her children and co- owner of this company

Oh, wow Soso, was that even necessary? Men and their egos kodwa. I could never understand any of this nonsense yabo. Even a blind person can see how uncomfortable this situation was right now

X: nice to meet you bruh. I shall see you around Lwa

He was on his feet and ready to go, i couldn't hug him goodbye because Soso was holding on to me for dear life

Me: alright X

I smiled faintly as he walked out the door then turned my attention to my husband. Soso kodwa ai cha

Soso: what?

Me: nothing

We both sat on the couch with his head on my lap. We were sitting in what seemed like peaceful silence but i know he had a lot on his mind

Me: so, where are we having lunch?

Him: Lwandile you are going to be the death of me. I swear to God, uzondibulala wena

Me: haaibo ngenzeni mina manje? Baby X is harmless. He is an old friend

Him: who happens to be your ex's best friend. Andiyithandi leFriendship yenu. He looks at you like you are a piece of meat that he is ready to eat any moment now.

I roll my eyes and i'm glad he can't see me because if he saw me doing that, I'd get punishment coming my way. I want to tell him ayikho yonke lento ayibonayo but that will be an argument I won't win so i just keep quiet. After sometime he lifts his head from my lap and stares at me

Him: I don't like that guy

Me: ok I heard you the first time. So, lunch, where are we eating?

He shakes his head as he gets up and walks towards the door, locks it then walks towards my desks and sits on it

Him: take your clothes off

Me: no

I'm in no mood for sex so he better get that stupid idea out of his head as in yesterday.

Him: askies?

Me: i said no

He chuckles softly then walks towards the couch, picks me up. Trust me when I tell you that I was beating his shoulders and kicking him but did he put me down? No. He places me on the table then grabs a pair of scissors from the desk and cuts a small slit on the neckline of my dress. I'm beyond pissed ke manje because this is my favourite dress. He rips my dress from the top down until its open

Him: see what not listening leads to? Now your dress is torn but i asked you nicely to take it off but because you are stubborn, here we are

Me: Lwandiso leave me alone. This is not the time nor place for this

Next thing my underwear is off and my legs are spread on the desk as if i'm a frozen chicken. At least he had the decency not to rip them off me

Me: Smith listen to me. Let's go home and do this there. Please

I felt my body starting to betray me, I was getting wet from just imagining all the things that are coming my way. His head got between my thighs and he ate me out, tongue fucking me in the process causing me to moan loudly

Soso: shhh. This office is not sound proof like our room

Me: so, stop then

He inserted two fingers in me and finger fucked me rapidly. I was losing all sense of sanity and just wanted him inside me. I begged him, cried, moaned, screamed but he wasn't having any of it. Nigga wasn't having any of that and as i was about to cum, he removed his fingers leaving me in awe.

Him: i owe you lunch. Masambe baby.

He kissed my forehead, inserted the same fingers that were in me just now into his mouth and moaned with his eyes closed

Me: how am i supposed to go for lunch when you ripped my dress apart?

Him: that was your fault. I asked you to take it off and you decided to be stubborn. Masambe mamakhe, i'm hungry.

I always have an extra outfit in the office but he doesn't know that so i'm going to toy with him so he will know to stop ripping my clothes. I put on my underwear, grabbed my phones and handbag then walked towards the door

Me: are you coming?

His eyes widened and he looked at me in disbelief. I wanted to break into laughter but I kept my composure and stared at him

Me: Lwandiso uthe ulambile so asambe so i can come back and work

Him: haai baby you can't walk out like this, there are men in this office bazawthini xa bekubona unje?

Me: angithi udabule ingubo yam so what must I wear ke?

Him: eish

He scratched his head for a couple of minutes not knowing what to do

Him: i didn't think this through yaz baby

Me: yeah obviously

Just then his phone rang and judging by the look on his face, he didn't want to answer but he ended up answering

Him: Smith hello...I'm good and you...which 3pm?

He quickly checked his watch then his frown got even more intense

Him: you can't be serious...reschedule then because i'm out of town...fuck ok book a flight for me for 2pm and move that meeting to 3:30pm... alright bye

He turned to look at me with worry felt eyes and judging from that call, i know he had to go back to Jo'burg today. My heart sank ngoba i was looking forward to our lunch and falling asleep in his arms

Him: baby

Me: i know. Don't explain. I understand

Him: I'm sorry. I still have 2 hours to kill. Come here so i can fuck the stubbornness out of you

Here we are cuddling on the couch after an intense quickie trying to catch our breaths

Me: you know I didn't cum right

Him: I know and remember that the next time you entertain another man while you are still my wife

Me: but I didn't entertain him

If he thinks he is going to leave me like this, he has another thing coming. I get on top of him and claim what's mine. He left 20minutes later, taking all my joy with him. I really hate this back and forth, I wish I could go with him but for obvious reasons I can't. When I get home, I'm dressed in a different outfit and my kids are all over the house doing lord knows what. I take a shower, wear my man's sweatpants and hoodie ngoba summer rain has been at it all day. My phone rings and when i see my little brother's name, I answer

Me: little one

KK: hey sis

He sounded down in the dumps which worried me. KK isn't the type to wear his feelings on his sleeve so this must be serious

Me: talk to me

Him: I messed up sis. I messed up badly. I'm a dead man walking

Me: ok Kwandokuhle calm down and tell me what's going on

KK: Mahle dumped me. I got her pregnant and she dumps me for not wanting to marry her

Season 3

Insert 91

Soso

I've spent all month digging on this Advocate Xolani Khumalo guy and i've found nothing. Either he is squeaky clean or he is good at hiding things but if there is something to find then i'll find it. I had just landed in Jo'burg after another eventful weekend with my family and the only thing i want now is a hot shower and a good night's sleep. I get to the house i recently bought and its cold and lonely as always. Lwa was against me buying the house, esithi its a waste of money but property is always a good investment. The house has a few pictures of Lwa and the kids but apart from that, it screams bachelor pad but luckily i share it with my cousin Brandon. Another guy in my family that doesn't want to grow up. The house is a mess, pizza boxes and beer bottles all over the kitchen and lounge

Me: Brandon!!

He comes rushing down the stairs butt naked and instead of being angry i just burst into laughter

Brandon: where is the fire?

Me: lol dawg, why aren't you dressed?

Him: because i'm fucking, you asshole. What's up?

Me: this place is a mess

Him: sorry bruh. I'll clean it up. I promise

He rushes back upstairs and i just shake my head as i head to my room. What a way to be welcomed back to Jozi. I take my shower then call my wife and slept while still talking to her on the phone.

*

*

Njalo

I never thought the day whereby i have to drop my son off in varsity would come so soon. My only baby is a grown man now and about to take on the world. I've had to raise him on my own because his father is as useless as the "ay" in okay. The guy is filthy rich but only problem is that he is married, he was married even at the time Mngqobi was conceived. I was 19 and he was 38, it was never about love or any of the fairytale nonsense. He liked spending money on me and i liked getting spoiled, sleeping with him was a small price to pay for the shopping sprees, trips around the world and car that he bought me but when i got pregnant it was as if my value to him depreciated because he dropped me like a hot potato and moved on with the next young thing naive enough to open her legs for a Gucci handbag or Prada heels. He takes care of his son though, financially that is and that's why i'm dropping him off at a flat in Pretoria instead of res at the TUT campus.

Mngqobi: my bursary just asked if i want a maid for the flat or not

Me: stop calling your father that and i hope you said no to the maid. You can clean up after yourself

I made his bed, packed his clothes in the cupboards then went downstairs to pack the pantry and kitchen cupboards with food. He made us sandwiches and juice and we watched tv. Well i watched tv while his eyes were glued on his phone, probably texting Alwande

Him: mom, are you sure you going to be ok on your own? I don't mind driving home every weekend to see you

Me: to see me or to see Alwa?

He chuckled then just shook his head. He knows better than to lie to me

Me: you better not cheat on that girl; her aunt is crazy and i don't want to lose you so soon

Him: i wouldn't dream of it, mom. I love her too much to hurt her like that. I'm just going to focus on school and i won't have time for girls.

Me: lol this is varsity my boy, everything changes when you get to this place so don't make promises you won't be able to keep. That's all i'm going to say

*

*

Aphile

I have my head facing the toilet bowl for the third time this morning. Whatever was in the stew i had last night at Jason's place is going to kill me. My stomach is turning and i have no energy left in me to throw up anymore so i just lay on the cold tiles in the bathroom and cool off because i already feel like my temperature is 99 degrees. After close to an hour, i get up from the floor, i feel a bit light headed but at least the nausea is over and now i'm starving so i head to the kitchen to make breakfast. My phone rings as i'm buttering the toast and i roll my eyes when i see the name on my screen

Me: hello

Jay: morning beautiful

I roll my eyes again at how cheesy he sounds right now. We agreed this should be casual, nothing serious and definately no catching of feelings but he calls all the time, if we not on the phone, we are texting or we are fucking. It all started on new years eve and ever since that night, he has been coming back for more. Our friends don't know and that's exactly how I want to keep it. The last thing i want is lectures from Lwa and Pali

Me: kunjani?

Him: i'm good even though you decided to ditch me last night after i cooked for you

Me: we agreed that we won't have sleepovers so i had to go

He lets out a sigh as if regretting the arrangement, we have going on but honestly i don't. I like it just as it is, no complication whatsoever

Him: i know. Its just that... actually mandiyiyeke eyo. Uright?

Me: yeah i'm good.

Him: alright bendimane ndikuchekisha akukhonto. Enjoy your day. Sizawthetha later

Me: shap.

I hang up, eat my breakfast then get ready for work even though i'm not a 100% ok but it must be the stomach flu or something so i should probably get vitamins at work.

*

*

Enzo

Me: let's make another baby

Nomz: aaah fuck baby don't slow down, i'm so close

We were having our morning glory and i know the timing was off to bring up the baby topic but what can i say, i want a son and i'm tired of using a condom whereas we are married. I pull out and Noma looks at me like she is ready to murder me

Her: the fuck?

Me: ngfunu enye ingane baby

Her: can we talk about this after sex?

I pull the condom off my dick, throw it on the floor and thrust in her. She moaned louder as i rammed into her until she screamed my name as she came and i followed soon after

Her: please don't tell me you came in me

Me: ok i won't

I got up from the bed, took a towel from the bathroom and cleaned her but she was pissed

Me: baby

She doesn't respond instead she gets up to take a shower, slamming the door hard. My wife isn't shy when it comes to voicing out her emotions and i know she is still going to bite my head off. I make the bed, open the windows then wait for her to come out the bathroom and when she does, she wants nothing to do with what i have to say

Me: baby just try to understand where i'm coming from

Her: you are selfish Enzokuhle. What gave you the idea that i want a second baby? Why not discuss it with me instead of proposing it during sex and acting on it before i even agree

Me: so, you were going to agree?

Her: that's besides the point. You better pray to God and the ancestors that i'm not pregnant because if i am, i'm chopping your dick off and feeding it to Spotty and Bruno outside. I promise you

I don't know why that made me laugh but i found myself giggle at the thought of the dogs fighting over my dick. She joined in my laughter and i pulled her closer and smashed my lips on her then later pulled out

Me: i love you themba lam

Her: mxm i better not be pregnant Enzokuhle

*

*

Palesa

Growing up i never thought that love would ever find me, i never thought that one day I'd be married to someone either than the man who abused me for most of my childhood but here i am, waking up to my definition of perfect. A loving husband and my two beautiful boys, i watch them running around the kitchen attempting to make breakfast

Me: morning guys

Avery turns 12 in June and Lwakhlonke will be 10 in September but they seem so grown up now making me feel too old as well

Avery: morning ma. We are making pancakes

Me: i can see. Have you guys bathed? I don't want you guys to be late

Lwakho: but the pancakes mom

Me: i'll help your father. Go get ready

They rush upstairs while i stare at this beautiful man in my kitchen slaving over the stove in just his boxers. He looks freaken sexy, his muscular back covered in red scratches placed by yours truly last night after the steamy love making

Mike: lol you know i can feel you staring right?

Me: i don't know what you are talking about.

Him: deny it all you want but i know you can't keep your eyes off me

He dishes up for us and later the boys come down for breakfast.

Avery: dad i have a soccer game today, you going to come watch?

Me: don't i get an invite?

Avery: you don't like soccer mom and you will say you will be working.

Mike always has time for the kids when he is around because he doesn't have a demanding job. Him being a gangster took a lot of getting used to at first, it was scary, i feared for my kids and our safety as a family but he has always assured me that we will never be in danger and i believe and trust him

*

*

Lwa

I'm sitting at Mugg and Bean with my cup of coffee in front of me and my phone in my hand. I have a breakfast meeting with my little brother's girlfriend and all i'm praying for is that she doesn't get all emotional, phela pregnant women and control of emotions don't go together. She walks in 5mins late, apologises and places her order. She looks effortlessly beautiful with her natural afro and minimum make up

Mahle: i hope you haven't been waiting for long

She smiles causing me to smile as well ngoba she is nervous for some reason

Me: no i haven't. So, what do you have for me?

Her: well i have 3 options for you and you can choose from them. Firstly, there is educate a boy child then there is a shelter for victims of domestic abuse and lastly a shelter for children of child headed households.

They all sound like great initiatives, something the community needs but its the one of child headed households that speaks out to me the most so i decide to go with that one. Now that business is out the way i decide to touch on this thing yakhe noKK. Its been a month since my little brother called me and when i spoke to my dad last night, he let it slip that KK moved back home

Me: so i'm having another nephew or niece?

She looks at me in confusion then looks away. Ok clearly, she didn't know that i know

Her: he shouldn't have told you. Its still too early to tell people

Me: he is my little brother so we don't keep secrets but what worries me is why would he move back home during what should be a happy time for you guys

Her: we broke up. I just couldn't do it anymore Lwa. Ngikhathele uKK mina.

See what i meant about pregnant women and emotions? The guy refuses to marry her and she dumps him and claims she is tired. Either she is crazy or there is more to this

Her: i've been dating your brother since i was 16 and each and every year i catch him cheating with different women, he gets them pregnant Lwa then forces them to have abortions because he claims to love me. KK has killed probably more than 5 kids in the past 15years and what makes matters worse is that he confesses this to me everytime when he gets drunk and the guilt gets too much for him to handle. I have to be in an out of doctors' offices every 3months to check my status because of him. Your brother doesn't love me Lwa, he doesn't respect me and he doesn't care about me. I'm really done with him this time

Season 3

Insert 92

Lwa

If any of what Asemahle is telling me is the truth then I'm going to kill that boy with my bare hands, screw that he is my little brother. After our meeting I called in at the office and took the rest of the day off because I wanted to drive home, to my parents' house in the afternoon. Sometimes the men in my family just want me to hate them, my father cheated on my mother wabuya noSakhile, Phiwe almost left Nami after he cheated on her with his best friend's ex and now Kwandokuhle is basically a man whore. My phone rang while I drove around town

Me: Xolani

X: hey uright? You sound a bit down

Me: nothing I can't handle. Listen can I call you later? I'm driving right now

Him: oh

The disappointment was clear from that one syllable word but honestly, I was in no mood to nurse egos. I have my own shit going on. When I got to my house, I packed an overnight bag then drove home. Knowing my kids, I will be receiving a call from Sno the moment they don't see me around the house. Ziyatefa lezazinto but I love that they do. It's heart-warming to a mother to know your kids still need you even though sebayakhula. I stopped at the garage, bought refreshments and used that time to call my husband and alert him of my whereabouts

Soso: hey love

Me: Unjani sthandwa sam?

I don't really know why I was down ngoba it's not like I am the one that was getting cheated on but Asemahle is basically family, her older brother is my best friend and her oldest brother is also a family friend ngoba he was besties with Nami. Landile is going to kill that boy and I really hope he does

Soso: what's wrong?

Me: nothing baby. I'm just tired. Anyway, bengfuna ukuktshela ukuthi ngsaya ekhaya, I need to fix a couple of things

Him: what things? Lwandile don't make me fly home right now. I don't like the way you are sounding. You are worrying me

Yho haaike Soso and his drama. Ever since he moved to Jo'burg, he worries too much to the extent that even if one of the kids has flu, he rushes home. See, dramatic

Me: I need to talk to my parents about KK. I'll tell you all about it when you come home. I promise

Him: hmmm

Me: please don't be like that. It's not about us. We are ok, great actually so please don't over think this. Ngyakcela. I have to go. Ngyakthanda baby

Him: call me when you get home. I love you too

*

*

Palesa

"Have you ever loved someone so much you'd give an arm for? Not the expression, literally give an arm for..." Those are the opening lines of the Eminem song, when I'm gone and Mike decided it was the perfect song to play on our ride home from the Tattoo parlor, he had just gotten my face tattooed on his arm

Me: you know just a name would have been fine right?

Mike: just a name? Nah baby. I want the whole world to see that you own me...well wena and our sons but mostly you ngoba you gave me them

The one thing I love and appreciate about Mike is that he worships the ground I walk on, he is no push over, I mean he is a xhosa man after all but he knows and respects my role in his life. When we get home, we have the house to ourselves which is a rare moment, the boys are with his parents.

Mike: babe I was thinking neh

Me: oh no that's never a good thing

We were chilling on the couch watching a movie. My head on his lap and my feet on the other end of the couch. Just us enjoying our own space. He smacked my forehead playfully and chuckled. His laugh has to be one of my favorite sounds and it's a rare sound because my man is forever serious. He used to be such a joker, never taking anything seriously but the birth of our sons changed him, he aimed to be a better man for them and he always lays a firm hand when it comes to them

Mike: ok hear me out before you shoot down my idea

Me: sounds serious

Him: it is. I want to have a big thing for ibirthday kaLwakho. He is turning 10 this year and I want both our families to be there

Me: forget it Michael. I don't want my mother anywhere near my kids

Him: come on babe. Just think about it. Ndyakcela

*

*

Aphile

The nausea wouldn't stopped, some days it lasted the whole day and I wouldn't even go to work. Today was one of those days and Jason being Jason decided to invade my personal space on a day I needed to be alone the most

Jay: Aphile, what if you are pregnant?

Me: sundiphambanela mna Jason. Pregnant by who?

Him: yho andaz fondin.

Me: I'm a nurse so I think I'd be the first one to know if I was pregnant and kanye kanye uzofuna nton apha?

He looked at me with confusion before taking his car keys and heading for the door. Okay maybe I was a bit too harsh with the shouting but uyadika mahn naye. I got up from the couch, poured yogurt into a bowl and sat on the couch. When I started getting drowsy, I just put my feet on the couch and slept. When I woke up he was

sitting on the other couch just staring at me. Tch in bawo kanti yinton ingxaki yaloGuy. I ignored him and closed my eyes but I couldn't sleep

Jay: I know awulalanga. I bought food

Me: andilambanga

Him: I don't care. My son needs to eat

I just ignored him, I didn't have the energy to argue about this nonexistent pregnancy anymore. I reached for my phone, texted the girls making lunch plans and sadly Lwa wasn't around but the other bitches agreed so I got up from the couch and headed for my room. Two seconds after I got naked, Jason walked in

Me: when are you leaving?

Him: after you eat and take the pregnancy tests I bought

Me: I'm going out after taking a shower and for the 20th time Jason Smith, I'm not freaken pregnant. Now leave my house

*

*

Soso

Brandon: all I'm saying is that you bringing Lwa here is going to lead to me being homeless. Dawg you know how your wife is

Me: ai you will go sleep at a friend's house then. I'm worried about her. Last time I spoke to her, she wasn't ok

Him: she was probably on her periods or something. Women are like that

I threw a cushion at him shutting him up. Mxm this thing was wearing diapers just the other day and now he acts as if he knows women. I hate it when Lwa is being distant, especially when I'm so far away from her so I call my son. Surely, he must know what's going on with his mother kalok uQhawe nomamakhe are besties

Q: hey dad

Me: ya boy. Uright?

Him: ewe ndiright. Ukhangela umama?

Me: sort of. Uphi yena?

Him: she went to Gogo's house. Uncle KK got dumped so uyolungisa lonto

See why I call Qhawe? He is resourceful. Lwa didn't mention KK being dumped but now I think I have an idea why she was the way she was. I just wished she could just open up to me without me having to poke and dig on my own. I'm sure she told that sleeze ball engu Xolani. I hate their stupid friendship but Lwa thinks andimethembi xa ndisithi andiyithandi yonke lento. After talking to Qhawe, Lwa called telling me she is at home now, safe and sound

Me: so, what's going on with KK?

She left out a defeated sigh

Lwa: angaz nokuthi ngiqale kuphi sthandwa sam. Inde lento, accusations all over the place, denial and worse ke a baby is involved.

Me: ndyeza apho ngoku

Her: no baby it's fine, I'm handling it

Me: I'll tell you when I've landed

*

*

Njalo

Before leaving Mnqobi's flat, I called his father using his phone of course because he blocked my number, it's stupid actually but I just let him be because I never have to ask him for anything ngomntana wakhe, he provides without being asked

Siya: ntwana yam.

Me: not today. It's me

He clicked his tongue and I know as usual he was going to hang up. I sometimes wonder what I ever did for this man to despise me ngoluhlobo, uyandicabukela nyan

Me: ndyakcela Siyabonga please don't hang up

Him: undifuna nton Luminjalo. I have nothing to say to you

Me: ndim ozawthetha kalok. Ndcela undimamele qha

He went silent for a few seconds then gave me the go ahead to speak

Me: andfuni umntanam alambe apha but at the same time I don't want him to be spoiled. Enkosi kakhulu for the flat, inhle but no maid please. He needs to learn to take care of himself and ndifuna sibe ziparents kulomntana, I can't be saying no about something Then wena ubusithi ewe about the same thing. Kunyanzelekile ukuba sibe neUnderstanding.

Season 3

Insert 93

Enzo

I'm standing at the doorway of our bedroom with my hands in my pockets and staring at her, damn kodwa umi kahle umfaz wam

She had her back turned while she sat in front of the dresser applying her make up. We were going to the doctor for the pregnancy test and she was still threatening me with knives and dogs but I was still not fazed.

Me: asambe manje baby, your face is fine

Noma: can you not rush me? Go play with your daughter or something ngoba I'm still going to take a while lana

Me: ai kodwa Nomalanga uyaz what time we have to be at the doctor and can we for once not be late over something so stupid. You can finish the rest of the face drawing in the car

She shot me a death stare then started crying, yelling that I don't appreciate the things she does to impress me. Toiletries were being thrown my way all over the bedroom and her screams were getting so loud that Liyana rushed in

Liyana: Dada why is mommy angry?

Me: mbuze baby because I honestly have no idea

Noma: so, you are ganging up on me now? You and your child. It's fine then. Go to the doctor together. I'm staying

Me: Nomalanga stop being ridiculous and just get up for heaven's sake. Musa nje ukutefa

She threw a hairbrush at me and I slammed the door shut and took my daughter downstairs. Last thing I need is her thinking that throwing things at people is ok

Me: have you eaten?

Her: yes, mama Susan made me toast with bacon and eggs

Me: and you didn't leave me any? Uyancishana Liyana

Liyana: it's bacon dad, you never leave me bacon so why mele ngikshiyele mina?

Me: lol because I'm your Dada and you love me

I started tickling her and she laughed uncontrollably while squirming around on my lap. My favourite 8year old in the world.

Her: lol dada stop I'm going to pee

Me: then mommy will throw a hair brush at you

Her: lol mommy doesn't hit me. Dada please call auntie Mahle. I miss her

I reached for my pocket and pulled out my phone, my sister always takes forever to answer the phone so I just put it on loudspeaker in front of Liyana and went to pour juice for us while we wait for her mother

Mahle: #sniffing# bhuti

Liyana: auntie Mahle what's wrong?

Mahle: nothing my pumpkin patch, I just have flu that's all. How are you? I miss you

Liyana: I miss you too auntie. Can I visit you during the holidays? Pretty please

Mahle: let me talk to your dad about it then get back to you

Liyana gave me the phone ngaykhipha kuloudspeaker first before talking to Mahle. That sniffing wasn't flu related

Me: talk to me

Mahle: I'm pregnant

Me: sis you are 31, you have a great job and you are in a committed relationship so honestly being pregnant is nothing to cry about.

She let out a long sigh then started crying. If ever you seek a way to make me angry or to hurt me, make my sister cry and I promise you, a beast will be unleashed

Her: he cheated on me so many times bhuti and I'm done with him.

Me: he did what? I'm going to drive to Lwa's house now, we shall meet there in 3hrs

*

*

Soso

I had to rent a car when I got to the airport because if I call Lwa to come pick me up, she will convince me to go back to Jo'burg and that isn't an option I want to consider. I manage to get an Audi A1 and Lord knows how much I hate that car, it screams varsity girl with a blesser but that's all they had and I took it. When I got to KwaHadebe, there were 5 cars parked outside, ekaLwa, KK, Mahle and two other I didn't know. I parked next to my wife's car then walked into the house

Laa: I was against yonke lento from the get go. This boy has no good intentions for you sis, 15years into a relationship and what has it brought you apart from pain and sorrow?

Landile was talking to his sister while the rest of Lwa's family and Enzo listened on. I greeted then sat next to my wife who was not pleased to see me at all. There was so much tension in the air that I figured I'll just keep quiet throughout this whole meeting and just be my wife's shoulder

KK: I don't understand the purpose of this Meeting because this is between mina noMahle and we are adults and can fix our own problems without the whole family getting involved

L's mom: Mahle mntanam shiya lento and take some time to heal. Having uKwandokuhle empilweni yakho is going to drag you down. This boy is selfish and I'm even ashamed to call him my son. I didn't raise this rubbish

KK stared at his mother for a long time then started laughing and clapping his hands. No one looked at him because we all knew that isgezo qha esolandela apha

KK: oh, wow mama. You are a real hypocrite

Before he could continue his sentence, a slap from his father landed on his cheek and he held it for a while then continued

KK: you can hit me all you like baba but the truth won't change. Bhut Nami cheated on sis Phiwe and it was wena mama that begged her not to leave him but when I

make a mistake, Mahle must leave me? Ta LDS has a child from outside his marriage but then again wena mama advised Lwa to stay in her marriage because that's what a wife should do kodwa mina ngingowokulahlwa.

Enzo: Lwa and Phiwe are married to the men that cheated on them whereas you are not even considering marrying my sister and mfana wam what you've done isn't a mistake. Uyafeba nje wena straight and I won't wait for my sister to die of AIDS to take action. My sister is done with you

*

*

Aphile

My girls and I were meeting at my favourite restaurant for lunch and as per usual, I was late but it wasn't my fault this time. Jason and I had a steamy sex session before and during my shower. I was still mad at him though and I didn't even take those stupid pregnancy tests, I left them in the bathroom

Lolz: the day Aphile will be on time is the day Jesus will turn wine into water

Pali: yho that would be an abomination guys. Imagine all the wine bottles being filled with just water. I'd die

Me: lol ulinxila kalok wena babe. Uxolo mahn guys, I got held up

Nomz: by who ngoba awunandoda and awunangane

Me: I have a job kalok wethu and andiyifuni indoda mna or ingane. Ndiright ndodwa

A waitress took our orders and I was going to have my favourite, cheddarmelt steak with mushroom sauce and a Greek salad. I also ordered wine, well that was our thing, we never have juice for lunch or dinner when we are out

Nomz: so, guys Enzo and I were supposed to go to the doctor today and when I got downstairs he was gone

Pali: alone? You guys were going to go for a pregnancy test akere?

She nods.

Nomz: and the nigga went without me or his daughter, he just left nje

Me: Noma you are pregnant?

Our order arrived and before it was even placed in front of me, I was jumping up and heading to the toilets with Lolz at my heels. I threw up a couple of times then got out the toilet booth to rinse my mouth

Lolz: aibo AP umithi?

Me: no... andaz actually

Her: are you late?

I nodded as I rinsed my hands and dried them then walked back to the table. I asked for my steak to be packed in a take away and just to have the salad and water. Can't risk with the wine just in case I am pregnant

Nomz: are you ok?

I nodded faintly avoiding any eye contact. I can't be pregnant, especially not with umntana kaJason. We had a crazy conversation with the girls about Noma and her man then later we went our separate ways but instead of driving to my place, I drove to Jason's house. The gate was open so I drove in then knocked on the door. I almost threw up in my mouth when I saw Ovayo at the door

Ovayo: AP, hey kunjani?

Gosh uyadika lomntana, always sunshine and rainbows nje but what fucked me up the most was that she was at Jason's place, my supposed baby daddy. I didn't even bother walking in, what would have been the point vele?

Me: is Jason home?

Just then the motherfucker walked down the stairs in his sweatpants sitting just below the v-line and his abs in plain sight. Seeing him like that on any other day would have my clit tingling in seconds but today because of Ovayo's presence I felt like throwing up so I just turned and rushed to my car. He came running behind me without any shoes on. He caught up with me and pulled me towards him, tears were already streaming down my cheeks and worse ke andaz noba bendilile nton. I didn't even give him a chance to speak, I got out of his embrace and sped off

*

*

Lwa

The meeting was over and Landile, Asemahle and Enzo had left while KK was in the process of leaving as well, angmaz ke ukuthi yena uyaphi but then again, he just messed up his relationship with me and our parents. I don't know what demon my little brother has but all I know is that uzikhiphile kimi. I was now sitting on the patio with my husband, as much as I didn't want him here, I'm glad he came.

Soso: are you mad at me?

Me: no not really. I'm glad you came, I'm just stressed out ngalento kaKK. I actually want to go home manje because what am I still sticking around for when he sees no fault in his ways but instead compares himself with married people

Him: don't be too hard on him, he needs your support as his sister, he has no one in his corner Lwa

Trust a cheater to come to the defence of another cheater. How do I begin in having KK's back in this? Yes, he is my brother and I love him but he messed up kakhulu this time around. What kind of a father is he going to be ngoba engafuni ukukhula nje kuyimanje

Me: let me go say bye to my parents then we can go. You going back to Jo'burg?

Him: no babe, I'm going home with you. I just need to leave the car at the rental place

I got up but when I tried to walk away, he pulled me towards him then kissed my forehead, I don't know why but I held on to him tightly

Him: I'm here for you. I'll always be here for you, I'd drop everything and come running to you. Ndyakthanda Lwa, you are my forever and I'm your pillar whenever you want to lean on me, never hesitate to do so.

The lump in my throat wouldn't let me speak so I just nodded. When we got to the house, the kids were back from school but the older ones were not in the house. I defrosted beef then got started on the rice and veggies. Yaya and Shaun were helping me, arguing about everything so I paid them no mind

Me: uphi uAlwande?

Sno: she said she has extra maths lessons and that Loyiso will pick her up at 5 when he will be done with soccer practice

Me: pick her up with what ngoba last time I checked, Loyiso didn't have a car nor a license.

Sno: he took iGTi kabhuti, he said he has permission to use it

Between KK and Soso and his sons, one of them will give me a heart attack.

Everyone in this house knows that the twins are not allowed to drive unless I say so but clearly what I say nobody hears in this house.

Season 3

Insert 94

Aphile

Staring at the two lines on the pregnancy test with tears streaming down my cheeks. How did I get here? How could I let that fuck boy idiot of a man impregnate me? This not how I pictured my life, this is not what I want especially with that man whore. It's been a month since the time I went to see him and Ovayo opened the door, he has been calling non-stop and I've been ignoring his calls. I don't know why I thought it would be my pussy that would make him change. I guess once a fuck boy always a fuck boy. I decide to pick myself up and take a shower then get ready for work. I made my lunch box, grabbed my things and as I locked up, Jason's car drove in. I roll my eyes because honestly, I don't want to see him or even hear his voice. The moment he gets out the car, I rush to get in mine but he stops me before I get to the door

Jay: Aphile we have to talk

Me: no actually we don't. I get it Jason. I really get it. You and I were never a couple so you don't owe me any explanations

Him: just listen to me please. Ndyakcela. 5mins of your time is all I'm asking for.

I let out a sigh, I'm not ready to listen to anything he has to say. I already have too much going on. He has already flipped my world upside down and I don't need this. Not now at least

Me: I'm going to be late for work so can we do this some other time?

Him: dinner at my place tonight?

Me: your place? Nah bruh you can miss me with that. I'm never stepping foot in there ever again

He frowned his eyebrows acting all confused and well I wasn't going to spell it out for him shame, either he gets it or not, it's not my problem

Him: ok where do you want to have dinner?

Me: my place. I'll get pizza or something

Him: I don't eat take-aways mna Aphile and uyayaz lonto. Jonga zisa apha ikeys zakho and I'll cook apha

I sighed for the second time in a short space of time then handed him my keys, he kissed my cheek and only then did I get a chance to drive to work. The moment I walked into the hospital, I went straight to the gynaecologist's office, I need to know how far I am with this pregnancy

Dr Naidoo: sister Aphile, how may I help you?

Me: uhm I want to do a pregnancy scan

Her: have you done the test?

I nodded nervously, I've never done this before, I've never been in such a position so I don't know what to say and how to say it. I get on the bed, she pours the cold gel on my stomach after warning me that it's cold but I still flinch a bit. She then runs the machine thing over my belly and I hear something that sounds like crashing waves and I get even more nervous

Her: you seem a bit tense. Relax, it's nothing scary

I nod again, it appears I have lost sense of how to make use of my words. When a tiny bleep appears, it's the doctor that smiled endlessly

Her: it appears that you are 6weeks pregnant. Everything seems to be in order but I'm going to prescribe some vitamins for you. I can see you are a bit nervous, don't be. It's a beautiful journey

Me: thanks doc

I get cleaned up then get back to work. My mind is miles away, my nerves are all over the place and my mind is occupied by a million thoughts

*

*

Njalo

Mnqobi: I'm coming home on Friday mom

Me: are the schools closed?

I know he is only coming home for his girlfriend and not for me but I won't mind having him around the house, I've missed him since he left

Him: no mom but yilong weekend kalok, ndikukhumbule

Me: ok as long as it won't affect your school work.

Him: it won't, I promise. I'll just ask my bursary for petrol money then I'll be home before you know it

Me: sugeza Mnqobi.

We laugh simultaneously at his stupid jokes about his father then hang up soon after. I haven't spoken to Siya in weeks but at least now he respects my wishes when it comes to Mnqobi. As much as he plays an active role in my son's life, I never allow Mnqobi to visit him, I don't trust his wife around my son. That woman hates my guts so she probably can't stand the sight of my son. At the end of my phone call with my son, I get back to work. I have a hectic case I need to prepare for. An elderly lady and her family are suing us for damages to property which occurred when the company I work for was constructing buildings in her neighbourhood. It's a simple case but I've been warned that the guy representing the old lady is some big shot. When a knock comes through on my door, I lift my head up and my eyes meet those of my boss, Michael Smith

Mike: how are the preparations going? We can't lose this case Njalo

Me: relax boss, we won't. This old lady doesn't have a leg to stand on

Him: good. The mediation is tomorrow at 10 in the boardroom

Me: don't stress boss, I've got this

He leaves me to get back to work and I must say, I feel confident that this will be a walk in the park for us. Next day I walk into the boardroom and the old lady and her lawyer are already there waiting, they are early so that means they are prepared. The lawyer is on his phone so he has his back towards the door and when I sit down, I clear my throat just to get his attention

Lawyer: let me call you back, I have to work now

He hangs up and when he turns around, I lay my eyes on an insanely gorgeous man. From his caramel skin to his bedroom eyes and pink lips, I'm having dirty thoughts just looking at him. Dammit this man is beautiful

Him: sorry about that.

Me: uhm no problem. Shall we?

He nods and I quickly switch to work mode. We argue back and forth for over an hour without coming to an agreement, whatever he proposes, I shoot down and vice versa

Me: I guess we shall settle this in court

Him: no, hold on, there is no need for that. My client and I will sit down, consider what you are proposing and get back to you before the end of the week

Me: fine by me

Him: You drive a hard bargain advocate Vongwe

Me: lol I'm nothing compared to you advocate Khumalo

Throughout our arguing, I came to learn that he is advocate Xolani Khumalo. We shook hands and the moment he walked out with his client, I released my breath that I was holding in

*

*

Lwa

I served everyone their supper and we ate as a family. It was during the week so Soso wasn't home which was something we were used to now. It was the first week of March which means 3 more months and we will be done with this whole long-distance nonsense. I'm literally counting down the days

Me: Qhawe I'm going to need you to drive your brother and sister to uncle Enzo's house, they are sleeping over there

Q: when?

Me: after dinner. I would drive them myself but I'm too tired

Loy: ndiyahamba nam

Me: do you not have a physics test ksasa?

Loy: but mama Qhawe is also writing ngomsa

Me: your point is? Wena ufuna ukojola and uQhawe akajoli.

He mumbled something under his breath and Alwande and Yaya burst into laughter, I didn't have energy for their nonsense so I didn't ask. I need a holiday away from this house full of teenagers before I pull out all my hair in frustration. After dinner I went to pack for my babies and that's when Li came in running with my phone

Li: yakhala iphone yakho mama

I took the phone and answered ngayifaka kuspeaker then placed it on the bed

Soso: my rib

Me: my heart

Him: you sound down and you are shouting at my kids again

Me: yho haike Lwandiso ngikhathale mina

Him: uthi awumithanga nje baby?

Me: mxm I'm not going to entertain you yaz. You know that's impossible

Him: I miss you sthandwa sam

Me: I miss you more. I think it's the lack of sex that's making me so grumpy

Him: how's about you ditch the kids and come to Jo'burg this weekend? We can spend the whole weekend in bed getting up to no good

I smiled at the thought and does it make me a bad mother for considering it? I miss my husband like crazy and when he comes home, I have to share him with his kids. I need him to myself. We talked some more about our plan and came to an agreement. I'm going to Jo'burg this weekend alone. After packing for izingane zikaSoso, I kissed them goodbye and Qhawe drove them to Noma's house

*

*

Enzo

Asemahle was staying with us since her break up with KK. I was one man living with two pregnant women, I couldn't take it anymore. The emotional breakdowns, the cravings and attention seeking were driving me crazy

Me: anishoni guys, kanti ngaRape ikati lomlungu lashona yini?

They both burst into laughter and honestly, I was being dead serious. I was starting to feel like I'm being punished for something lana

Nomz: lol usho ngani my love?

Me: all this punishment I'm getting. Ai ngeke guys... You guys need to give me a break

Nomz: don't you dare say that. I didn't ask for this baby, you shoved it in me so you must just soldier on until I give birth. You wanted this Enzokuhle and you are getting it

I was defeated and I know I'll be getting blamed until she gives birth but I don't care, as long as I get my son, ngizobastrong. My little sister was awfully quiet and that worried me

Me: Mahle

She looked up at me and the tears in her eyes were enough to crush my heart. I hated what this kid has done to my little sister. This girl is everything to me, my number one lady and my first love

Mahle: bhuti

Me: uright baby?

She nodded but I wasn't convinced. She was hurting and at 2 months pregnant, I don't think she will carry full term. I head to the kitchen, dish up frozen yogurt for us then we ate together and ngafaka some chick flick for them but Noma went to bed half way through it

Me: Mahle let's talk baby

Mahle: do we have to?

Me: ok I'll talk and you will listen ke.

She nodded.

Me: you are my only sister and I love you so much. It breaks my heart to see you like this but I want you to know that KK wasn't your world, you were fine before him and you will be fine after him as long as you know that we as your brothers still love you. We will never stop loving you. I'll be there for you every step of the way with this pregnancy and raising this baby. I promise you so please don't shut me out.

Ngyakcela

I kissed her forehead as she rested her head on my chest and gently sobbed

Season 3

Insert 95

Soso

Falling asleep next to a woman never felt this good until I started falling asleep next to my wife. It was the Easter weekend and I was in bed with my wife just having a joyful easy flowing conversation, she was laughing most of the time which was music to my ears. I love listening to her talking about her dreams, hopes and aspirations, it's heart-warming to know I have a wife that thinks beyond just for herself and her family but also considers the disadvantaged

Me: so sthandwa sam when do you plan on opening the centre?

Lwa: 4years from now. I'm enrolling in a business college next year so I'll know what I'm doing

Me: I just have one favour to ask

She lifted her head from my chest, staring into my eyes as if reading my soul.

Her: let's hear it

Me: just don't neglect me in the process. Me or the kids

She chuckles shaking her head before resting it back on my chest. She doesn't give me a verbal answer but I know deep down that if she commits to this project fully, Lwandiso will be forgotten.

Her: I love you too much to forget you and if I forget you, who will give me sex?

Me: lol Mrs Smith, you are just with me for my bomb digidy sex. I feel so used

Her: you should be feeling good about this

Her phone rang interrupting our little moment, I wonder why it wasn't on silent but most importantly I wondered who was calling her at 6am on a Saturday morning. She looked at the phone then answered which irritated me because unless it was urgent, there was no need to answer it. She was laughing and cheerful during the conversation and when I heard her referring to the person on the other end of the line as "Xolani", my anger got to boiling point and I just got out of bed and went to

take a shower. Two minutes into my shower, I felt slightly smaller hands touching my back but I didn't respond or turn around

Her: why did you get out of bed? I thought we were staying in all day

I was angry, no scratch that, I was fucken pissed and to avoid saying or doing something I'd regret, I decided to just keep quiet until she started planting kisses on my back. I turned around slowly then just stared at her, I was pissed but she still looked hella sexy. She tried smiling but when the smile wasn't returned, it slowly faded away

Her: please don't tell me you are mad about that call

Me: ndifuna ukuhlamba Lwandile, don't touch me

I continued soaping myself, totally ignoring her until she touched me again, wrapping her arms around me this time

Her: I'm your wife Lwandiso. You can't stop me from touching you

Me: ok

I closed the tap and got out the shower with a towel around my waist and as I dried myself, she got out as well and sat on the couch. I wanted to fuck the shit out of her but past experience has taught me not to just do that, I have to be smart about it so after moisturizing my body, I get back in bed naked and switch the TV on. I can feel her stares on me but I don't bother looking in her direction. I'm not going to talk to her or touch her but I know she will end up under me, screaming my name in less than an hour

*

*

Aphile

Jay: how long are you going to keep turning me down? I want a real family for my son

Me: or daughter. I could be carrying a girl

We were on my couch with my legs on his lap and him giving me a foot massage. Ever since he found out about the pregnancy, yes found out because andizange ndamxelela ngokwam but he found a scan in my bedroom drawer and I couldn't exactly deny it after I was caught. Anyway, ever since that day, he has been asking me to give him a chance for us to be official but my answer has been no. I don't trust him, he still has excitement over becoming a father and he doesn't mean all the nonsense he is saying.

Him: don't change the subject Aphile, why won't you give us a chance? You know I've changed and I just want you and only you

Me: the fact that I haven't caught you yet doesn't mean you haven't been up to no good and me avoiding your house makes it easier for you to do your shenanigans without my knowledge

He let out a sigh then wathula. He does this every time we talk about him, I don't know why he takes offense now when he knows he has never wanted to be serious but I'm expected to believe that overnight, he has changed and wants to be committed? I'm not naive and I'm definitely not stupid. After some time of awkward silence, I decided to break it ngoba I know he will be quiet until kingdom comes if I don't say anything

Me: ufuna ukutya nton?

Him: I'm not staying over tonight. I have things I need to do so I'll be leaving in 30mins

Me: kutheni ungatsho kalok?

Him: ndyatsho nangok mos. Anyway, I think I'm crowding you now

Ok I don't know where that came from or where it was headed but I wasn't going to entertain his emotional tantrums. If he wants to leave then he can leave. I don't care, I don't need him anyway. I didn't respond instead I got up and made my way to the kitchen to make myself something to eat since I'm spending the night alone today. I took out chicken strips, defrosted them then made chicken stir-fry and noodles. He walked in as I was dishing up for myself

Him: I'm leaving

Me: ok bye

I didn't even bother looking up until I heard the door close. If he thinks I'm going to beg him then he has another thing coming, I'm not one of these floozies zakhe that think just because he is rich and good looking, he deserves to be worshipped. A few days passed without hearing anything from Jason and as much as I hate to admit it, bendimkhumbula so I decided to go to his place. I know I said I'd never step foot there but pregnancy has made me a horny bunny and my vibrator just doesn't hit the right spots anymore. I get to his house, use the remote he gave me to open then park outside his garage. I sit in the car for a few seconds contemplating whether to go in or not, what if I find another woman in there again. Mxm I don't care, it's his baby that's making me horny and he needs to take care of it. I knock on the door and after a while he opens the door looking like he was already sleeping, it was almost midnight anyway. He was in his briefs, his hair roughed up and rubbing his eyes

Jay: Aphile what are you doing here so late?

Me: are you alone?

Him: yeah, I am, come in. You hungry?

Me: not really. Do you have cookies and milk?

Him: lol fondin you drove all the way here for Oreos?

We shared a laugh as we made our way to the kitchen. He took out a pack of Oreos from the pantry, placed them on a side plate then warmed two mugs of milk

Me: your silence is too loud

He sighed

Him: I was giving you what I thought you needed. You make it so obvious that we are nothing more than people that fucked and made a baby so I'm just trying to stay in my lane.

Me: ok well the main reason I'm here so late is that I couldn't sleep because of your baby

He suddenly got a look of worry on his face which made me laugh but I contained myself

Him: what's wrong with my boy?

Me: or girl. Your baby is making me horny

Him: lol well let's go fix that

He lifted me into his arms and walked towards the main bedroom but I stopped him. Suddenly I didn't want to have sex where he has had it with all the other women

Me: can we have sex in another room. One that you haven't fucked anyone in

Him: I've had sex in every room in this house Aphile

*

*

Enzo

Today I was taking my girls shopping, just to spoil them and lighten up their moods. Noma was two months pregnant and Mahle was on her third month while Liyana was enjoying having her aunt in the house.

Me: ok so what are we buying?

Liyana: dada I want a bicycle and a doll house that's big like the one Kwando has

Noma: where will you put the doll house because your play room will be turned into a nursery

Liyana looked at me and I looked away ngoba angifuni ukuzingena. If I say something I know it will lead to Noma wanting a bigger house and I don't have the finances for that

Liyana: dada mama is being unfair. She can't do that. Where will I play?

Noma: outside maybe

I took my daughter's hand and left the preggies at Woolworths and we went to Toys R us. I bought the bicycle sayolifaka emotweni then as we walked back into the mall, my eyes caught something that instantly pissed me off. KK was at Mugg n Bean with some coloured lady. I swear if I wasn't with my daughter, I was going to walk up to him and punch him. They looked so cosy and happy whereas my little sister was

crying herself to sleep every night. I made sure to walk close to where they were seated so he could see me and when he did, he ran out the restaurant and came to me. My anger was rising and for his sake, I hope he doesn't say anything stupid

KK: eita bruh Enzo

Me: sho

Him: ugrand brazo?

Me: sho

I didn't even want to give him the slightest idea to think him and I were cool. We are not cool, we are far from it actually. This boy has no respect for my sister and that means he has no respect for me as well

Him: uhm brazo ngyazi ngiflopile and I want to make things right. Inkinga yam ukuthi Mahle blocked all my numbers so I can't get a hold of her

Me: so how is that my problem?

Him: it's not but I was hoping you could allow me to come to your house so I can talk to her. Sidinga ukukhuluma noMahle brazo, before the baby is born. Ngyakcela

I sighed, shoving my hands in my pockets. The last thing I want is for my sister to get hurt but yena noKK are having a baby together and as much as he is a mess, it doesn't change that he is the baby's father

Me: ngizokhuluma noMahle then get back to you. I'm not going to force her to talk to you, if engafuni, there is nothing I can do about it

Him: I understand. Ngyabonga Brazo.

Me: you fucked up ntwana, kakhulu futhi. I won't hide that from you

He lowered his head as Liyana and I went to find her mother and her aunt. We found them at Edgars looking at baby accessories and I had to get them out of there before they go crazy

Noma: now I'm hungry

Mahle: me too. I need a triple cheese burger and fries with a large strawberry milkshake

Noma: I just want ribs and buffalo wings

Me: so, spur?

Liyana: I want McDonald's mina dada

Me: you will get McDonald's when we go home.

We walked to spur, placed our orders then I decided to break the news to Mahle now while she is still in a happy mood

Me: sis ngibone uKK

She rolled her eyes while pressing her phone as if I didn't just say something to her

Me: Mahle

She lifted her eyes and looked at me

Me: he asked to come over to the house. Ufuna ukukhuluma nawe

Her: ok

Me: you will hear him out?

Her: yes. Only to talk about the baby. As long as you will be there bhuti then it's fine with me. I can't exactly exclude him from this pregnancy it's his child naye

*

*

Lwa

Ngyamaz uLwandiso, I dated him for a while before we got married and I've been married to him for quite a long time so I know what ticks him off and that call with X got to him but into engingayi Understandi ukuthi why it got to him ngoba he said he accepts ifriendship yam noX. As we laid in bed that morning, he was mute and it was annoying ngoba he just kept giving me one-word answers

Me: Soso just tell me if you are angry instead of lento oyenzayo.

Soso: should I be angry? Why would I be angry?

Me: well you've been in a sour mood since my phone call with X

Him: Why is he calling you so early in the day? He knows you have a man so ufuna ntoni kusa nje?

Me: nothing. He was just checking up on me

Him: at 6am? Or sisqhelo? He does this every morning

Mxm now he was being ridiculous, there is nothing wrong with my friend calling to check on me, whether it's at 6am or 10pm. He is a friend not my side guy

Me: baby you sound ridiculous right now.

Him: no Lwandile actually I don't. I don't want this man calling you at all hours of the day. Set boundaries for this friendship yenu since you clearly can't end it but I won't be disrespected by another man in my house.

Me: ok I'm sorry. I shouldn't have answered nam.

He took his briefs off then got on top of me, I was naked anyway since I didn't get dressed after we took our shower. His king was pressing hard against my clit causing me hold his biceps tighter

Him: you really shouldn't have answered

He rubbed the tip of his king against my clit and moans escaped my mouth, I wanted him to shove it deep inside me but it wasn't going to happen anytime soon

Me: baby please

Him: don't bother. I won't fall for your pleas today

He sucked hard on me nipple causing me to scream in pain and pleasure. I don't know why but I could feel my orgasm brewing deep inside me and I needed to release

Him: you better not come before I say so

Me: but babe

Before I could finish my sentence, his manhood was deep in my cervix but he wasn't moving.

Him: let's talk ke baby wam

Me: now?

Him: no time like the present. So how are the kids? Zinjani iichomi zakho?

Me: baby you can't be serious

I start moving under him but he pushed in deeper and I stopped. This was torture to another level. I don't want to talk, I want to have sex

Him: if you don't talk, I'll talk and I won't stop.

Ngazithulele mina, not interested in his games then when he started pounding in me, I screamed his name as my orgasm took over then he stopped in the middle of it but I grinded myself until I calmed down

Season 3

Insert 96

Njalo

I don't think I remember the last time I went out on a date or the last time I was excited over a man that isn't Lwandiso Smith but here I am right now going crazy over what to wear. My bed is covered in clothes and I'm sitting on my bed clueless. Jumpsuit or dress? Or maybe jeans and a blouse will do the trick? A knock on the door interrupts my thoughts but I'm already running late so I don't have time to entertain uninvited guests but this person doesn't give up. I put on my gown and head towards the door, mind you I have no makeup on, I'm just my natural self with my weave tied in a messy bun. I open the door and when I see who is behind it I quickly close it. What is he doing here? We agreed we'd meet at the restaurant and as much as I know I'm running ridiculously late, he still shouldn't have come here. He knocks again, softer this time and I open the door. He looks so yummy in his navy chinos, white V-neck t-shirt and beige blazer. He is holding red roses, a bottle of wine and a box of pizza. Ok, what am I missing here, we had dinner plans at a restaurant not pizza and wine and my place. I let him in, he places the pizza and wine on the kitchen counter then hands me the flowers

Lani: for you. I don't know what flowers you like but I know I can never go wrong with red roses

I smile but before I can say anything, he kisses my cheek and smiles as well making my knees weak instantly. I don't see myself getting used to the way this guy makes me feel. We are not even together, he asked me out on a date the day his client lost her case to us which was 3 days ago

Me: thank you Lani but I'm a bit confused

Him: have I told you how much I enjoy the way you call my name? Most people call me X or Xolani and you just decide to call me Lani. Only you call me that.

The smile hasn't wiped off my face since the moment he walked in, oh and have I mentioned how heavenly he smells? He smells godly. I walk away from him to find a

vase, I don't even know when last I received flowers so obviously I have no idea where to start looking for a vase

Me: make yourself at home while I put these in water and go get dressed

Him: please don't get dressed

He pauses for a second as the room goes dead in silence. Aibo what does he mean by I shouldn't get dressed? He better not think he will be getting any tonight. I'm not that kind of girl anymore

Him: ok that did not come out the way I hoped it would. What I mean is don't dress up. I want you to be comfortable so maybe sweatpants and a tank top should do the trick

Me: lol oh I was already getting ready to kick you out. The remote is on the couch and I'll be back just now

He winked at me then focused on the TV while I dashed to my room, I stare at the clothes on the bed and shake my head while giggling a bit. I pulled out my grey leggings and a white tank top, I'm not the sweatpants wearing type of girl, I prefer leggings for comfort. I checked my weave and face one more time then went out and sat next to him. He looked at me for a while then smiled

Him: you look beautiful MaVongwe

Me: lol don't lie. So, what happened to our plans?

Him: well I had a change of mind. I am allowed to do that right?

His sense of humour was just right. No dry jokes and no forced jokes

Me: lol I don't know hey. Are you?

Him: lol don't make me go into lawyer mode. On a serious note, I remembered that you mentioned that you haven't dated in a while so when you didn't arrive at the restaurant, I thought you got uncomfortable with the idea and bailed. It didn't help much that you were not taking my calls

My phone is probably on silent under the mountain pile of clothes on my bed. I don't think I have it in me to ignore or reject this man

Him: So, I decided that I should come over with pizza and wine, we can watch a movie and just get to know each other. I like you Luminjalo and I don't usually feel the way I feel about you often

Ok he did say he likes me, right? That wasn't in my imagination and my mind didn't not conspire with my heart to make me hear things that were not said. This man just said he likes me so what do I say now? I like him as well but maybe it's a bit too soon to say it back

*

*

Palesa

"Holding a grudge against someone is like drinking poison and expecting the other person to die" that was one of the quotes I read on the internet while researching how to forgive someone that has never apologized. I know it's crazy to seek such answers on Google but my brain was wrecked from all these thoughts of the past and how I'm failing to just forgive and move on.

Avery: mom, are you and dad getting divorced?

Me: what would give you that idea?

Him: the walls in this house are thin mom. You and dad have been fighting a lot and we hear you all the time when you cry after he drives off

Mike and I haven't been seeing eye to eye these days since I refused for my mother to be a part of Lwakho's birthday celebration. That's why I've been researching about forgiveness, to save myself and my marriage because if I don't forgive that witch at some point, Mike will leave me. He just doesn't understand the hate I have for that woman, the things she put me through, blaming me for her boyfriend raping me, her saying that I was asking for it and I seduced him. He wasn't my biological father so I can excuse him but she is my mother, I grew in her womb and she gave birth to me but failed to protect me and saw nothing wrong with all of it. Where do I even start in mending that kind of thing and building a relationship with her? What do I say to her? How do I bring her back into my life and help her build a relationship with my children whereas she is a failure at nurturing and being loving towards a child?

Me: your father and I will be fine. There will be no divorce and I don't want you or your brother to worry about that. Please

He nodded in agreement and went back to focusing on the PlayStation game he was playing. That night Mike came home around 10pm, the boys were already in bed asleep and I was in the lounge with my cup of herbal tea and my laptop on the couch. I was still busy with my research

Mike: hey, you still up

Me: yeah. I'm not sleepy yet plus I'm still busy. You hungry?

Him: nah I ate at the office

Me: alright

I had nothing else to say so I typed away on my laptop, I even got numbers of a few psychologists that I plan on contacting soon. I had to take a step in letting go of my past and now felt like the right time after all these years. After a while Mike came down the stairs and stood a distance away from me

Him: when are you coming to bed?

Me: when I'm done here

Him: when will that be? Palesa I'm not going to sleep on a cold bed whereas I have a wife

Me: I sleep on that bed just fine when you drive off in the middle of the night and not come back until the next day. I don't die and neither will you

Him: askies?

I keep quiet and ignore him but before I know it he is in front of me. He takes my laptop and smashes it against the wall breaking it into a million pieces

Him: I said repeat what you just said

Me: why? You heard me and I want a new laptop in the morning. I won't entertain your madness Michael, if you want to throw toys out the cot then be my guest but I want my laptop and you can sleep by your fucken self because I won't share a bed with a monster. You say you were at the office but you smell like a brewery, you

have lipstick on your collar and cum stains on your pants. I don't know what your problem is but it's no longer me

With that said I got up but when I tried walking away he pulled me roughly and I fell back on the couch. He was raging with anger and if it was anyone else, I would have been scared but this is my husband and I know him better than he knows himself.

Him: Palesa you don't have any respect anymore? You talk to me like I'm just a nobody and I won't stand that. You will show me some fucken respect or else I will blow your brains out

Me: do it!! Kill me right here, right now. In this house while your children are asleep upstairs. I dare you. I fucken dare you Michael. Do it.

Within a blink of an eye, he pulled out a gun from under the coffee table and aimed it at my head

*

*

Aphile

Jay: lol baby I promise you I really sold the house

Me: munchie, are you serious? Why would you do that? Uzawhlalaphi ngok?

Him: because I want to have sex in my own house with my girlfriend and not have to drive to her place at 2am when she is horny.

I burst into laughter just thinking about how much he complains every time I wake him up to tell him that I'm horny and I won't have sex with him in his house. A week ago, I finally gave in and decided to take a chance on us. If it works out then good but if it doesn't then at least we tried. I still don't want to have sex or even spend time at his house so he has decided to sell the house and buy a new one

Him: I will move back home while I still look for a perfect house for us and our son

Me: or daughter. But baby I don't want to do the whole vat n sit thing. Yho angathini nomamam xa ese va ukuba ndyahhlalisana

Him: lol umdala kalok baby. Umamakho doesn't control your life. You are your own person

Me: tchin awumaz lamfazi Jason. She is Zulu so she is a bit crazy

My mom doesn't care how old you are, if you are not married, you have no business living with a man. Doesn't matter if ninabantwana ndawonye, she says umntana akasiwo amalobola. I still haven't told her I'm pregnant even though I'm already on my 6th month. I will tell her when I'm a week away from giving birth. I was having mixed emotions about irelationship yam noJason for a number of reasons, uyayithanda isex umntanabantu and he likes dipping his fingers in numerous cookie jars. I don't think he is capable of being satisfied by one woman and I'm just scared of getting my heart broken. The feelings for him are there, they are strong actually. He is a fun guy, sweet, caring, loving and a bit emotional. Now that we are in a relationship, he wears his heart on a sleeve and it makes me realize how vulnerable he can get. After our little phone call, I get in bed and instantly fall asleep. The next day I'm woken up by a knock on the door, I hate being woken up but I drag myself out of bed and go open, it's 7am and these bitches are knocking on my door. 2 of them have husbands they could be having sex with but no, they'd rather come wake me up

Lolz: let us in already and why are you not dressed?

Me: dressed? Dressed for what?

Lwa: didn't Noma tell you we are going out for breakfast before work

I turn my attention to Noma and because I don't remember anything relating to a phone call about breakfast from her

Lwa: Noma you did call her right?

Nomz: I forgot guys. I'm sorry

Lolz claps once and throws herself on the couch.

Lolz: you knocked up bitches never remember to do anything and wena AP when are you planning on telling us who knocked you up?

Lwa: Lolo come on don't start

Lolz: we all want to know, she is hiding the guy as if he is married to 3wives with 15kids already. The curiosity is killing me

That's another thing Jason and I agreed on, we are keeping each other a secret until after the baby is born, he says it's for my own protection but I know he just doesn't want his whores jumping me when I'm at the mall or something. Problem is I want to tell my friends, I hate being labelled as sneaky and keeping secrets.

Me: let me go get ready

I leave them and go shower but when I get out the shower I hear a male voice in the lounge. I'm praying it's not Jason but the moment I hear the man laugh, I know my secret is out the box because only Jason has that stupid squeaky voice. I get dressed then head out to the lounge and yep, my boyfriend is chilling with my friends

Me: Jay what are you doing here?

Jay: uhm I was just in the neighbourhood and I thought I should come say hi

Lolz: lol just in the neighbourhood? Jason noAphile nicinga ukuba sizidenge?

Jay: nganton ngok Lolz?

Lolz: mxm sudika fondini. Uyayaz ukuba ndithetha nganton.

Season 3

Insert 97

Lwa

Alwa: Dabs!!! I got in. Oh my gosh Dabs I got in.

I was in my study catching up on work when I heard Alwande screaming all the way from the kitchen until she got to my door. She walked in holding an A4 white envelope with what looked like the University of Pretoria emblem

Me: what's with all the noise?

Her: Dabs they accepted me. I'm going to UP next year. I'm so excited and it says if I get more than 5 As this year, I'll get a bursary. This is the best day ever

Her excitement was contagious ngoba we ended up jumping up and down together. I was happy for her, if anyone deserved this kind of happiness, it's her. Though I wish my brother could see what a smart and beautiful young lady his baby girl has turned out to be. I left her to call her uncles and grandparents and made a light lunch for the kids. It was June holidays so Sno was on leave and MaRose has retired. She comes to see us every now and then because of her attachment to the kids, especially Yaya. Owele were playing outside with Shaun and Li and I'm assuming the twins are not home ngoba Yaya was watching TV alone

Me: Princess kaTatakhe don't you want to help me make lunch

Yaya: I'm coming mama

I boiled pasta then defrosted the mince and started with chopping the veggies

Yaya: didn't dad come home yesterday?

Me: he did but he left again early in the morning. He went to see uncle Mike in hospital

Her: I'm just glad he finally woke up. Last time we went to makhulu's house, auntie Pali, Avery and Lwakho were so sad

About a month ago Mike got shot during one of his gang wars, the bullet pierced his lung and he was in a coma until a week ago. Things between him and Pali weren't so

good when he got shot so his accident hit her hard, she blamed herself, she wasn't going out with us anymore and she was just depressed but we've tried our best as family and friends to be there for her and her sons

Me: they will be fine now that he is awake

Her: so, mama next year Alwa won't be staying with us? I'm going to be so bored being the only girl in the house

Me: aibo Yandisa ngikhona nje mina, noKwando and auntie Sno

Her: it's not the same. You are old mama, Kwando is a baby and ok auntie Sno isn't so bad but Alwa and I talk about stuff I can't tell you or auntie Sno about

Me: heee you better not be involved in any boy business Yandisa because your father will kill you and that boy

Her: but mama Alwa is allowed to date

I drained the pasta then left it aside to cool off while I cooked the mince. Yaya was still going on about how she isn't allowed to date but Alwa is, yet she knows that Alwa will be 18 in two months and she wasn't allowed to date at her age. When lunch was ready, I dished up for the kids then called Soso since he was still not back. At first, he rejected my call then the second time it went straight to voicemail so I called Jason

Jay: hello

Me: Jason unjani?

Him: I'm good what's up?

Me: are you by any chance with Soso?

Him: Soso?

He paused for a second, I heard shuffling around

Him: uhm he is busy right now Lwa, he says he will call you back

Me: tell him he shouldn't bother

I hung up then switched both my phones off and had lunch with my kids. The twins walked in when we were already eating

Me: your food is in the warmer and wash your hands before you eat

Them: ok mama

*

*

Njalo

I'm at the airport about to board a plane to Durban for the second time this month. My heart is in my throat as though I'm about to meet him for the first time which is not the case because we are about to celebrate our second monthiversary. It's cheesy I know but that's just how Lani is. I've never met a guy that celebrates life and everything it has to offer the way he does. My phone rings as I wrap up the check in process and it's him. My heart races and a smile comes on my face, I pray the day I stop reacting to his efforts like this never comes.

Me: baby

Lani: my love. I miss you

He sounds genuine. No lie in sight and my smile broadens

Me: I'm at the airport as we speak. I can't wait to see you

Him: nami sthandwa sam. I'll be waiting for you when you land. I'm actually going to leave the office right now

Xolani is like that, a rare breed in the male species. He never makes me wait for him, he'd rather he waits for me instead of me standing waiting aimlessly with the possibility of another man catching my eye. How can he be so drop dead gorgeous and yet so insecure? Soon I have to hang up because we are about to take off. I doze off just thinking about how happy I am, how I was never searching for him or this but somehow, he found me and he treats me like a queen. The plane lands in Durban over an hour since take off, after collecting my luggage, I spot him at a distance. He has flowers, I swear my man has a young obsession with flowers and the moment he sees me, he comes my direction, the closer he gets, the broader my

smile becomes. I can't hide the way he makes me feel, even if I wanted to, it wouldn't happen. He gives me a tight squeeze, lifting me up and spinning me around in the process. As usual, he smells heavenly and I can't help the peck I place on his neck. He places me back on the ground then pulls me in for a kiss, his lips are soft and wet and I just get lost in the kiss until he pulls back

Him: for you

He hands me the flowers, takes my luggage and my hand as we head to his car

Me: they are beautiful. Enkosi baby

Him: they are nothing compared to you

He smiles as he loads my bag in the backseat of his X6 then opens my door before hopping in the driver's seat and driving off. Lani's house is beautiful, it's in Ballito with the beach just 5mins away and the moment we walk in, all I want to do is put my feet on the couch and doze off but I know that won't happen. I'm in the main bedroom when he walks in with a glass of wine, gosh how did he know that's exactly what I need?

Lani: what do you feel like eating

I want to say him but I wash the thought away. Two months into the relationship and we still haven't had sex, maybe he just doesn't find me attractive or sexy. Our make out sessions always end at just the kissing part

Me: I'm not fussy Khumalo, anything is fine with me but I just want to take a long bath before thinking about food

This should be his cue to offer to join me but do I ever get exactly what I want?

Him: alright I'll just go cook up something while you bath

I start taking my clothes off getting ready for the bath and I think he is going to leave the room but he doesn't instead he sits at the edge of the bed while stealing glances at me. He wants to look so I don't understand why he is torturing himself. I'm now left in my panties, no bra and he clears his throat as he gets up from the bed

Him: uhm I shall be downstairs then

He is uncomfortable yet he is trying to hide it. For the why nam andaz

*

*

Palesa

Jay: Palesa you can't keep avoiding the guy forever. He is your husband and he wants to see you

Me: I'm just...I can't Jay. I'm not ready

Soso: fuck it Palesa this is not about you. I'm five to losing my wife because of all of this. He doesn't blame you, he just wants you guys to talk

This argument has been going on for over a week now, that's how long Mike has been awake but I can't bring myself to go see him. It's my fault that he is laying there, I shot him. The story we are spinning to everyone is that he got shot at his gang wars but that's not the case. I was getting fed up with him thinking it's ok to pull a gun on me every chance he got and the night he got shot, he came home drunk. I'm not talking normal drunk but pap drunk and I was already in bed sleeping until I felt his cold hand on my thighs instantly making me jump off the bed. He wanted to have sex, I refused and when he tried to force himself on me, I took his gun from the pedestal and shot him. A decision I regretted seconds later when reality hit me.

Me: I'll go when I'm ready. Maybe tomorrow

Soso threw his hands in the air and I understand his frustrations. This thing has taken its toll on all of us but regardless of that, I was still not going to go see that man of mine.

Jay: you are giving us no choice

I was confused, surely, he can't think he can pick me up but when I felt a sting on my neck I knew exactly what he meant and before I could protest, it was lights out. When I woke up, I was handcuffed to a chair in a hospital room, I blinked a few times before setting my eyes on him. There was silence for a good 5mins, I was avoiding eye contact but he was staring at me

Mike: I'm so sorry baby

His voice was hoarse as if he had been crying all night. I've missed the sound of his voice the most because his body was still here.

Him: baby please look at me. I'm sorry. I don't know what's been going on with me, I just lost my way.

I didn't respond, what could I possibly say to this? I shot him and the first thing he does when he wakes up from a coma is ask for me and when he gets me, before anything else, he says he is sorry. What must I say?

Him: Pali please say something. Please

Me: I'm sorry. I shouldn't have shot you. You deserved it but I shouldn't have done it.

Him: please don't leave me

Even if I wanted to leave, I'd be back in his arms before the end of day. That's how strong our love is, no matter how much we fight, we always end up together. I blame his mother for that, she has this Smith wife speech that she gave me before we got married and every time I think of leaving, her words echo in my head

*

*

Aphile

It's the middle of the night and I can't sleep. I'm horny, I'm hungry and this person that's invading my body is busy kicking me like he pays rent. Yep Jason got his wish, our baby is a boy. You can tell just by looking at how ugly my face is, my face looks like iLunch bar, my feet are swollen, I'm farting all the time and I just feel heavy. It doesn't help that my boyfriend is as busy as Obama these days. Can't tholakala but tonight I need him and I'm going to stoop low. I dial his number and he answers on the third ring

Jay: baby I can't talk right now

Me: Jason it's the baby. I think I'm bleeding

I'm even fake crying just to add on the dramatic effects and I already hear the panic in his voice

Him: shit okay baby I'll be home in 5minutes max just hang in there

Me: try to make it 3mins. We have to rush for the hospital

He hangs up without responding and I know his 5mins will be 5mins for real so I rush downstairs to look for the pocket sachets of ketchup from the McDonald's meal I had earlier then I place it in a chair and sit on it, it bursts and I know my pink pyjamas will be stained

Him: baby! Where are you?

It's exactly 5mins since I called him. He rushes into the room with Soso and Marcus, one of their friends. Ok this is going to be awkward why the hell did he bring a squad for?

Jay: yiza baby so we can rush to the hospital

He pulls me up from the chair, sees the red stain on my pants and loses his mind. He even wants to carry me. I turn my eyes to the other two guys in the room who don't know what to do with themselves. Why did he even bring them?

Me: guys please just excuse us for a second, I need to talk to Jason

Jay: talk? Baby there is no time to talk, we need to get to the hospital. I don't want to lose the baby

This is so embarrassing, either I confess here or I let him drive me to the hospital for no reasons and have the nurses spill the beans

Jay: Aphile move your feet and let's go

Me: there is nothing wrong with the baby

My voice comes out as a whisper leaving everyone in the room in a confused state

Soso: but the blood AP. That's not normal

Me: it's not blood it's...tomato sauce

There is awkward silence until Marcus bursts into laughter and Soso joins him Jason is not amused, in fact I think he is pissed off

Marc: lol this is funny but I can see someone is about to explode so Soso bruh lets bounce

Soso is laughing so hard, he can't even speak, he just waves goodbye and leaves

Jay: what the fuck is going on Aphile? I was in the middle of something important when you called so you better have a damn good reason for this stunt you pulled. What the fuck were you thinking?

He is shouting and I'm scared, I haven't seen him angry and this is angry on steroids. I want to respond but I'm scared

Him: don't make me repeat myself because you won't like the person I'll be by then

Heck I don't even like the person he is right now. I can't exactly tell him, I wanted him here because I'm hungry and horny. It's going to make me sound needy and clingy

Me: I was missing you. You are never home and your baby kicks me extra hard when he doesn't hear your voice. I couldn't even sleep because of his kicks and I want my sleep

I'm crying now, not fake crying but actual crying. I hate being pregnant. I see him calm down a bit but he is not my fun, joyful Jason yet, I still spot a bit of anger

Him: why didn't you just say so? Gosh woman you almost gave me a heart attack and you should know better than to cry wolf. Come let's get you cleaned up

Season 3

Insert 98

Soso

Lwa: I don't understand why every time there is something going on with your family, you shut me out. I'm your wife Lwandiso and it doesn't make me feel any easier knowing that my husband is going through something but would rather distance himself from me instead of leaning on me

Me: Lwandile can we not have this conversation right now? We are on our way to a party, I'm sure it can wait

Mike got discharged from hospital yesterday so our parents together with Pali are throwing him a welcome home party. That's where we are headed but my wife couldn't care less, she wants a fight right now. We haven't spoken much or spent any time together since my brother got shot but who can blame me? I had to be there for him and his family

Her: fine we won't talk about it now but don't expect me to be all lovey dovey with you when we get inside. I'm not in the mood for pretending so nje ngisazohlafuna insimbi when we get there

I don't know why this made me laugh but I was in stitches all the way and she wasn't impressed, kept clicking her tongue with her arms folded across her chest. I parked outside Mike's house then locked the car doors.

Her: ngcela singasukelani Lwandiso. I just want to make the best of this night so I can go back home to my kids so open the door please

Me: and if I don't want to? Uzawthini?

Her: gosh you are so annoying

She rolled her eyes

Me: but you love me regardless

Her: loved. Past tense. I don't have love for all this madness that is you. You are frustrating Lwandiso.

I took her hand into mine then made her look at me, she was trying so hard not to smile and failed dismally then hit my arm

Me: undibethela nton ngok MamSmith

Her: because you are annoying me. I'm angry at you and you won't let me

Me: lol haw baby how am I stopping you from being angry?

Her: mxm you know what you do. You are frustrating and annoying

Me: lol and you love me. Say it

Her: no. I refuse and open this door, I want to see my friends

A part of me knows she can never stay mad at me for long, she loves me too much but at the same time I also know that I was wrong. Almost losing my brother just took me to a dark place that I never want Lwa to see me in. I lack compassion, affection and I just become ruthless. What pissed me off the most is that Mike deserved what he got so my anger was and still is directed at him more than it is directed at Pali.

The way he treated his wife isn't a way to ever treat any woman, especially your wife

Me: jonga kalok Mrs me, I'm sorry for shutting you out the past couple of weeks. You are right, I should have leaned on you instead of turning my back on you and the kids. It will never happen again, ngiyakwethembisa.

Her: now was that so difficult? Just so you know, I'm not giving you sex for the rest of the year

Me: fine, I'll just take it. You are mine. All of you is mine. Your curves and imperfections

Her: ok ke John Legend, open the doors

Me: tell me you love me first

Her: so, you want me to lie?

I held my chest in a dramatic manner, showing my hurt and she burst into laughter releasing my favourite sound in the world. Her laughter

Her: lol ai cha, unedrama tatakhe. You know I love you. I'll always love you.

Truthfully, unconditionally and undoubtedly

We shared a kiss, slow and passionate, releasing all our emotions into it. The love, how much we missed each other and pure happiness

*

*

Njalo

Work has been crazy hectic the past month since Mike's shooting so I've had to juggle everything on my own ngoba Jason has also been M.I.A which means my Durban trips have been placed on hold and I haven't seen Lani in over two weeks. So today being a Friday evening, I'm still at the office catching up on the week's work and my phone rings. My favourite guy in calling

Me: hey baby

Mnqobi: really mom? You greet me and uncle Lani in the same way. Gross

Me: lol but you were my baby before he was

Him: rather call me bae

Me: and Alwande will call you what?

Him: lol ok let's move on. Aren't you coming home?

He is home for the holidays and I haven't had much time to spend with him because of work. I had promised him a movie night tonight and it completely slipped my mind

Me: I'm packing up now, I'm on my way. Just order pizza and make the popcorn. I'll be home soon

Him: alright. I thought you forgot

Me: never

We hung up, I finished off the file I was busy with then packed up and drove home. I was missing my man like crazy but with Mnqobi around, it isn't easy for him to come over to my place. They've met briefly and seem to be getting along but I'm not ready for my son to be around him for longer than necessary. Mnqobi is my life and I live for that boy; his happiness and well-being are what I live for. It was just the two of us for a long time so naturally he is also overprotective of me. I tried calling Lani while

on my way home but he didn't answer which was a bit of a let-down considering that I haven't heard his voice all day. When I got home, the house was dark, meaning Mngqobi either hasn't come home or eskom is back to their tricks. I parked in the garage then walked around to the front door, opened the door without paying much attention. I took my coat and shoes off and yelled for Mngqobi

Me: Mngqobi!

Cwaka. Ohk this is strange. I took my shoes from the floor and walked into the dining area and found the surprise of my life

Lani: hey beautiful

He was standing in the middle of the candlelit room, rose petals all over the floor, food and wine on the table and soft music playing in the background. I was in complete awe as tears rolled down my cheeks

Me: when did...how...What are you doing here?

Him: I came to see my lady and treat her to dinner and my amazing company

He walked up to me, pecked my cheek before cupping my face and pulling me in for a proper kiss. Between his scent and his soft lips, something made me weak at the knees

Me: you cooked?

He smiled. Oh, sweet baby Jesus, where did you find this man? He is perfection. He took my coat and shoes, threw them on the couch then pulled a chair for me and we sat down

Him: I've missed you

Me: not as much as I've missed you

Him: wanna bet?

Me: lol you are such a lawyer. What did you cook for me and what did you do with my son

Him: Mngqobi took his girlfriend out to celebrate her getting accepted at UP

My son and Lwa's niece together in one city, it's bad enough that he is still dating that girl now he will be away with her meaning I will never see my son again

Lani: babe, wine?

Me: xolo baby. Yes, please my love

Him: where did you go?

I smiled faintly

Me: nowhere. I'm here with you. Thank you, my love. This is beautiful

Him: I'm glad you like it.

He dished up for us and I must admit, my man is an amazing cook. The food was perfect and our evening was amazing. Free flowing conversation, laughter and happiness plus a lot of horniness from my side. After dinner, he cleared up while I took a shower and as I walked out my en-suite bathroom, wrapped in a towel, he was sitting on my bed typing on his phone but the moment he heard footsteps, he lifted his head

Me: you are sleeping over?

Him: nah I'm not. I've checked into a hotel all weekend

Oh, wow there goes my idea of getting laid

*

*

Enzo

Me: guys come on, we are going to be late

Mahle: it's still early and besides, it's just a braai and you promised you'd be here when KK comes here

Me: is he coming today yini?

She nods. I don't know what it is that makes pregnant women so forgetful or maybe they focus on eating and giving men hell so much that everything else just doesn't matter

Me: Asemahle I'm going to a party in 10mins, you can't just spring this on me right now

Her: but bhuti you promised. I can't do this on my own

Then the waterworks joined the party, I've actually become so immune to these things but because she is my baby sis, I can't just sit and watch her cry

Me: ok fine but next time, please give me a heads up

She nods just as there is a knock at the door and Liyana is the first one to jump up her seat, you'd swear she is expecting someone

Me: khona umuntu omlindile Liya?

Liyana: lol no but I know auntie Mahle was going to take 55years to get up from the couch

Mahle threw a cushion at her and I just laughed. KK sat next to Mahle as Liyana went to check on her mother. He greeted and we got down to business

Me: so, what can we do for you?

KK: uhm I was hoping to talk to Mahle

Me: khuluma ndoda

He shifted his gaze between Mahle and I and when he realised that I wasn't going anywhere, he released a sigh and scratched his head

KK: Mahle, I don't know where to start, I've put you through so much over the past years with disregard of what will happen when it all gets enough for you and you walk out on me. I've been selfish, immature and I've disrespected you and for that I'm truly sorry. I love you Asemahle but I know I don't deserve you anymore so all I want to ask for is your forgiveness and access to my child. I want to do right by this baby

My sister was in no position to respond, she was crying endlessly and you could see that she's wanted this for the longest time and now that it's here, it's overwhelming

Me: you will have access to the child when and if you pay damages and as for being a part of the pregnancy, that's up to Mahle but what I'm going to say to you is that

this is the last time my sister will shed a tear because of you and if you ever hurt her again in any way, the next time she cries because of you will be at your funeral.

He nodded and as he comforted my sister, my beautiful, pregnant and fashionably late wife walked down the stairs with our daughter. She was surprised to see KK here but greeted him with a smile

Noma: KK I didn't know you were here. Are you hungry, should I fix you a plate?

Me: if you say yes to that, your funeral will come sooner than you expected

Noma gave me an evil look but I don't care, we are already late for lento kaMike, she doesn't need to be fixing plates for people and making us even more late.

*

*

Aphile

I don't think men understand how much we women don't want to be going out when we are heavily pregnant, especially to parties where you will be surrounded by skinny people and alcohol.

Jay: baby come on, it's not even a big party, just family and friends. Abantu obaziyo nawe.

Me: will Lwa be there?

Him: yes of course

Me: Pali? Lolz?

Him: you know they will be there

Me: then I'm definitely not going. Just go on your own, we are not joined at the hip and we don't always have to do things together

He got up from the couch and walked up the stairs, to get ready I assume so I paid him no mind, I just focused on the episode of Grey's anatomy that we were both watching before he got up. Time passed and when he didn't come down, I made sandwiches then took them upstairs where I found him asleep in just his boxers. I

traced his abs with my finger as he moved under my touch then eventually slowly opened his eyes

Me: hey, why are you sleeping?

Jay: I don't know, just needed to clear my head

Me: clear your head? You wanted to go to your brother's party not so long ago and now you want to clear your head. What's going on?

He took the tray from me, placed it on the pedestal then gently pulled me on the bed between his legs with my back on his chest then placed a kiss on my neck

Him: I haven't had a girlfriend since high school and-

I turned around and looked at him. He can't be serious. How is it possible for a 39year old to have last dated in high school? Uyaxoka uJason tchin

Me: suxoka baby

Him: ndithetha inyan Mama kaBlip

He calls his son that since we still haven't decided on a name. It's stupid and so random but I've stopped trying to convince him to stop calling my baby that

Me: how?

Him: when Soso and I were in matric, I slept with his girlfriend and it wasn't that I was trying to hurt him or that I wanted the chick, it just happened. It was then that I realized that no matter how much you love a woman, no matter how good you are to her, she will always find a way to disappoint you and I also realized that you don't need a girlfriend to get girlfriend benefits so to prevent being weak and at a woman's mercy, I started having sex for fun.

Well I guess now I have the background story of how he started being a man whore although I think his reason is lame, andisoze ndatsho. What I'm curious about now is why he is telling me all this.

Me: ok so that's what you were clearing your head about?

Him: not exactly. I don't know how to be a boyfriend Aphile but into endiyaziyo ukuba ndyakthanda and it's not because you are carrying my son, I caught feelings way

before we found out about Blip but I couldn't tell you and risk losing you. You are beautiful, even more beautiful now that my son is making you glow, you are smart, funny, witty, crazy and you have a good heart. When I'm with you in a crowd full of people, you are the only person I see because you are the only one that matters in my life. I just wish you could see yourself through my eyes

Yho yayisitshilo ipregnancy nezihormones as tears flowed down my cheeks. His vulnerability when it comes to his love is what makes me love him so much. He chose me, he could have had any woman he wanted and he chose to go for crazy and dull me. When I felt his erection on my ass I laughed between the tears

Me: ndiyalila mna apha and you are getting horny

Him: lol he has a mind of his own

Me: mxm let me get ready so you can go show me off to your skinny friends.

We shared a laugh and we both got ready for the shower

*

*

Lwa

Mike's welcome home braai was exactly what our squad needed, life has been so crazy for us in the past 6months, we've all had our dramas, our ups and downs but we've stood firm for each other because what are we without our pillars? AP and Jason were the last to arrive, as much as I'm still having trouble wrapping my head around them being a couple, I love the effect they have on each other and who knew it would be AP that tames the whoreness in Jason? My man was next to me, having trouble keeping his hands off me, if he doesn't have his arm around my shoulder, his hand is on my chin or his arm is around my waist but trust me when I tell you that I'm not complaining

Soso: your friends love sex. Look at them all pregnant

Me: says the guy with 8kids.

Him: lol my kids are old. I can't be almost 40 and still waking up in the middle of the night changing diapers. Nah fam you can miss me with that B.S

Lol he sounds like such a 20something year old, the way he acts, speaks and his facial expressions. Such a kid at heart. I looked over at Pali and Mike and they seemed happy, she was fussing over him like a mother hen but it was evident that it was all love. Sedi, yep she decided to grace us with her presence and Lolz were holding on to the wine bottles for dear life, those two live for alcohol but we all need a few single people in a squad of friends to balance things out. They will be those aunts that our kids will always want to visit just to sneak in a drink or two.

Soso: you seem to be miles away

Me: I'm reminiscing my love. We've all come such a long way. I've known Nomz and Lolz since preschool yet 30years later, we are still inseparable. They are my sisters, screw that we are not related. Then there is Sedi, my first varsity friend, I don't think I could have ever survived all the drama I went through in varsity without them. We leaned so much on each other, built a sisterhood.

Him: heeey I was part of your varsity experience, why am I not included there?

I turned to face him completely, I take a moment to admire his physical beauty. Handsome doesn't feel like the right word to describe the man that owns my heart, the man that is my world, my everything, my light in the dark, my friend, my brother and the father of my children. He is beautiful inside and out.

Him: stop drooling. I'm yours

Me: I know but I once read somewhere that if you want him to treat you like a queen, you must treat him like a king. The reason I didn't count you together with Sedi and Pali is because you stand out on your own. I could go on for days just talking about how much you changed my life, how much you mean to me and how there is no me without you and the kids. We've been to hell and back, we've fought so many battles in the past 16years that I won't begin to count them. The painful memories, the struggles, the cries, the fights, the laughter have been so surreal my love. When I look at you, Loyiso, Qhawe, Alwande, Limile, Yandisa, Shaun, Kwando and Kwandile, I know there is a God and he loved me so much to give me you guys. Lwandiso you loved me when I was too weak to love myself, you rebuilt my confidence, brought my sexy back

He laughed, he's been staring at me this whole time not saying a word and then he laughs. His arm is around my waist again as he pulls me towards him and pecks my lips. We are so caught up on each other that the rest of the night just flows by without us even noticing it.

Him: you know what I see when I look at you?

I smiled shyly as I blush and shake my head

Him: an angel. We were surrounded by demons for so many years in our relationship but you stayed constant. True to your vows before you even made them. You remained an angel despite being surrounded by demons.

Season 3

Insert 99

Njalo

I woke up in bed in my second home on a cold July morning. It's raining outside, not light rain but thunderstorms and all, so much for all year-round beautiful Durban weather. I stretch my arm to the right side of the bed, which was occupied by my boo last night but seems to be empty right now. I open my eyes and realize that I'm alone in the room. Seriously? On such a cold day. I lift the duvet cover all the way to my shoulders as I sit up on the bed. There is a note on his pillow, I take it and read it

****Morning my love. Don't get out of bed, I'm out to get breakfast and I'll be back before you know it. I love you****

I blush like a love-struck teenager as I read these few meaningful words over and over again then get up to wash my face and brush my teeth and as I'm about to get back in bed, Siya calls. This catches me by surprise because he never calls me, he'd rather send an email if he wants something with regards to Mnqobi

Me: hello

Siya: Luminjalo

Me: thetha Siyabonga

He lets out a sigh. Gosh this man is so awkward

Him: my mom passed away a few days ago and I'd like for Mnqobi to come to the funeral

Ok let me paint a quick picture of the kind of "relationship" I've had with Siya since the birth of Mnqobi. I called him the day I gave birth and all he asked was whether the baby is a boy or girl and when I told him, he named him then a week later, his family came to pay damages so that he can use his surname. He sent money every month, ridiculously large amounts so that even if I needed to take my son to the hospital, he shouldn't be contacted. So, my son doesn't know Siya's family, he only knows his siblings through social networks and he sees his father if business sends Siya eBhayi and now that his mother has died, my son must go be awkward in some

rurals where all sorts of traditions are being practiced, without me being there to protect him?

Me: I've never stood in the way of your relationship noMnqobi so call him and if he agrees then it's fine but I don't want my son coming back with all sort of markings on his body. Please

Him: I spoke to him and he refused. Ngicela ukhulume naye Luminjalo. He needs to be there, mele agezwe and afihle ugogo wakhe

Me: a grandmother he didn't know, a grandmother that didn't know him as well? Mnqobi is over 18 and I can't force him to do anything. Askies evha

I was so focused on this stupid conversation that I didn't hear Lani walk in, he was standing against the door frame staring at me. Dressed in black adidas sweatpants and a grey and black hoodie. When our eyes met, he walked in towards the bed, pecked my lips then sat next to me

Siya: he is still a child. Talk to him please, make him understand the importance of him being there.

Me: I'll try but I'm not making any promises. I have to go Siyabonga.

I hung up, sighed in frustration as I tossed my phone to the side. I like it better when he does all his communication with his son and leaves me out of it. I'm in Durban with my man on a cold morning, I should be at my happiest but now I'm filled with frustration because of him and his dead mother.

Lani: hey

He reaches for my chin and turns my head so I look at him. I smile a genuine smile, I'm happy again, my phone call with Siya is forgotten and I'm back in my bubble

Me: morning love monkey

I gave him that nickname after he started calling me love bug and wouldn't stop even when I begged him to. It's a cute name but a bit cheesy

Him: I've got breakfast all set up downstairs, wear something warm so we can eat then get back in bed

When we got downstairs he had a picnic type of thing set up so we ate over a light conversation then I cleared up, washed dishes and we got back in bed. The rain hadn't stopped since I woke up so we were cuddling really close while watching Suits. His skin felt warm against mine, I felt protected and safe but we were still not having sex, I'm starting to think there is something wrong with him. Later in the day we took a shower, separately then I made us lunch and we ate on the couch with the heater on. I was done suffering in silence, I needed to know what's going on

Me: love monkey

He chuckled before turning to face me

Lani: yes, my love bug

Me: do you find me attractive?

He frowned his eyebrows then placed his plate on the coffee table and gave me what seemed like his undivided attention

Him: is that a trick question? Of course, I find you attractive, you are beautiful and sexy sthandwa sam. Your ass, your curves and your boobs are perfect, you are perfect

Me: then how come we haven't...You know. You don't even initiate it or get past just kissing me

Him: lol so because I haven't tried jumping in your pants, you think I don't find you attractive?

Me: well can you blame me?

Him: I'm 37years old Luminjalo, I don't date for fun anymore or to pass time

Me: I'm older than you so neither do I

We always laugh about that because he always says he catches up to my age every year since his birthday is before mine. I'm turning 38

Him: and a few years ago, I was born again and made a vow that I won't date until God sends me the woman I'm going to marry and when I find her, I won't disrespect her by trying to sleep with her before our union is blessed before God. I'm going to marry you Luminjalo Vongwe.

*

*

Aphile

Me: forget it Jason. I'm not naming my child junior; what life is this?

Jay: mama kaBlip, you are due in two months, you haven't told your parents and you haven't come up with a name. Time is running out

Me: name him Blip then, it's better than junior and he likes being called Blip. Andithi nana zam

I was rubbing my belly and Blip was kicking me. He does that when he hears our voices together. I have a feeling this child will be an attention seeker just like his father

Him: what about Aphison?

Me: Aphi what?

Him: Aphison. Aphile plus Jason. It's a cute name

Me: hell no. You can forget it.

The new house was looking amazing and I loved the nursery more than every other room and even though I still refuse to move in with him, I know I will be spending a lot of time here. I do want to live with my boyfriend but I know my parents, they will never accept that and they will want Jason to marry me. This guy is still steady learning how to be a boyfriend, I can't spring marriage on him so quickly, I'd just push him into the arms of another woman.

Him: are you coming with to buy Lwa's gift?

Me: of course. I also need to buy something to wear at the birthday dinner. I can't believe Soso told her about it. That man doesn't understand the meaning of the word surprise

Him: I know, right. Then he uses the lamest excuse, "I can't keep secrets from my wife"

I leave him on the bed and go take a shower then wear grey leggings, a sky-blue maternity top, coat and knee-high boots. Winter is my favourite season, some see dullness and death whereas I see the end of an era which also marks a new beginning ahead. We get to town and I literally have to drag him out of a car dealership.

Me: if you buy her a car, what will her husband buy her? Calm down and I need a car, Lwa is loaded

Jay: are you hinting that I should buy you a car baby?

Me: yes, tchin thiza. I'm blown up here, fat and ugly all in the name of giving you a son. A car would be a great start as a token of appreciation

We eventually settled on a Louis Vuitton luggage set then got our outfits and drove back to the house. I was exhausted so the moment my head hit the pillow, I passed out. I was later woken up by a call from my mother. Oh Lord, I wonder what has happened.

Me: mama

Mom: unjani ntombi?

Me: I'm fine mom, unjani na wena?

Her: we are fine. Listen Aphile, your father and I are coming to PE ngeweekend. We miss you and your father has business to take care of lapho

Forget that I was fast asleep not so long ago because I'm wide awake now and sitting on my bum on the bed. No, this can't be happening. I need to stop this from happening. I have the world's most dramatic parents and if they see me pregnant, they will freak

Me: uhm you can't come here mama

Her: haibo ngobani?

I went silent. I'm out of ideas. I can lie my way out of anything but right now I'm as black as a new page

Her: Aphile?

Me: ma

Her: what's going on?

Me: I'm pregnant mama. You can't come here. Dad is going to freak out and-

Her: we are coming Aphile. You just gave us more reason to come there

With that she hung up, leaving me defeated. My dad is going to kill my boyfriend before I give birth. My sleep was now finished and I wasn't even hungry so I just sat on the bed, wishing time would move slowly and the weekend would be further than just 2 days away.

*

*

Lwa

I have this little obsession with birthdays, seeing a new year should be regarded as a blessing worth celebrating. So today being my last day of being 35, I'm feeling a bit anxious but excited at the same time. It's a Friday morning so the normal chaos is going on at breakfast and I don't even think these kids are aware that it's my birthday tomorrow

Shaun: mama, are you taking us to school today or are you picking us up?

Me: I'll take you, I have a meeting around the time you guys come out so auntie Sno will have to fetch you

Kwando: don't forget that Liyana is sleeping over today mama

I was not aware of that so I'm wearing a confused look on my face but I don't mind having Enzo's daughter over, she keeps owele busy and they don't fight all the time

Kwandi: it's on the fridge mama and we told you

Me: it's fine, I don't mind her sleeping over. Hurry up ke guys, we are going to be late.

The kids pack their school books and lunches in their bags, kiss their dad goodbye since he is taking the day off for some reason. I just hope whatever reason it is has everything to do with my birthday. After everyone is all buckled up, I drive off

Loy: mamakhe

I chuckle. I know he wants something

Me: lol what do you want Loyiso?

Loy: eish ndicela iAdvance mama. There is something I need to buy urgently and ndibroke

Me: yini leyo?

Loy: eish I can't tell you.

Me: then you not getting my money. Ask your father

Loy: but mama

I ignore him and when I drop them off at school, he doesn't get out. I know he wants money for my gift but I want to hear what story he is going to spin my way

Me: phuma Loyiso, you are going to make me late

Loy: it's your company mom, nobody cares if you are late. Can I ask you something?

Me: make it fast

Him: how do you feel about being a grandmother?

This child is trying to give me grey hairs, I swear if he made that girl of his pregnant, I'm shipping him to boarding school. I'm not even 40 yet, I'm too young to be a grandmother

Me: Loyiso Smith don't make me send you to your maker. Please

Him: well you will be a grandmother if I don't get that advance. I need to buy morning after pills. Ndyakcela mama

Me: fine I'll e-wallet you the money and we shall talk about this later. Phuma

He laughed, I knew this was a lie but two can play that game. He pecked my cheek then got out

Him: lol love you mamam

Me: lol just go

During tea time at work, the staff had organized cake, snacks, finger foods and drinks as a pre-celebration for my birthday. I always tell Soso, if the staff is happy, they will make us happy and them remembering my birthday was indication enough. I had lunch plans with my girls so I drove to town to meet up with them. We shared hugs and the preggies were looking gorgeous with their natural glows

Me: so, who did you guys invite to my birthday dinner? I hope it's not the whole of SA

Pali: drama ya hao mataka. We invited your parents, your brothers, in-laws, Laa and X

Yho I haven't heard from Xolani in a while, I wonder if he will even make it and if he does, I pray my husband doesn't rip his throat out

Lolz: I can't wait to meet Laa's wife, apparently, she is drop dead gorgeous

Nomz: says who? I wouldn't be surprised if she is Lwa's photocopy

I ignored Nomalanga and her comment and just sipped on my drink while we waited for our food

AP: ndisemanyaleni guys.

Me: ngoba?

AP: my parents are coming today

Lolz: so?

Me: they don't know she is pregnant

AP: they know now and I'm just scared of what my father will do to the father of my child

Our food arrived and we dug in while still dissecting lento ka AP. Her parents are crazy, she is a grown woman, in her late 30s, has a good job and the father of her child is loaded. Some parents are just unreasonable

Pali: you must just stand up to them friend, that's the only way and I doubt they'll be that angry at you

After lunch I drove back to the office and at around 4, I drove home. I wasn't really tired but I just needed to get in my comfortable clothes, winter isn't my friend.

*

*

Enzo

Me: so, have you decided on a name?

Mahle: not really. Angithi we don't know the sex of the baby so we will name him or her when he or she arrives

Me: in October?

Her: yeah. Still far

I was out shopping with my sister, looking for a gift for Lwa and I always go big on her birthday because she is obsessed with the day. She even calls it Lwa day instead of it being the 27th of July

Mahle: get her a MacBook pro. I know she doesn't have that

Me: it's so impersonal

She looked at me with raised eyebrows and I stared right back at her. Gadgets are so cold and impersonal as gifts, I want something sentimental phela Lwa is my oldest friend and she has been there for me through so many things. She is practically my sister now and I wouldn't get my sister a gadget for her birthday

Mahle: a gift worth over R20 000 is impersonal to you? Aksiye umfaz wakho phela, you are friend-zoned so your gift should be friend-ish

Me: mxm stop creating words and help me find the perfect gift

Her: ok fine let's go checkout other shops

We went all over the mall and found nothing close to perfect and Mahle was already complaining of being tired so we left empty handed. So much for bringing her along thinking she would be helpful

Her: bhuti would you be mad at me if KK and I worked things out?

Me: are you thinking of working things out?

Her: angaz. I still love him and I think my baby deserves a chance at a family

Me: but?

Her: but I don't know if he has changed or not. He hasn't said he wants me back but he always reminds me that he loves me

I let out a sigh, I don't want to make decisions for her but I don't think this is a good idea. That boy hasn't grown up and he is just messing with her mind

Me: I'll support whatever decision you make Mahle.

Her: oh

I drove past McDonald's, got burgers for my other girls then drove home. I found Liyana giving her mother a foot massage, Noma is abusing umntanam kodwa but when she saw the McDonald's paper bag, she left the feet and rushed to me

Liyana: dadda you came back with McDonald's

Me: hello to you too Liyana

Her: ngyaxolisa dadda. Sawbona

Me: that's more like it. Mina ke

I gave her the paper bag then went to greet my wife and continued where Liyana had left off

Me: uright sthandwa?

Nomz: I'm good my love. I missed you

Me: it's been a crazy day

Her: and it's going to get crazier since your brother and Nonku are on the way

I had forgotten about Landile coming for Lwa's birthday dinner ksasa but it's a good thing because we need to find a way to stop Mahle from going back to KK.

*

*

Soso

It's been such a long day, I've been in and out of car dealerships looking for the Ford mustang in a blue colour and I finally found it. I asked for the seats to be customized and embroidered LS. I haven't bought my wife a car in a long time and this is currently her favourite car. After that was done, I drove to the mall to get her second gift, a new wedding ring. As I walked into NWJ, I saw Njalo looking at rings

Me: Njalo

She turned around and greeted me with a smile. We shared a brief hug

Njalo: hey Soso. It's been a while

Me: yeah fondin unqabile kalok or are my brother's working you to the bone?

Her: lol a bit of both. Jonga it was good to see you but I have to go

Me: already? Oh, alright then. I shall see you around

She smiled again and headed for the door and I continued with what I was here for. I looked at the crown ring again and fell in love with it. It's perfect for Lwa, it screams Queen and that's exactly what she is.

Season 3

Insert 100

Soso

Me: sthandwa sam wake up. It's your birthday

She moaned and groaned but I wasn't going to give up. I wanted to be the first to wish her a happy birthday. We've shared so many of these moments but it never gets old. I don't care much for birthdays but she is obsessed with them so I always have to make a big deal. Eventually she opened her eyes slowly then frowned as she sat up. I placed a kiss on her head, her cheek then finally pecked her lips

Lwa: but Soso it's the middle of the night, can we not do this right now?

Me: hell no. It's your birthday and you know what we always do on your birthday

Her: I'm getting too old for this. I really am

Me: yiza kalok my love

We both got out of bed, washed our faces, brushed our teeth then dressed warmly. It wasn't the middle of the night like she had mentioned, it was in fact 5:30am but because it's the middle of winter, it was still dark. After we got dressed we went downstairs, she sat on the highchair while I made her favourite breakfast; pancakes, bacon, cheesy scrambled eggs and Irish coffee. When I was done, I placed everything on the table out on the patio then led us out to it. By the time I was done, it was 6:30am and the sun was coming up. We do this every year, I make breakfast so that we can eat while we watch the first sunrise of her new year

Me: happy birthday mamakhe

Her: ngyabonga my love. Thank you for this, for everything and for just being you

Me: come thank me properly

I got up then helped her up as well and pulled her into my embraced. Lord knows how much I love this woman and at this moment I was at my happiest because she was happy. My love for her knows no restraints, no conditions and no limits. My love for her is free and endless. I kissed her head then lifted her chin with my fingers. She looks so beautiful, flawless and just perfect. How is it even possible when she just

woke up a few hours ago. She smiled, instantly making me smile as well. I licked my bottom lip as she took hers between her teeth then got on her toes as she wrapped her arms around my neck and my hands went to her waist

Me: I love you

Her: kiss me

I chuckled as her eyes closed and our lips touched. The movement of our lips and tongues was magical, slow and passionately. Our love expressed with each movement we made and making us lose ourselves in the moment. The kiss wasn't meant to lead anywhere or heat up, it was just about the expression of our love. We spent the rest of the morning talking about old times as we enjoyed the moment before the crazy bunch wake up.

Her: I'm excited about tonight

Me: why is that?

Her: I don't know how to explain it but the thought of all my friends and family gathered under one roof to celebrate me just excites me

I watched her smiling to herself. You know that feeling of being content, truly happy and in love. The feeling you wish could last forever and just cover you and your family for all eternity? That's the feeling I've had for the past 14years.

Me: I know it's going to be an amazing night and I just want you to enjoy today. I don't want you to worry about anything, I have everything under control

Her: I know my love and I appreciate it.

Just then the kids walked out to where we were seated, holding gifts while they were still dressed in their pyjamas. They sang the birthday song and Lwa was smiling endlessly

Loy: it's 7:30am ngok mama. Your actual birth time

Lwa: lol aibo who told you that?

Q: ngumakhulu. Happy birthday mamam

Lwa: thank you my boy

They all gave her their presents wazivula uLwa while I left them to enjoy the moments of their mom's birthday

*

*

Aphile

I woke up tightly wrapped in my man's arms, he refused to leave last night after my parents basically scolded me as if I was a teenager still living under their roof

...Last night...

My parents arrived as I was finishing up the supper preparations. I served them tea and muffins and when I placed it before them, it was clear as day light that my dad wasn't happy, in fact he was fuming. I sat on another couch on my own and kept my head hanging low. I wasn't going to say anything until they say something, tchin I wasn't going to dig my own grave here. The room was filled with silence, only the sounds of the teacups coming into contact with the saucer occupied the room then my mom cleared her throat

Mom: umithi Aphile?

Oh, wow what an icebreaker. My stomach is the size of 7 watermelons so that was clear

Me: yebo

Dad: yebo bani? Yebo nja?

Me: yebo mama

Dad: umithiswa ngubani Aphile? Waza kuleBhayi uzomitha? Utshadile wena ngoku?

I didn't know which question to answer or how I should answer it without being labelled as being rude so I just opt to be quiet

Mom: Aphile angithi uyezwa ukuthi ubabwakho ukhuluma nawe. Mphendule

Me: igama lakhe nguJason Smith

Mom: umithiswe umlungu Aphile? Yho ungehlule mntanam. Does he even know the customs that he has to follow ngoba umithi nje? Uzokuhlawula nini? Akulobole nini?

Me: he isn't white mama. He is coloured and uyawazi amasiko but we don't want to get married. Not right now

My dad's silence worried me. He is a vocal man but disappoint him or hurt him and he will shut you out. I've never been in this position of disappointing my parents so it hurts to see my dad the way he is and the tears just rolled down my cheeks

Dad: sukhala. Ukukhala akuzonceda nto. Ndifuna ukuyibona lenkwenkwe. Ngok

My heart literally skipped a beat then raced intensely. This is not how I want my man to meet my parents. Not when they are still fuming with so much anger

Me: I'll call him and make lunch plans for ngomso tata. When we are all calm

Dad: ndithe ngoku Aphile. I'm not going to ever be calm over lento. Go and call this coloured boy of yours

I wiped my tears with the back of my hand then got up to make the call in my room. I didn't want him to hear me crying, I needed to stay strong. I dialled his number and he answered as I was about to hang up

Jay: mama kaBlip

Me: please come over

Him: is everything ok?

I shook my head before I remembered that he can't see me

Me: utata

Him: ukwenze nton utatakho baby?

Me: he wants to see you ngok

Him: now? Ok I'm coming. Do you think uzandibetha xa ndifika apho?

Me: lol most probably

Him: damn. I'm glad I got to make you laugh for a sec. Keep an ice pack for me

I laughed as I hung up the phone and when I turned around, my mom was at the door and my smile faded

Mom: uyamthanda?

Me: yebo mama. He makes me happy. Akekho perfect but he tries and his efforts make me happy

Her: then it shouldn't be a problem if your father says he should marry you

I let out a sigh. I don't want Jason to be forced into marrying me, he isn't ready for that and neither am I. Our relationship doesn't need to be strained ngalohlobo.

Me: hmmm. Did you need anything?

Her: chabo. I was just checking on you. So, is it a boy or a girl?

Her hand touched my stomach and Blip kicked a couple of times. This kid loves attention but it brought a spark in his grandmother's eyes. A sparkle I've never seen before and the smile on her face just made the whole moment amazing

Me: it's a boy. We haven't decided on a name so we are calling him Blip for now

My mom laughed at the stupid name then we went back to the lounge. My dad was now watching the news, feeling at home in my house yet still giving me the cold shoulder. Mxm these parents. When Jason arrived, my dad told my mom and I to excuse them so we went to dish up. I was nervous on his behalf and scared at the same time. Last thing I need is my father pushing my boyfriend away

Mom: would you relax? He isn't going to kill the boy.

Me: you don't know that for sure. I've never seen dad like this and Jason is an idiot with a smart mouth, he might just get himself killed

Her: just focus on dishing up

After a while my dad called us in, mom and I served them then we sat down. I couldn't read the expression on Jason's face but he didn't look pleased

Dad: I'm disappointed in you Aphile, you are my only daughter, my only child in fact and this is not the kind of life I wanted you to have. Ewe umdala mntanam but awutshadanga and ukumitha xa ungazimiselanga notshada is wrong.

Me: ndiyayiqonda eyo tata and ndicela uxolo but ngubomi bam obu and I think I'm old enough to handle it. Ndiyayivuyela iguidance yakho nomama but I can really handle yonke lento

Dad: as long as you are not married, you are still my child and your life shall be the way I see fit. This boy isn't a man and I don't see him changing even after you give birth so andimfuni ebomini bakho.

Ok that explains the look on Jason's face but my father is crazy. How can I not have the father of my son in my life? How does that make sense to him? The argument went back and forth for hours until he stormed out, dragging my mother with and leaving me in tears. I was heartbroken that my own father could be such a cruel man

*

*

Enzo

Getting ready for Lwa's birthday dinner started 2hours ago but Noma and Asemahle are still nowhere near being ready which means KK, Laa and I are sitting around waiting for them. Nonku, Laa's wife is also somewhere upstairs helping the pregnant ladies get ready

Laa: I think we should just leave on our own, they will catch up and besides Nonku can drive so they will be sorted

KK: I don't have a death wish

Me: neither do I. Let's just wait another hour

Laa: hell no. I don't need to make a grand entrance at a party that isn't mine

Eventually they came down looking absolutely beautiful. We made them twirl for us then we drove off. I was with my sister, KK was with Nonku and Laa was driving with my wife. Just to avoid unnecessary drama

Mahle: we named the baby

Me: how? since you don't know the sex

Her: we chose a unisex name. Just one for now then when I give birth, we will pick from the other options

Me: ok out with it. What did you name umshana wam?

She brushed her belly then smiled. She was obsessed with this baby but it's understandable considering that it's her first pregnancy. Noma on the other hand just cares about messing with me and wanting sex all the time

Her: Zanokuhle

Me: hmhhh

Her: what? You don't like it?

Me: it's not my baby nje Mahle so I don't have to like it kodwa it's a beautiful name

Her: but?

Me: no but I promise. It really is beautiful. Almost sounds like my name

I didn't want to discuss these things especially without Landile present. She wants to get back together with KK, maybe they are even back together as we speak and it doesn't sit well with me. I'm her big brother, it's natural instinct for me to want to keep her protected at all times. When we arrived at the party, we were late but luckily, we weren't the last ones to arrive. Lwa and I shared hugs then I placed my gift on the big table already occupied by presents

Lwa: I hope you didn't go too big this time

Me: lol I tried. Trust me, I really tried

I really tried ngempela but I think I did go overboard by buying her a building. My sister mentioned that she wants to open a centre for victims of child headed households so that's what the building is for. In the gift bag is a copy of the title deed, the keys and a short heartfelt note.

*

*

Njalo

Me: are you sure your friend doesn't mind you having a plus one? You did say it's an intimate dinner and not a party

He stepped out of the bathroom dressed in navy chinos, a white shirt and navy blazer. He looked like he just walked out of GQ magazine

Lani: I doubt she will mind. Most of the people there will be with their partners anyway and I just want to show off my future wife to the world

Me: lol future wife yet you haven't even proposed

Him: all in good time my love. Let's just get ready so we won't be late

I slipped in to my knee length navy lace dress, nude heels and a caramel coat then sat in front of the dresser to do my makeup. When I got up, I felt his hands on my waist as he kissed me neck

Me: baby let's go. We are going to be late

Him: we still have a few minutes and I would like to make good use of them

We still haven't had sex due to the reasons he stated but that hasn't stopped us from being intimate in other ways. Oral sex being our favourite. He turned me around and kissed my lips while his hands slowly lifted my dress. I was getting goose bumps and my nipples were rock hard then his hand rubbed over my nuna causing me to release a moan. Feeling his hand on against my thigh wasn't helping the situation and when he lowered me on to the bed, he immediately took my panties off, throwing them to the other end of the room and gently opened my thighs widely. When his tongue made contact with my nuna I screamed and clutched on to the sheets. He licked me gently then sucked on my clit causing me to leave this world and enter a world of nothing but pleasure. He inserted his tongue in and out, I was losing all sense of control as I felt my orgasm nearing. I was moaning his name over and over again and it seemed to be motivating him. When I felt I was about to come, I was grinding on his face and pushing his head deeper. He increased his pace and I squirted on his face as I released. Dammit this man will be the end of me. He lifted his head from between my legs and got a towel to clean me up. I tried reaching for his belt buckle but he held his hand over mine then smiled

Him: we will sort me out later. We really have to get going

He pecked my lips before going to wash his face. I fixed myself, looked for my underwear that I found in some corner. We looked amazing together, he complimented me very well

Me: shall we?

Him: not before you tell me you love me

Me: lol I love you Mntungwa

He smiled, almost blushing actually and I just giggled. He becomes putty in my hands when I call him by his clan name

Him: hmmm I love how that sounds coming from you. Ngyakthanda nami MaVongwe wam

We shared a kiss before leaving. I'm so in love with this man, he makes me feel like such a kid again, he is carefree and so light hearted. I'm still yet to see him angry though but I doubt anything can change the way I feel about him. We got in the car and he drove us to this birthday dinner yechomi yakhe and my heart almost stopped beating when I saw him drive into Lwa's house. No. It can't be. He can't be friends with her. She will ruin everything for me, for us

Lani: babe, are you ok?

Me: I can't be here Lani. I can't do this. She will kill me.

He frowned his eyebrows in confusion. I wasn't making sense but that's because I was scared for my life

Him: baby I don't understand. Who will kill you and why?

Me: I can't go into it okwangoku but please just take me home. Please Xolani. Ndyakcela

Him: baby just calm down and talk to me. You are scaring me right now

I took in a deep breath then slowly exhaled. The tears were stinging my eyes, waiting to release. I told him everything about my history with Lwa and Soso. When I was done, he didn't say anything for a long time and I knew I had lost him

Him: do you love me?

Me: of course, I do

Him: do you trust me with your heart and your life?

I kept quiet for a while, I wanted to say yes but somehow, I felt I had to think about it first

Me: yes, I do

Him: then let me go in there with you on my arm. You learnt your lessons, you grew up and you have me now. Everyone has a past and I'm not God so I'd never judge you. I care about you, I care about our present and our future and I love you. No one will touch you as long as I am by your side

Season 3

Insert 100 (finale part 2)

narrated

The time is 8pm and everyone has arrived except for Xolani but his car is parked outside so everyone, Lwa specifically is questioning why he isn't coming in. The atmosphere in the house is pure love and joy, the kind of atmosphere being surrounded by loved ones create. All the guests have champagne glasses in one hand and their other arm around their lovers

Lwa: can someone please get that man so we can start? I don't understand why he wants to make a grand entrance at my party. Does he not know that this is Lwa's day and not just some random date on the calendar?

Everyone breaks into laughter, after years of friendship, Lwa's friends know very well that she is possessive of this day, she wants to own it, doesn't even for a second consider sharing it, let alone having someone else steal all the attention that supposedly belongs to her

Soso: let me go get him

Enzo: I'd rather go. You might just scare the guy off

Soso looks at Enzo with his eyebrows raised but he knows very well that he wouldn't have been the right guy to go out there and talk to Xolani. Enzo hands his glass over to his wife, kisses her cheek as if he isn't just going outside to get the guy. Noma smiles sheepishly at her husband's gesture, she finds it cute, sweet and romantic while the rest of their friends just find it a tad bit dramatic. As Enzo walks out and heads to the car, the conversation in the car is still a bit intense. Xolani is still trying to convince his girlfriend to trust him and go in with him but all that is playing in Luminjalo's head are the events that occurred the last time she was in this very house. Her fears have taken over her body and that's all she is feeling, in her mind she doesn't believe that her Lani has it in him to protect her whereas Soso had failed her.

Xolani: my love, just trust me. Face this fear once and for all. Don't let it trap you in this box. Let's just go in, if she wants you to leave then I'll leave with you but you will

know that she no longer has a hold on you but rather that you have a hold on her. Let go of it all and I'll gladly carry this load for you, all I need is for you to trust me

Before Njalo gets the opportunity to respond, there is a knock on the window on Xolani's side. His car has tinted Windows so Enzo couldn't see that he had a person in the car with him. As Xolani lowers his car window, the first thing that catches Enzo's eye is the lady sitting on the passenger seat and he shakes his head

Enzo: so that's why you are sitting in the car? Lwa wants you guys to come in

Well, Lwa wants Xolani to come in, she has no idea that Luminjalo is his date

Lani: baby

He has his full undivided attention back on Njalo, who is still wiping her tears with the back of her shaking hand. She lets out a sigh

Njalo: give us a few minutes. We will be in shortly

Xolani smiles faintly and signals for Enzo to go back inside and he does just that while Njalo fixes her make up

Njalo: don't let go of my hand

Xolani: I won't

Eventually they get out the car and approach the door, Luminjalo's heart is beating in her throat, her whole body is shaking like a leaf and her palms are sweaty. Xolani places a soft peck on her cheek before walking in through the door. Everyone turns and stares at them, talk about a grand entrance. Everyone's jaws are on the floor as they walk closer towards the crowd, Luminjalo locks eyes with Lwa then quickly looks away while tightening her grip on Xolani's hand.

Lwa: glad you finally decided to join us

Xolani: I apologize for the late arrival; my baby and I were still sorting something out in the car

Luminjalo lifts her eyes and this time around they land on Soso and the expression on his face is blank and unreadable, although he thought Njalo was stupid for setting foot in his house again, he remains silent and monitors his wife's expressions and movements. Little does he know that Lwa couldn't care less what Njalo does with her

life as long as whatever It is doesn't concern her, her family or most importantly her husband

Soso: now we can start

Xolani: before we can start, I'd like to have a word with Lwa, in private. I promise I won't be long

Lwa: fine. Just 5 mins

Xolani turns to look at Njalo, who is still a nervous wreck. She knows that this is Lwa's circle which means they all don't like her so this is going to be a long evening for her

Xolani: let's go

She frowns and stares at him. He can't be serious. He is the one that wants to talk to Lwa, why must she be dragged into this. She shakes her head softly

Xolani: I did say I'm not going to let go of your hand. I made a promise and I keep my promises so let's go

His feet had already started moving so what choice did Luminjalo have but to follow him. The dining area erupted in quiet whispers and remarks, everyone said different things but one thing they agreed on is that Njalo shouldn't have come to this dinner and that Lwa was probably going to go all Chuck Norris on her before the night is over. Upon walking into the study, Lwa leans against her desk while the couple stands in the middle of the room

Xolani: firstly, happy birthday my friend, you really don't look a day over 25

Lwa smiles, the smile is genuine because these are her favourite words of the night and she won't let the sight of Luminjalo stop her from enjoying them

Lwa: ngyabonga X

Xolani: the reason why I called you aside is because I recently found out about your past with my lady over here and I just needed to clear the air

Lwa raises one eyebrow then folds her arms across her chest. She is wondering what lies Luminjalo spun in order to make Lwa seem like the crazy person while Njalo turns out to be an angel that got beaten for no reason

Xolani: don't worry, she told me the truth but it's the past manje and you are a good friend of mine. I wouldn't want any bad blood between my friend and my future wife.

Lwa: so, what are you suggesting?

Xolani: that we all bury the hatchet and start afresh. I know you guys have both hurt each other but you are happy with Soso and Njalo is happy with me. There is no point in beefing anymore

"Hmmm" was all that comes out of Lwa's mouth. She stares at Luminjalo and honestly she knows that Xolani has a point

Lwa: X please excuse us

Njalo's eyes shoot wide open, she isn't ready for this and she isn't going to entertain it. Lwa probably has a sjambok hidden in every room and she will whip it out the moment Xolani leaves the room

Xolani: I promised her I wouldn't let go of her hand and me leaving the room would be breaking my promise

Lwa chuckles as her eyes roll. She understands Njalo's fears so she doesn't push the issue instead she agrees to behave the whole night and ensures that her friends will also be on their best behaviour

Lwa: relax a bit Njalo. This is a dinner party and you seem a bit tense

Njalo smiles faintly then nods but she isn't about to relax anytime soon. She doesn't want the attacks to catch her off guard because she knows that one way or another, they are coming

*

*

Lwa

After the mini meeting in my study with the couple, we headed back to the dining area to get this dinner started. We were served our starters and the crazy conversations started brewing. Did I mentioned that Lolz and Sedi brought dates to this dinner? Well they did, gorgeous looking men too but knowing my friends, these were not relationships but rather guys they were sleeping with currently

Nomz: so Sandile, what do you do?

Sandile is Sedi's guy. Don't even ask what a Sotho girl is doing with a Zulu guy. I could never date a Zulu guy, no offence but my people are too backwards, especially the guys. They demand respect like most people demand fresh air. Sandile is tall, dark and sexy with a bold voice and oozes confidence. He isn't cocky but his whole being seems to be glazed in charm

Sandile: I'm a paediatrician

Mahle: ncoah you work with tiny humans. Are you good?

Sandile: one of the best in the country

I raise my eyebrows looking at this man, I did say he oozes confidence and even the way he says it doesn't seem cocky or arrogant

Lolz: brag much?

Sandile chuckles as he lifts his champagne glass to his lips, takes a sip then puts it back on the table

Sandile: lol it's not me, it's what Google says

Me: Google? Hmm then it's not bragging when you can back it up

The rest of the dinner flows swiftly to the extent that even Njalo starts loosening up and enjoying the night. It's during dessert time that the speeches start flowing and I know I'm going to be at a losing battle with my emotions

Soso: so, who is going to start?

Mike: you start bro. It's your wife

Soso: even more reason why I should be the last one

Mike: ok fine I'll start

He gets up and I'm already smiling because I know whatever he will be saying will be stupid and funny. He fixes his blazer then takes a sip of his champagne but doesn't put the glass down

Mike: I don't even know what to say, can someone remind me why I wanted to go first?

Jay: because you are a liker of things

Mike gives him the middle finger when we start laughing at him

Mike: ok, on a more serious note, I'd like to say happy birthday to my favourite sister in law. I wish you nothing but the best of what life has to offer, you've brought my brothers and I together in such a way that you are not just Soso's wife but our wife. Well I'm not going to have sex with you, my amazing dick game is only reserved for my wife

Again, we break into laughter. He said he is getting serious but that didn't last long.

Mike: we love you and we will always support you and the kids when and if my idiot brother fucks up. To show our love for you, my wife and I decided to get you an all-expenses paid trip to Cape Town for the whole of next week. You don't have to take Lwandiso, I've been told that the men in Cape Town aren't bad looking

Me: Mike! Lol

Mike: lol what? I'm just saying nje

Soso: lol gosh you are so extra. Sit down

Me: thank you Mike and you too friendship and I might just take my kids and leave your brother

I felt Soso's eyes piercing me but I chose to ignore him and focus on Pali who was about to make her speech. She said mostly what Mike had said and how much she appreciates our friendship and me always being there for her when she needs a shoulder to lean on. I'm trying very hard not to cry and so far, so good. Next up is Enzo and Nomz, they decide to speak together

Nomz: my friend you know how far we've come, you are not only my friend but my sister and I'm more grateful to God for bringing you into my life at a young age and for you introducing me to this man right here.

They look at each other and smile, completely forgetting our existence until I clear my throat. This isn't about them, this is my day and I want to hear all the great praises they have for me

Enzo: lol buddy bae you just love all the attention

Me: it's my day buddy lol

Enzo: I still remember the first day we met, I knew from the moment I saw you that you and we will be friends for life. Through it all, you've never changed, you've been my pillar, my advisor and my sister through all the hard times and now Mahle and KK have made us family. As a token of our love for you, Mahle, KK, Laa, Noma and myself put together a bit of money and bought you the building for your centre

What? Did he just say building? A whole building? Who does that? I lose the battle and tears just roll down my cheeks. I'm shocked, happy and in awe. I get up from my chair and hug each of them individually. When you have friends that believe in your dream so much, what more could you ask for? My parents and my brothers followed, my parents said they gave me life so that's a present enough. Typical black parents. My older brother, Sakhile got me a niece but she is only arriving in November. Him and his girlfriend are expecting. Mxm these cheapskates, I want prezzies, I have enough babies. After everyone was done, Soso stood up, our eyes met and he winked at me giving me goose bumps almost immediately

Soso: a building? Seriously guys? Now how am I meant to top that?

We all laughed. I was loving this atmosphere, so fun and light. Everyone laughing and smiling endlessly

Soso: I remember the first time I laid eyes on you, it was in May 16 years ago at the study-loc. I didn't know at the time that 16years later we'd be married and raising 8 kids together but I did know that I had to make you mine. I'm not perfect but you've looked past all of that and loved me for me, you've showed me the kind of love we read about in novels and fairy tales. Our love story, when told should begin with "once upon a time" because you are my Disney princess and I'm still trying to live up to being your Prince. You've loved me in and out of time, in and out of darkness and in sickness and in health before we even promised ourselves to each other. I love you so much MaHadebe, I am the man I am today because you believed in me, you

lifted me up when I was flat on the ground and made me the king I am today. I'm not a king because I was born with the title but I'm a king because I'm married to a queen. Happy birthday my love and I trust in God that we will celebrate many more years together.

He moved his chair back then took my hand and looked at me, I was already an emotional wreck. Soso is so deep with the expression of his love that it gets me crying every time but luckily this time, I wasn't alone. My friends were in tears as well. Soso got on one knee in front of me and I gasped loudly. What is he doing, are we not married already?

Soso: next year marks 15years of marriage for us and I want us to celebrate in style. MaHadebe, Mrs Me, owner of my heart, my rib, mamakhe, would you make me the happiest man again by becoming my wife, traditionally?

We never had the traditional wedding due to the shooting and now my man is on his knee with a gorgeous crown ring in his hand asking me to marry him. I can't talk, I can't breathe and I can't function so I just nod and he slips the ring into my finger after removing the one I already had and slipped it on his pinkie. Everyone clapped and screamed as we shared an emotion filled kiss. I need to gather myself but I'm failing. I'm crying endlessly and he pulls me towards him and rubs my back

Soso: I love you sthandwa sam

He kisses my head as he tries to calm me down. Almost 30mins later and I'm slightly calm. I most probably look like a zombie. but I don't care. I'm a happy zombie anyway. I clear my throat as I stand up

Me: you guys are too much. All of you. Vacation, building, niece, marriage proposal. I can't deal but don't get me wrong, I appreciate it all. I'd be nothing without you guys, stru bob. I lean on each of you so much that sometimes I worry that I'll break you guys. I love you all so much and thank you for everything, thank you mom and dad for bringing me up and raising this strong woman that I am today. I know it hasn't been easy but you guys have never left my side. My friends, guys you are my siblings hey. Yho the love I have for all of you. Each of you have a chapter in the book of my life, you've played your roles and I know you will continue to play them. I hope our kids will continue what we have started and build even stronger friendships

and relationships as they grow older. We've laid a strong foundation for them and it's only up to them how they use it.

I turn to my husband, my beautiful man, the father of my cute kids. Phela my kids are adorable thanks to these genes of his and mine as well but mostly his.

Me: Lwandiso Shaun Smith. Dear God where do I start with this man? You are everything I've ever wanted in a man and so much more. Our children know the true meaning of unconditional love because of what we've shown them, you've taught me so much and I know I still have so much more to learn from you, you've guided me, been my walking stick and my light in the dark for so many years. Just like Celine Dion sang in that song, "You were my strength when I was weak. You were my voice when I couldn't speak. You were my eyes when I couldn't see. You saw the best there was in me. Lifted me up when I couldn't reach. You gave me faith 'coz you believed. I'm everything I am Because you loved me. You gave me wings and made me fly. You touched my hand so I could touch the sky. I lost my faith, you gave it back to me. You said no star was out of reach. You stood by me and I stood tall. I had your love, I had it all. I'm grateful for each day you gave me. Maybe I don't know that much But I know this much is true... I was blessed because I was loved by you". If I could sing I would have sung that to you but I'm not about to embarrass myself in front of these idiot. I love you Smith wam and I really appreciate everything about this night. Thank you, my love, and thank you guys

I went around the table hugging everyone then got to see my car. My circle started off with just Noma, Lolo and Enhle but has grown so much over the years. As we get older we grow to realise that not everyone will love us, we are not money. No one is guaranteed to stay in our lives, we are not joined at the hip. Being a person's first love is great but trust me when I tell you that being someone's last love is so much better. Family isn't who you share DNA with or who you share a surname with but family is who loves you, supports you and stays loyal to you at all times. Don't trust the friend that is quick to tell you what people say about you but rather trust the friend that tells you what he/she said when other people spoke about you. And lastly, children are a blessing regardless of how they came about, whether you become a parent at 16 or at 32, your child is a blessing and there is no greater love than a mother's love, a mother's love is unconditional, it's eternal and it lays the groundwork

for whatever love will flow from it. As a mother you should be your son's first love and as a father, you should be your daughter's first love.